NEW TESTAMENT



THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST

TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH
FROM THE APPROVED GREEK TEXT
OF THE CHURCH OF CONSTANTINOPLE
AND THE CHURCH OF GREECE



By

Metropolitan Fan S. Noli, Ph. D.

Published by the
Albanian Orthodox Church in America
Boston, Massachusetts
1 9 6 1

Copyright, 1961, by Metropolitan Fan S. Noli

LICENSE

This New Testament is hereby approved for the use of the Churches and the Sunday Schools under the jurisdiction of the Albanian Orthodox Archdiocese in America.

✠ METROPOLITAN FAN S. NOLI

Boston, January 15, 1961

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

THE BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

	Page
ST. MATTHEW	5
ST. MARK	70
ST. LUKE	111
ST. JOHN	177
ACTS OF THE APOSTLES	225
ROMANS	286
FIRST CORINTHIANS	313
SECOND CORINTHIANS	340
GALATIANS	357
EPHESIANS	367
PHILIPPIANS	376
COLOSSIANS	383
FIRST THESSALONIANS	390
SECOND THESSALONIANS	396
FIRST TIMOTHY	400
SECOND TIMOTHY	408
TITUS	414
PHILEMON	418
HEBREWS	420
ST. JAMES	441
FIRST ST. PETER	449
SECOND ST. PETER	456
FIRST ST. JOHN	461
SECOND ST. JOHN	468
THIRD ST. JOHN	469
ST. JUDE	471
APOCALYPSE	473
CHURCH BOOKS	503
SAMPLES OF TRANSLATION	507

THE HOLY GOSPEL
ACCORDING TO SAINT MATTHEW

CHAPTER 1

THE GENEALOGY OF CHRIST
ABRAHAM TO DAVID

1 This is the genealogical table of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham:

2 Abraham begot Isaac; Isaac begot Jacob; Jacob begot Judah and his brothers. 3 Judah begot Phares and Zara by Thamar; Phares begot Esrom; Esrom begot Aram. 4 Aram begot Aminadab; Aminadab begot Naasson; Naasson begot Salmon. 5 Salmon begot Booz by Rachab; Booz begot Obed by Ruth; Obed begot Jesse. 6 Jesse begot David the king.

DAVID TO THE BABYLONIAN EXILE

David the king begot Solomon by the widow of Uriah. 7 Solomon begot Roboam; Roboam begot Abijah; Abijah begot Asa. 8 Asa begot Josaphat; Josaphat begot Joram; Joram begot Oziah. 9 Oziah begot Joatham; Joatham begot Achaz; Achaz begot Hezekiah. 10 Hezekiah begot Manasseh; Manasseh begot Amon; Amon begot Josiah. 11 Josiah begot Jechoniah and his brothers during the Babylonian exile.

BABYLONIAN EXILE TO CHRIST

12 After the Babylonian exile Jechoniah begot Salathiel; Salathiel begot Zorobabel. 13 Zorobabel begot Abiud; Abiud begot Eliakim; Eliakim begot Azor. 14 Azor begot Sadok; Sadok begot Achim; Achim begot Eliud. 15 Eliud begot Eleazar; Eleazar begot Matthan; Matthan begot Jacob. 16 Jacob begot Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So altogether there were fourteen generations from Abraham to David; and fourteen generations from David to the Babylonian exile; and fourteen generations from the Babylonian exile to Christ.

BIRTH OF CHRIST

18 The birth of Jesus Christ took place in this manner:
Mary his mother was engaged to Joseph. But before they were
married, she was found to be pregnant from the Holy Spirit.
19 Her husband Joseph was a kindly man and did not want
to disgrace her. So he decided to break off the engagement
privately. 20 While he was considering this solution, an Angel
of the Lord appeared to him in a dream and said to him:
"Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary as your
wife. For she has conceived her child from the Holy Spirit.
21 She will bear a Son whom you will call Jesus. For he will
save the people from their sins."

22 Thus the prediction of the Lord through the Prophet
was fulfilled: 23 "Listen, a virgin will conceive and bear a Son,
and his name will be called Emmanuel!" which means, God
with us.

24 When Joseph awoke from his sleep, he did as the Angel
of the Lord had ordered him. He took his wife to his home.
25 But he did not live with her until she had borne her Son
whom he named Jesus.

CHAPTER 2

THE WISE MEN

1 Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea during the reign
of Herod the king. Thereupon, Wise Men from the East arrived
in Jerusalem. 2 They kept asking: "Where is the newly born
King of the Jews? For we have seen his star in the East and
have come to worship him."

3 Herod the king was troubled when he heard this report,
and all Jerusalem with him. 4 So he assembled all the chief
priests and scribes of the people and asked them where Christ
was to be born.

5 They answered him: "In Bethlehem of Judea. For this
is what the Prophet has written about this matter: 6 'You,
O Bethlehem, you are certainly one of the principal cities of
Judea. For from you will arise a leader who will be the shepherd
of my people Israel.' "

7 Thereupon Herod summoned the Wise Men secretly and
found out from them the exact time the star had appeared.
8 Then he sent them to Bethlehem and told them: "Go and
search diligently for the child. When you have found him, bring
me word. For I want to go and worship him also."

9 They obeyed the king and proceeded on their journey. Thereupon the star, which they had seen in the East, led them on until they reached the place where the child lay and stopped over it. 10 When they saw the star, the Wise Men rejoiced exceedingly.

11 They went into the house and saw the Child with Mary his Mother. Thereupon they fell down and worshipped him. Then they opened their treasures and offered him gifts, gold, frankincense and myrrh.

12 But they were warned in a dream not to return to Herod. So they went back to their own country by another way.

FLIGHT INTO EGYPT

13 When the Wise Men had departed, suddenly an Angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream and said to him: "Arise, take the Child and his Mother, flee to Egypt, and stay there until I tell you. For Herod is going to look for the Child and put him to death."

14 So Joseph arose, took the Child and his Mother and left for Egypt. 15 He remained there until the death of Herod. Thus the prediction of the Lord through the Prophet was fulfilled: "I have called my Son out of Egypt."

THE MASSACRE OF BETHLEHEM

16 When Herod saw that he had been tricked by the Wise Men, he was furious. So he sent his henchmen and killed all the male children in Bethlehem and in all that neighborhood, who were two years old or less from the time he had found out from the Wise Men.

17 Thus the prophecy of Isaiah was fulfilled: 18 "An outburst of weeping and lamentation was heard in Ramah. It was Rachel weeping for her children. She refused to be comforted. For they were all gone."

THE RETURN TO NAZARETH

19 When Herod was dead, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt. 20 He told him: "Arise, take the Child and his Mother, and return to the land of Israel. For Herod who wanted to kill the Child is dead."

21 So Joseph arose, took the Child and his Mother, and went back to the land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that

Archelaus had succeeded his father Herod as king, he was afraid to go there. So, as he was advised in a dream, he took refuge in the region of Galilee. 23 Finally, he went and settled in a city called Nazareth. Thus the prediction of the Prophets was fulfilled: "He will be called a Nazarene."

CHAPTER 3

JOHN THE BAPTIST

1 In those days, John the Baptist appeared in the desert. 2 He preached: "Repent. For the Kingdom of Heaven is drawing near."

3 He was the man of whom Isaiah the Prophet spoke, saying: "Listen, a Prophet is preaching in the desert. Prepare the way of the Lord. Straighten out his paths."

4 John wore a garment of camel's hair and a leather belt around his waist. He ate locusts and wild honey. 5 The inhabitants of Jerusalem, of Judea, and of all the region round about Jordan went out to him. 6 They confessed their sins and were baptized by him in the river Jordan.

7 Many Pharisees and Sadducees also came to him for baptism. When he saw them, he said: "You, brood of vipers! The Lord himself warned you to escape his coming retribution. 8 Therefore perform deeds consistent with your professed repentance. 9 Do not suppose that you can get away by claiming Abraham as your forefather. For I tell you, God is able to raise up descendants for Abraham out of these stones.

10 "Remember, the ax is laid at the root of the trees. Every tree which does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

11 "I baptize you for repentance with water. But the Messiah who comes after me is so much mightier than I that I am not worthy to carry his shoes. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire.

12 "He holds his winnowing fork in his hand. He will clean up his threshing floor. He will store his wheat in his barn. Then he will burn the chaff in the unquenchable fire."

THE BAPTISM OF JESUS

13 At that time Jesus came from Galilee to the river Jordan to be baptized by John. 14 But John tried to dissuade him, saying: "I need to be baptized by you. You do not need to come to me."

15 Jesus answered: "Go ahead now. For we must fulfill every requirement." Then John consented.

16 So Jesus was baptized. When he came out of the water, heaven was opened immediately, and he saw the Holy Spirit of God who came down in the form of a dove and rested upon him. 17 Thereupon a voice from heaven said: "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased."

CHAPTER 4

THE TEMPTATIONS OF JESUS

1 At that time, Jesus was conducted by the Holy Spirit into the desert to be tempted by the devil.

2 He fasted forty days and forty nights. So he felt hungry afterwards. 3 Thereupon the tempter approached and said to him: "If you are the Son of God, order these stones to become loaves of bread."

4 Jesus answered: "It is written in the Scriptures: 'Man must not live on bread alone, but also on all the commandments which proceed from the mouth of God.' "

5 Again the devil took him to the holy city and set him on the pinnacle of the temple. 6 Then he said to him: "If you are the Son of God, cast yourself down. For it is written in the Scriptures: 'God will order his angels to lift you up with their hands. So you will not dash your feet on any stone.' "

7 Jesus answered him: "Yes, but it is also written in the Scriptures 'You must not challenge the Lord your God.' "

8 Again the devil took him to a very high mountain and showed him all the kingdoms of the earth and their glories. 9 Then he said to him: "I will give you all these kingdoms, if you fall down and worship me."

10 Jesus answered him: "Go away from me, Satan. For it is written in the Scriptures: 'You must adore and worship only the Lord your God.' "

11 Then the devil left him alone. Thereupon angels came and ministered to him.

JESUS IN GALILEE

12 When Jesus heard that John had been arrested, he returned to Galilee. 13 Later on, he left Nazareth and settled down in Capernaum on the sea-shore in the region of Zabulon and Nephthalim.

14 Thus the prophecy of Isaiah was fulfilled: 15 "Land of Zabulon and land of Nephthalim on the sea-shore beyond the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles, 16 the people who dwelt in darkness saw a great light. Indeed, light has dawned for those who lived in that region under the shadow of death."

17 From that time Jesus began to preach and to proclaim: "Repent. For the Kingdom of Heaven is drawing near."

THE FIRST DISCIPLES

18 As Jesus was walking by the Sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon, who is called Peter, and his brother Andrew. They were casting a net into the Sea. For they were fishermen. 19 He said to them: "Follow me. I will make you fishers of men." 20 Immediately, they dropped their nets and followed him.

21 As he was going further on, he saw two other brothers, James, the son of Zebedee, and his brother John. They were repairing their nets in a boat with their father Zebedee. Jesus called them. 22 They left their boat and their father immediately, and followed him.

PREACHING AND HEALING

23 Then Jesus went all over Galilee. He preached in the synagogues and proclaimed the Gospel of the Kingdom. He healed every disease and every infirmity of the people.

24 His fame spread throughout Syria. So they brought him all the sick who were afflicted with various illnesses and pains, demoniacs, epileptics, and paralytics. He healed them all.

25 Great crowds followed him from Galilee, Decapolis, Jerusalem, Judea, and the region beyond the Jordan.

CHAPTER 5

SERMON ON THE MOUNT

BEATITUDES

1 When he saw the people, Jesus went up on the mountain and sat down. His Disciples followed him. 2 Then he began his sermon and said:

3 "Blessed are the poor in spirit. For theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.

4 "Blessed are those who mourn. For they will be comforted.

5 "Blessed are the meek. For they will inherit the earth.
6 "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness. For they will be filled.
7 "Blessed are the merciful. For they will obtain mercy.
8 "Blessed are the pure in heart. For they will see God.
9 "Blessed are the peace-makers. For they will be called the children of God.
10 "Blessed are those who endure persecution. For theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.
11 "Blessed are you when men revile you, persecute you, and slander you for my sake.
12 "Be glad and rejoice. For you will be richly rewarded in heaven. For so were all the prophets persecuted before you."

SALT OF THE EARTH

13 "You are the salt of the earth. Now, if the salt has been spoiled, it cannot be restored. It is no longer good for anything. So it is thrown away and it is trodden underfoot by men."

LIGHT OF THE WORLD

14 "You are the light of the world. A city, built upon a hill, cannot be hidden. 15 Men do not light a lamp and put it under a bushel. They put it upon the lampstand. Then it gives light to everyone in the house.
16 "Thus let your light shine before men. Then they will see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven."

OLD LAW AND NEW LAW

17 "Do not imagine that I have come to abolish the Law and the Prophets. I have not come to abolish them, but to perfect them. 18 Well, I tell you, so long as heaven and earth exist, the Law will not lose a single iota nor a single dot, until everything has been fulfilled.
19 "Therefore everyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches men accordingly will be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven. But everyone who observes them and teaches them will be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven.
20 "For I tell you that unless your righteousness is far superior to that of the Scribes and the Pharisees, you will not enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

THE SIXTH COMMANDMENT

21 "You have heard that Moses told our forefathers: 'Do
not kill; and everyone who kills will be liable to the Lower
Council.' 22 But I tell you that everyone who is angry at his
brother without cause will be liable to the Lower Council. Every-
one who insults his brother will be liable to the Upper Council.
Everyone who curses his brother will be liable to the fire of
Hades.

23 "Therefore if when you offer your gift at the altar, you
remember that your brother has a grievance against you, 24
leave your gift there before the altar. Go and be reconciled
with your brother first. Then come back and offer your gift.
25 Come to terms with your opponent quickly, while you are on
the way to court with him. Otherwise, he may hand you over
to the judge. The judge may hand you over to the officer. The
officer may throw you into prison. 26 Well, I tell you that you
will not get out of it until you have paid your last penny."

THE SEVENTH COMMANDMENT

27 "You have heard that Moses told our forefathers: 'Do
not commit adultery.' 28 But I tell you that anyone who looks
at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her
in his mind.

29 "Now, if your right eye leads you astray, pluck it out
and throw it away. It is better for you to lose one of your organs
than have your whole body thrown into Hades. 30 And if your
right hand leads you astray, cut it off and throw it away. It is
better for you to lose one of your limbs than have your whole
body thrown into Hades."

DIVORCE

31 "You have heard that Moses said: 'Whoever divorces
his wife let him give her a certificate of separation.' 32 But I
tell you that everyone who divorces his wife on any ground
except unfaithfulness makes her commit adultery. Moreover,
everyone who marries a divorced woman commits adultery also."

THE NINTH COMMANDMENT

33 "You have heard that Moses told our forefathers: 'Do
not swear falsely, and you must fulfill your oaths to the Lord.'
34 But I tell you: Do not swear at all. Do not swear by heaven.

For it is the throne of God. 35 Do not swear by the earth. For it is his footstool. Do not swear by Jerusalem. For it is the city of the great king. 36 Do not swear by your head either. For you cannot make one single hair white or black. 37 Say simply Yes for Yes and No for No. Anything beyond that proceeds from the devil."

RETALIATION

38 "You have heard that Moses told our forefathers: 'An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.' 39 But I tell you: Do not resist evil. On the contrary, if anyone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other cheek also. 40 If anyone wants to sue you for your shirt, let him have your coat as well. 41 If anyone forces you to go one mile, go two miles with him. 42 Give to anyone who begs from you, and do not turn away anyone who wants to borrow from you."

LOVE OF NEIGHBOR

43 "You have heard that Moses told our forefathers: 'Love your neighbor, and hate your enemy.' 44 But I tell you: Love your enemies. Bless those who curse you. Do good to those who hate you. Pray for those who persecute you and insult you.

45 "Show yourselves true sons of your Father in heaven. For he makes the sun rise on the good and the bad. He makes the rain fall on the righteous and the unrighteous.

46 "If you love only those who love you, there is no reward for you. For even the publicans do as much. 47 If you greet only your friends, you are doing no more than others. For even the publicans do as much. 48 Therefore be perfect, as your Father in heaven is perfect."

CHAPTER 6

CHARITY

1 "Beware of giving alms before men in order to be seen by them. Otherwise, you will have no reward from your Father in heaven. 2. Therefore when you give alms, do not sound a trumpet before you. For the hypocrites do it in the synagogues and in the streets to make people praise them. Well, I tell you, they have already received their reward.

3 "On the contrary, when you give alms, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing. 4 Let your alms

be in secret. Then your Father who sees you in secret will reward you openly."

PRAYER

5 "When you pray, do not act like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the streets, to let people see them. Well, I tell you, they have already received their reward.

6 "On the contrary, when you pray, go into your private chamber, shut the door, and pray to your Father in secret. Then your Father who sees you in secret will reward you openly.

7 "When you pray, do not use vain repetitions, as the pagans do. For they think that they will be heard, if they talk a great deal. 8 Do not be like them. For your Father knows what you need before you ask him.

9 "Therefore pray in this manner: 'Our Father, who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. 10 Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven. 11 Give us this day our daily bread. 12 And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive those who trespass against us. 13 And let us not fall into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the glory forever. Amen.'

14 "For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will forgive you also. 15 But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, your Father will not forgive your trespasses either."

FASTING

16 "When you fast, do not look gloomy like the hypocrites. For they distort their faces, to advertise their fasting to the people. Well, I tell you, they have already received their reward.

17 "On the contrary, when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face. 18 Do not let anyone see that you are fasting, except your Father in heaven. Then your Father who sees you in secret will reward you openly."

TREASURES IN HEAVEN

19 "Do not pile up your treasure on earth, where moth and rust can ruin them and where thieves can break in and steal them. 20 But pile up your treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust can ruin them and where thieves cannot

break in and steal them. 21 For your heart will be wherever you store up your treasures.

22 "The eye is the lamp of the body. So, if your eye is sound, your entire body will be full of light. 23 But if your eye is blind, your entire body will be full of darkness. Therefore, if your light is darkness, how deep the darkness will be!

24 "No one can serve two masters. For either he will hate one and love the other, or he will support one and oppose the other. You cannot serve both God and mammon."

WORLDLY WORRIES

25 "Therefore I tell you: Do not worry about what you will eat and what you will drink to sustain your life, nor about what you will wear to protect your body. By worrying you ruin your life which is more important than food, and you ruin your body which is more important than clothing."

DIVINE PROVIDENCE

26 "Look at the birds of the sky. They do not sow, or reap, or store their food in barns. Yet your heavenly Father feeds them. You are certainly more important than the birds. 27 Moreover, no one of you can add a single cubit to his span of life by worrying about it.

28 "Why do you worry about clothing? See how the lilies of the field are flourishing. They do not toil or spin. 29 Yet I tell you: Even Solomon in all his glory was never dressed like one of them. 30 Now, if God so clothes the wild flowers, which bloom today and are thrown into the furnace tomorrow, then he will much more clothe you, O men of little faith."

KINGDOM OF GOD FIRST

31 "Therefore do not worry and do not ask what we shall eat, or what we shall drink, or what we shall wear. 32 For the pagans are looking for all these comforts. Remember, your Father in heaven knows that you need them. 33 But seek first the Kingdom of God and his righteousness. For then you will have all these other comforts besides. 34 Therefore do not worry about tomorrow. For tomorrow will take care of itself. The daily worry is sufficient for each day."

CHAPTER 7

RASH JUDGMENT

1 "Do not judge, so that you may not be judged. 2 For as you judge, so you will be judged. The measure you give will be the measure you receive. 3 You see the mote in your brother's eye, but you pay no attention to the beam in your own eye."

4 Now, when there is a beam in your own eye, you cannot say to your brother: 'Let me remove the mote from your eye.' 5 You hypocrite, remove the beam from your own eye first. Then you will see clearly to remove the mote from your brother's eye."

6 "Do not give what is holy to the dogs. Do not throw your pearls before swine. For they will trample them underfoot. Then they will turn on you and tear you to pieces."

POWER OF PRAYER

7 "Ask and you will receive. Seek and you will find. Knock and you will enter. 8 For everyone who asks will receive. Everyone who seeks will find. And everyone who knocks will enter.

9 "No one of you will give a stone to his son who asks for bread. 10 No one of you will give a snake to his son who asks for a fish. 11 So, if you, bad as you are, know enough to give good things to your children, then your Father in heaven will be much more ready to give good gifts to those who ask him."

THE GOLDEN RULE

12 "Whatever you wish men to do to you, do also yourselves to them. For this is the summary of the Law and the Prophets."

THE NARROW GATE

13 "Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road, which leads to destruction. Those who enter through it are many. 14 But narrow is the gate and hard is the road, which leads to life. Those who find it are few."

FALSE PROPHETS

15 "Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves. 16 You will know them by their fruits. Grapes are not gathered from thorns, nor figs from thistles.

17 "Every good tree bears good fruit, and every bad tree

bears bad fruit. 18 No good tree can bear bad fruit, and no bad tree can bear good fruit. 19 So every tree which does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. 20 Therefore you can tell them by their fruits."

DOING THE WILL OF GOD

21 "Admission to the Kingdom of Heaven will be granted, not to everyone who calls me, 'Lord, Lord,' but only to those who do the will of my Father in heaven.

22 "On that day many will say to me: 'Master, Master, we prophesied in your name. We cast out demons in your name. We performed miracles in your name.' 23 Then I will declare to them: 'I have never known you. Go away from me, you evil-doers.' "

HOUSE ON A ROCK

24 "Therefore everyone who listens to my commandments and puts them into practice is like a man who built his house upon a rock. 25 The rain fell, the floods came, the winds blew, and beat upon that house. But it did not fall. For it was founded upon a rock.

26 "On the contrary, everyone who listens to my commandments, but does not put them into practice, is like a foolish man who built his house upon the sand. 27 The rain fell, the floods came, the winds blew, and beat upon that house. And it went down. The downfall was complete."

28 So Jesus finished his sermon. The crowds were astonished at his teaching. 29 For he taught, not like the Scribes, but like a man who had authority.

CHAPTER 8

THE LEPER

1 When he came down from the mountain, great crowds followed him. 2 Thereupon a leper came to him, knelt before him, and said: "My Lord, if you will, you can cleanse me."

3 Jesus stretched out his hand, touched him, and said: "I will. Be cleansed." Indeed he was cleansed from his leprosy immediately.

4 Then Jesus said to him: "See that you tell nobody. But go, show yourself to the priest, and offer the gifts which Moses prescribed as a public evidence of your cure."

THE CENTURION'S SERVANT

5 As he was entering Capernaum, a Roman centurion came to him, implored him, 6 and said: "My Lord, my servant is lying paralyzed at my house in dreadful agony."

7 Jesus answered him: "I will come and heal him."

8 The centurion replied: "My Lord, I am not worthy to receive you under my roof. But simply say a word, and my servant will be healed. 9 For I myself am serving in the army and I give orders to the soldiers under my command. I tell this one to go, and he goes. I tell another to come, and he comes. I tell my servant to do something, and he does it."

10 When Jesus heard this remark, he was astonished, and said to his followers: "Well, I tell you, I have never found such great faith even in Israel. 11 And I tell you that many will come from the east and from the west to take their places in the Kingdom of Heaven with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. 12 But the sons of the Kingdom will be cast into the outer darkness, where sinners are wailing and gnashing their teeth."

13 Then Jesus said to the centurion: "Go, and let your servant be healed as you have believed." Indeed his servant was healed at that very moment.

PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW

14 Then Jesus went into Peter's house and found his mother-in-law sick in bed with fever. 15 He touched her hand, and the fever left her immediately. Thereupon she arose and ministered unto them.

16 In the evening they brought to him many demoniacs. He cast out the demons with a word and healed all the sick. 17 Thus the prophecy of Isaiah was fulfilled: "He took up our infirmities, and carried away our sicknesses."

RENUNCIATION

18 When Jesus saw great crowds around him, he gave orders to cross over to the other side. 19 Thereupon a Scribe approached him and said to him: "Master, I will follow you wherever you go."

20 Jesus answered him: "The foxes have their holes and the birds of the sky have their nests. But the Messiah has not a place to lay his head."

21 Another of his Disciples asked him: "Master, allow me

first to go and bury my father." 22 Jesus answered him: "Follow me, and leave the dead to bury their own dead."

STORM ON THE LAKE

23 Then Jesus boarded a ship. His Disciples followed him. 24 Suddenly, a heavy storm swept over the Sea, and the waves broke over the ship. But he remained asleep.

25 So his Disciples approached him, woke him up, and said: "Master, save us! We are perishing."

26 Jesus answered them: "Why are you afraid, men of little faith?" Thereupon he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea. A great calm followed. 27 All the men were amazed and asked: "Who is this man whom even the winds and the sea obey?"

THE TWO DEMONIACS

28 When Jesus reached the other shore in the region of the Gergesenes, he was met by two demoniacs, who came out from the tombs. They were so fierce that nobody could pass along that road. 29 Suddenly, they shouted and asked: "What do you want from us, Jesus, Son of God? Did you come here to torture us before the appointed time?"

30 A great herd of swine was grazing at some distance from them. 31 So the demons implored him and said: "If you cast us out, allow us to go into the herd of swine."

32 Jesus answered them: "Go." So they came out of the men and went into the swine. Immediately, the entire herd of swine rushed over the cliff down to the Sea and perished in the waters.

33 The herdsmen fled, went into the city, and reported the news about the herd and the demoniacs. 34 Thereupon all the inhabitants of the city came out to meet Jesus. When they found him, they asked him to leave their country.

CHAPTER 9

THE PARALYTIC

1 So Jesus boarded the ship again, crossed over to the other side, and returned to his own city. 2 Thereupon they brought to him a paralytic, stretched out on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic: "Courage, my son. Your sins are forgiven."

3 Thereupon some of the Scribes said to themselves: "This man is blaspheming."

4 Jesus guessed their thoughts and replied: "Why do you ponder such wicked thoughts in your mind? 5 Which is easier? To say: 'Your sins are forgiven.' Or to say: 'Stand up and walk.' 6 Well, I will show you that the Son of Man has the authority to forgive sins on earth." Then he said to the paralytic: "Stand up, take up your bed, and go home."

7 Immediately, the paralytic stood up and went back to his house.

8 The crowds who saw this miracle were amazed, and glorified God for giving such power to men.

MATTHEW

9 As Jesus was passing along, he saw a man called Matthew sitting at the customs-house. He said to him: "Follow me." Matthew arose and followed him.

10 Afterwards, as Jesus was sitting at the table in the house, many publicans and sinners joined him and his Disciples. 11 The Pharisees noticed it and asked his Disciples: "Why does your Master eat with publicans and sinners?"

12 Jesus heard them and answered: "Those who are healthy do not need a physician, but those who are sick do. 13 Go and learn the meaning of this Scriptural passage: 'I want mercy, and not sacrifice.' For I have not come to call to repentance the righteous, but the sinners."

FASTING

14 Then the Disciples of John came to him and asked him: "Why do we and the Pharisees fast so often, while your Disciples do not fast at all?"

15 Jesus answered them: "The wedding guests cannot mourn, while the bridegroom is with them. But the day is coming, when the bridegroom will be taken away from them. Then they will fast also."

NEW AND OLD

16 "No one uses a piece of new cloth to patch an old coat. For the patch will tear away from the coat and make the hole worse than before. 17 Likewise, no one puts new wine into old wineskins. Otherwise, the skins burst, the wine runs out, and

the skins are ruined. Therefore everyone puts new wine into new wineskins. Thus both of them are preserved."

JAIRUS

18 While Jesus was preaching this sermon to them, an official came to him, knelt before him, and said: "My daughter has just died. Come, lay your hand on her, and restore her to life." 19 Jesus arose and followed him with his Disciples.

WOMAN WITH HEMORRHAGE

20 Thereupon a woman who had suffered from hemorrhage for twelve years came behind him and touched the fringe of his garment. 21 She said to herself: "If I merely touch the fringe of his garment, I will be healed."

22 Jesus turned around, saw her, and said: "Courage, my daughter. Your faith has healed you." Indeed the woman was healed at that very moment.

THE DAUGHTER OF JAIRUS

23 When Jesus reached the official's house, he found the funeral flute-players and mourners in an uproar. 24 He said to them: "Go away. For the girl is not dead, but asleep." They laughed at him. 25 After the mourners had been driven out, Jesus went in, grasped her hand, and restored her to life. 26 The report of this miracle spread all over that region.

THE TWO BLIND MEN

27 As Jesus was passing along from the official's house, two blind men followed him and cried aloud: "Have mercy on us, O Son of David!" 28 When he had gone into his house, the blind men came up to him. Thereupon Jesus asked them: "Do you believe that I can heal you?" They answered him: "Yes, my Lord."

29 Then he touched their eyes, and said: "Receive your sight according to your faith." 30 Their eyes were opened immediately. Jesus warned them sternly: "Be sure not to tell anybody." 31 But they went out and spread the news all over that region.

THE DUMB DEMONIAC

32 Just as they were going out, a dumb demoniac was
brought to him. 33 Jesus cast out the demon, and the dumb
demoniac spoke for the first time. The crowds were amazed
and said: "Such a miracle was never seen before in Israel."
34 But the Pharisees retorted: "He is casting out demons
through the prince of demons."

COMPASSION FOR THE PEOPLE

35 Then Jesus went to all the cities and villages, teaching
in their synagogues, preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom,
healing every disease and infirmity of the people.

36 When he saw the people, he was moved with pity for
them, because they were harassed and scattered like sheep
without a shepherd. 37 Then he said to his Disciples: "The
harvest is plentiful, but the laborers are few. 38 Therefore ask
the Lord of the Harvest to send laborers to gather his crops."

CHAPTER 10

THE TWELVE APOSTLES

1 Thereupon Jesus called his twelve Apostles, and gave
them power to cast out unclean spirits and heal every disease
and every infirmity.

2 The names of the twelve Apostles are the following: The
first, Simon, who was called Peter, and his brother Andrew;
James, the son of Zebedee, and his brother John; 3 Philip and
Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew, the publican; James, the
son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; 4 Simon the Cananean, and
Judas Iscariot, who later betrayed him.

INSTRUCTIONS TO THE APOSTLES

5 Jesus sent out these twelve Apostles, and gave them
the following instructions: "Do not go among the Gentiles, and
do not enter any city of the Samaritans. 6 But go rather to
the lost sheep of Israel.

7 "As you go, preach and announce: 'The Kingdom of
Heaven is drawing near.' 8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers,
raise the dead, cast out the demons. Freely you received, freely
also give. 9 Take neither gold, nor silver, nor copper in your
belts. 10 Take no wallet for your journey, nor a second shirt,
nor spare shoes, nor staff. For the workman deserves his food.

11 "When you enter a city or a village, find out who is
worthy to be your host, and stay there until you go away.
12 When you enter a house, salute it and say: 'Peace be with
this house.' 13 If the house is worthy, let your peace come upon
it. But if it is not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 "As you go out of the house or the city which will not
receive you or listen to your message, shake off the dust from
your feet. 15 Well, I tell you, on the Day of Judgment, the
sentence will be more lenient for the land of Sodom and
Gomorrah than for that city."

PERSECUTIONS

16 "Listen, I send you out like sheep among wolves. There-
fore be clever like serpents and innocent like doves. 17 Beware
of men. For they will deliver you to their councils and they will
flog you in their synagogues. 18 They will drag you before
governors and kings for my sake, to testify before them and
before the Gentiles.

19 "When they drag you to the courts, do not worry about
how or what to speak. Words will be given to you in that hour.
20 For it will not be you who will speak. Indeed the Holy Spirit
of the Father will speak through you.

21 "Then a brother will deliver his brother to death, a
father his child, and children will rise against parents and will
kill them. 22 For you will be hated by all for my name's sake.
But everyone who endures to the end will be saved.

23 "When they persecute you in one city, take refuge in
another. Well, I tell you, the Messiah will come before you have
gone through all the cities of Israel."

MASTER AND DISCIPLE

24 "A disciple is not above his master. Likewise, a servant
is not above his lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple to be like
his master, and for the servant to be like his lord. If they have
called the Master of the House 'Beelzebub,' then they will call
his servants much worse.

26 "So do not be afraid of them. For there is nothing
concealed which will not be revealed, nor secret which will not
be disclosed. 27 Proclaim in the light what I tell you in the
dark. Preach from the housetops what I whisper in your ears."

TRUST IN GOD

28 "Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but cannot
kill the soul. Be rather afraid of the Lord who can kill both
soul and body in Hades.
29 "You know that two sparrows are sold for a penny. Yet
not one of them falls to the ground without your Father's
consent. 30 Indeed the very hairs of your head are numbered.
31 Therefore do not be afraid. For you are certainly worth
much more than sparrows."

FOLLOW JESUS

32 "Therefore everyone who acknowledges me before men,
I will acknowledge him also before my Father in heaven. 33 But
everyone who denies me before men, I will deny him also before
my Father in heaven.
34 "Do not imagine that I have come to bring peace on
earth. I came to bring, not peace, but war. 35 I came to set
a son against his father, a daughter against her mother, a
daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. 36 Then the worst
foes of a man will be the members of his own household.
37 "Everyone who loves father or mother more than me,
is not worthy of me. Everyone who loves son or daughter more
than me, is not worthy of me. 38 And everyone who does not
take his cross and follow me, is not worthy of me. 39 Everyone
who finds his life, will lose it. And everyone who loses his life
for my sake, will find it."

CHRIST AND HIS APOSTLES

40 "Everyone who receives you, receives me. And everyone
who receives me, receives my Father who sent me. 41 Everyone
who receives a prophet, because he is a prophet, will receive
a prophet's reward. Everyone who receives a righteous man,
because he is a righteous man, will receive a righteous man's
reward. 42 And everyone who gives to one of these little ones
even a cup of cold water to drink, because he is a disciple of
mine, well, I tell you that he will not lose his reward."

CHAPTER 11

THE MESSIAH

1 When Jesus had finished his instructions to his twelve
Disciples, he left that region and went to teach and preach in
their cities.

2 Now when John had heard in the prison about the deeds
which Jesus was performing, he sent two of his disciples, 3 and
asked him: "Are you the Messiah whose coming was prophesied,
or shall we wait for someone else?"

4 Jesus answered them: "Go and report to John what you
have heard and seen yourselves: 5 The blind see. The lame
walk. The lepers are cleansed. The deaf hear. The dead are
raised. The Gospel is preached to the poor. 6 Therefore blessed
is the man who will not turn away from me."

JOHN THE BAPTIST

7 As they went away, Jesus began to speak to the crowds
about John: "You did not go to the desert to see a reed shaken
by the wind. 8 You did not go out to see a man wearing fine
clothes. Because those who wear fine clothes are to be found
in the palaces of kings.

9 "No. You went out to see a Prophet. Yes, I tell you, and
more than a Prophet. 10 For this is the man, of whom God
tells us in the Scriptures: 'Listen, I send you my messenger
to prepare the way for you.'

11 "Well, I tell you, among those born of women, no one
was greater than John the Baptist. Yet the least in the Kingdom
of Heaven is greater than he. 12 From the days of John the
Baptist until now the Kingdom of Heaven is being stormed and
captured by enthusiastic disciples. 13 For all the Prophets and
the Scripture prophesied about John. 14 If you are ready to
believe it, he is Elijah, who was expected to come as the
forerunner of the Messiah. 15 Whoever has ears to hear, let
him hear."

CHILDISH CRITICISM

16 "I will show you what the men of this generation are
like. They are like children sitting in the market-place and
shouting to their playmates: 17 'We played a jig for you, but
you did not dance for us. We sang a dirge for you, but you
did not mourn with us.'

18 "When John came, he was neither eating nor drinking.
So they said that he was possessed. 19 Now the Messiah has
come. He is both eating and drinking. So they say: 'Look, he
is a glutton, a drunkard, a friend of publicans and sinners.'
Nevertheless, wisdom is vindicated by the achievements of her
Prophets."

THE UNREPENTANT CITIES

20 Then Jesus began to denounce the cities, in which he
had performed most of his miracles and which had not repented:
21 "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the
miracles, which I have performed before you, had occurred in
Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth
and ashes. 22 Therefore I tell you, on the Day of Judgment
the sentence will be more lenient for Tyre and Sidon than
for you.

23 "And you, Capernaum, exalted as high as heaven, you
will fall as low as Hades. For if the miracles, which I have
performed before you, had occurred in Sodom, certainly Sodom
would have stood to this day. 24 Therefore I tell you, on the
Day of Judgment the sentence will be more lenient for Sodom
than for you."

THANKSGIVING

25 Then Jesus declared: "I thank you, Father, Lord of
heaven and earth. For you have concealed these secrets from
wise and clever men, but you have revealed them to children.
26 Yes, Father, for such was your good pleasure."

FATHER AND SON

27 "Everything has been entrusted to me by my Father.
For no one knows the Son except the Father. And no one knows
the Father except the Son and anyone to whom the Son wants
to reveal him."

UNION WITH CHRIST

28 "Come to me, all of you who are tired and burdened.
I will give you rest. 29 Take up my yoke and learn from me.
I am gentle and humble in heart. I will give peace to your souls.
30 For my yoke is easy and my burden is light."

CHAPTER 12

THE SABBATH OBSERVANCE

1 At that time, Jesus walked through the wheatfields on the Sabbath day. His Disciples were hungry. So they began to pluck ears of wheat and eat them. 2 The Pharisees noticed it and said to him: "Look, your Disciples are doing something which is not allowed on the Sabbath day."

3 Jesus answered them: "You have read in the Scriptures what David did when he and his companions were hungry. 4 He entered the house of God and ate the oblation loaves. As you know, with the exception of the priests, neither he, nor his companions, nor anyone else had the right to eat them.

5 "You have also read in the Scriptures that the priests are not considered guilty when they violate the Sabbath rest in the temple. 6 Now I tell you that someone here is greater than the temple. 7 Moreover, you have read the Scriptural passage: 'I want mercy, and not sacrifice.' If you knew what it means, you would not have condemned innocent men. 8 For the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath day."

THE CRIPPLE

9 Then he passed on from that place and went into their synagogue. 10 Now a man with a withered hand was standing there. In order to entrap him, the Jews asked him: "Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath day?"

11 He answered them: "Suppose, one among you owns a single sheep which falls into a ditch on the Sabbath day. Surely he will take hold of it and lift it out. 12 Now a man is much more important than a sheep. Therefore it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath day."

13 Thereupon he said to the man: "Stretch out your hand. He stretched it out. Indeed it was restored and became as well as the other. 14 Then the Pharisees consulted together against Jesus as to how they might put him to death.

15 But Jesus knew of this conspiracy and left the place immediately. Large crowds followed him. He cured all their sick. 16 But he ordered them not to mention him.

PROPHECY OF ISAIAH

17 Thus the prophecy was fulfilled: "18 Here is my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved who is well-pleasing to my

soul. I will endow him with my Spirit, and he will proclaim
righteousness to the Gentiles. 19 He will not wrangle, nor shout,
and no one will hear his voice in the streets. 20 He will not
break a bruised reed, nor quench a smoldering wick until he
brings righteousness to victory. 21 The Gentiles will hope in
his name."

BLIND AND DUMB

22 Then a blind and dumb demoniac was brought to him.
Jesus cured him and gave him both speech and sight. 23 All
the crowds were amazed and said: "This man may be the
Messiah, the Son of David."

BEELZEBUB

24 When the Pharisees heard it, they said: "This man can
expel demons only through Beelzebub, the prince of demons.
25 Jesus guessed their thoughts and answered them: "Every
kingdom which is at war with itself will come to ruin. For no
city or household which is at war with itself can endure.

26 "If Satan casts out Satan, he is at war with himself.
Then how can his kingdom endure? 27 If I cast out demons
through Beelzebub, then tell me, through whom do your own
disciples cast them out? Therefore they will be your judges.

28 "But if I cast them out through the Spirit of God, then
the Kingdom of God has come among you. 29 No one can enter
a strong man's house and carry off his property, unless he has
first bound the strong man. Then he can plunder his house.
30 Everyone who is not with me, is against me. And everyone
who does not gather with me scatters."

UNFORGIVABLE BLASPHEMY

31 "Therefore I say to you, every sin and blasphemy will
be forgiven. But blasphemy against the Holy Spirit will never
be forgiven. 32 Whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will
never be forgiven. Everyone who speaks against the Messiah
will be forgiven. But no one who speaks against the Holy Spirit
will be forgiven either in this world, or in the world to come."

TREES AND THEIR FRUITS

33 "Either declare the tree good and its fruit good, or
declare the tree bad and its fruit bad. For you can tell a tree

by its fruit. 34 You brood of vipers, how can you say anything good, when you are wicked? For the mouth expresses what the mind is full of. 35 From the storehouse of the mind, a good man derives good words, and a wicked man derives wicked words. 36 Now I tell you, men will have to answer on the Day of Judgment for every careless word they utter. 37 For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned."

MIRACLE OF JONAH

38 Then some of the Scribes and Pharisees said to him: "Master, we want to see a miracle from you."

39 Jesus replied: "A wicked and adulterous generation wants a miracle. But no miracle except that of Jonah the Prophet will be given to them. 40 For as Jonah stayed three days and three nights in the belly of the whale, likewise the Messiah will stay three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 "The inhabitants of Nineveh will rise on the Day of Judgment against this generation and will condemn it. Because they repented, when Jonah preached to them. Look, here is a greater man than Jonah among you."

42 "The Queen of the South will rise on the Day of Judgment against this generation and will condemn it. Because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to Solomon's wisdom. Look, here is a greater man than Solomon among you."

DEMONIACS

43 "When a demon goes out of a man, he roams through deserts in search of rest and finds none. 44 Then he says: 'I will go back to my house that I left.' Thereupon he returns and finds his house unoccupied, cleaned, and put in order. 45 Then he goes and gets seven other demons, more wicked than himself. So they all enter and live there. Consequently the man is worse off in the end than he was before. This is how it will be with this wicked generation."

MOTHER AND BRETHREN

46 While Jesus was still preaching to the people, his Mother and his brethren stood outside, and wanted to speak to him. 47 So someone told him: "Listen! Your Mother and your brethren are standing outside, and want to see you."

48 Jesus answered: "Who is my mother, and who are my brethren?" 49 Then he stretched out his hand toward his Disciples, and said: "Here are my mother and my brethren. 50 For whoever does the will of my Father in heaven is my brother, my sister, and my mother."

CHAPTER 13

THE SOWER

1 On that same day Jesus went out of the house and sat down by the seashore. 2 Such great crowds gathered around him that he boarded a ship and sat there instead, while the people were standing on the beach.

3 He preached to them at great length in parables, and said: "Listen: A sower went out to sow. 4 As he was sowing, some seeds fell along the path. But the birds came and ate them up.

5 "Other seeds fell on rocky ground, where the soil was shallow. They sprouted immediately, because they had not sunk deep in the ground. 6 But when the sun rose, they were parched and withered away, because they had taken no root.

7 "Other seeds fell among the thorns. But the thorns grew up and choked them.

8 "Other seeds fell on good ground and yielded, some a hundredfold, some a sixtyfold, some a thirtyfold crop.

9 "Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear."

10 Then the Disciples came to Jesus and asked him: "Why do you preach in parables to the people?"

11 He answered them: "It is granted to you, but not to them, to know the secrets of the Kingdom of Heaven. 12 For everyone who has much will be given more and will be abundantly supplied. But everyone who has little will be deprived even of what he has. 13 For this reason I preach to them in parables. Because they look, but do not see. They listen, but they do not hear and do not understand."

14 Thus the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled: "They will listen and listen, but will never understand. They will look and look, but will never see. 15 For their minds are dull. Their ears are deaf. And their eyes are blind. So they will never see with those eyes. They will never hear with those ears. They will never understand with those minds. They will never turn back to me and let me heal them.

16 "But blessed are your eyes. For they see. And blessed
are your ears. For they hear. 17 Well, I tell you, many prophets
and righteous men of the past have longed to see what you
see, but never saw it. They have longed to hear what you hear,
but never heard it.

18 "Now listen to the meaning of the parable of the sower:
19 Whenever a man hears the Gospel of the Kingdom, but does
not understand it, the devil comes and carries off what was
sown in his heart. This is the seed which fell along the path.

20 "The seed which fell on rocky ground is the man who
hears the Gospel and receives it at once with joy. 21 Yet he is
too shallow to plant it deep in his heart. So he remains loyal
only for a little while. But when trouble or persecution comes
on account of the Gospel, he falls away immediately.

22 "The seed which fell among the thorns is the man who
hears the Gospel, but allows the cares of this world and the
deceptions of riches to choke it. So it remains fruitless.

23 "The seed which fell on good ground is the man who
hears the Gospel, and understands it. Such men yield, one a
hundredfold, another a sixtyfold, and another a thirtyfold crop."

THE WEEDS

24 Jesus narrated another parable to them: "The Kingdom
of Heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field. 25 But
while his servants were asleep, his enemy came, sowed tares
among the wheat, and went away. 26 When the blades came
up and bore fruit, the tares appeared also.

27 "Then the servants of the owner came and asked him:
'Lord, you sowed good seed in your field. So where did these
tares come from?' 28 He answered them: 'An enemy did it.'
Then the servants asked him again: 'Do you want us to go
and gather them up?' 29 He answered them: 'No. For while
you gather up the tares, you may uproot the wheat also. 30 Let
them both grow together until harvest time. Then I will say
to the reapers: 'Gather up the tares first, tie them up, and
burn them. Then gather up the wheat, and put it into my barn.' "

THE MUSTARD SEED

31 Jesus narrated another parable to them: "The Kingdom
of Heaven is like a mustard seed which a man took and sowed
in his field. 32 It is the smallest of all seeds. But when it grows
up, it becomes such a great plant that the birds of the sky
come and lodge in its branches."

THE YEAST

33 Jesus narrated another parable to them: "The Kingdom of Heaven is like yeast which a woman took and buried in three measures of meal. Then the whole lump was leavened."

34 Jesus preached all these sermons to the people in parables. For very often he preached to them in parables only. 35 Thus the prediction of the prophet was fulfilled: "I will speak in parables. I will reveal what has remained a secret since the foundation of the world."

THE MESSIAH AND THE DEVIL

36 Then Jesus dismissed the crowds, and returned to his house. Thereupon the Disciples came to him, and said: "Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field."

37 He answered them: "The sower who sows the good seed, is the Messiah. 38 The field is the world. The sons of the Kingdom are the good seed. The sons of the devil are the tares. 39 The enemy who sowed them is the devil. The harvest is the end of the world. The reapers are the angels.

40 "Just as the tares are gathered up and burned, so it will happen at the end of the world. 41 The Messiah will send forth his angels. They will gather out of his Kingdom all the offenders and the evildoers, 42 and they will throw them into the furnace of fire, where sinners are wailing and gnashing their teeth. 43 Then the righteous will shine forth like the sun in their Father's Kingdom. Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear."

THE TREASURE

44 "Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a treasure, buried in a field, which a man has found and covered up again. Then in his joy he goes home, sells everything he has, and buys that field."

THE PEARL

45 "Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a merchant in search of precious pearls. 46 When he has found a costly pearl, he goes home, sells everything he has, and buys that pearl."

THE NET

47 Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a net, which was cast into the sea and gathered fish of every kind. 48 When it

was filled, the fishermen dragged it to the beach. Then they sat down, sorted the good fish into baskets, and threw the bad fish away.

49 "So it will happen at the end of the world. The angels will go out and remove the wicked from among the righteous, 50 and throw them into the furnace of fire, where sinners are wailing and gnashing their teeth."

THE HOUSEHOLDER

51 Then Jesus asked his Disciples: "Do you understand all these parables?" They answered: "Yes, Master." 52 Thereupon Jesus added: "Therefore every disciple who has been initiated in the Kingdom of Heaven is like a householder, who can supply from his storehouse both new and old treasures."

JESUS AT NAZARETH

53 When Jesus had finished these parables, he left that place, 54 returned to his own country, and preached to the people in their synagogue. They were amazed and kept asking: "Where did he acquire this wisdom and the power to perform these miracles?"

55 "He is the mere son of a carpenter. Mary is his mother. James, Joseph, Simon, and Judas are his brothers. 56 All his sisters are living here with us. Then where did he get all this power?"

57 Consequently, they all turned against him. Then Jesus said to them: "A prophet is honored everywhere except in his own country and in his own home." 58 Therefore because of their unbelief, he did not perform many miracles in Nazareth.

CHAPTER 14

DEATH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

1 At that time, Herod the tetrach heard the reports about Jesus, 2 and said to his attendants: "This is John the Baptist. He has risen from the dead. That is why he possesses such miraculous powers."

3 Now Herod had arrested John, put him in chains, and imprisoned him on account of Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip. 4 For John had told him: "It is not lawful for you to live with her." 5 Herod wanted to put him to death, but he was afraid of the people who considered him a Prophet.

6 But when Herod was celebrating his birthday, the daughter of Herodias danced before his guests. Herod was delighted. 7 Thereupon he promised with an oath to give her anything she might ask for. 8 Prompted by her mother beforehand, she replied: "Give me the head of John the Baptist right now on a platter."

9 The king was reluctant. But because he had sworn to do it in the presence of his guests, he granted her request. 10 So he gave orders to behead John in the prison. 11 His head was brought upon a platter and was given to the girl, who carried it to her mother.

12 Later on, his disciples came, removed the body, and buried him. Then they went and reported the news to Jesus.

FEEDING THE FIVE THOUSAND

13 Thereupon Jesus went away from there secretly and retired by ship to a desert place. But the people heard of it and followed him on foot from the cities. 14 When he landed, he saw a large crowd, he pitied them, and healed their sick.

15 In the evening, his Disciples came to him, and said: "This is a desert place, and the time is already late. Dismiss the people, and let them go to the villages, where they can buy food for themselves."

16 Jesus answered them: "They do not need to go away. Give them food yourselves." 17 They replied: "We have here only five loaves and two fishes." 18 He said to them: "Bring them here to me."

19 Then he ordered the people to sit down on the grass. He took the five loaves and the two fishes, looked up to heaven, blessed them, broke them, and handed them to his Disciples, who distributed them to the people. 20 They all ate and were satisfied. Later on, they gathered the pieces which were left over, and filled twelve baskets with them. 21 Those who ate were about five thousand men besides women and children.

WALKING ON WATER

22 Thereupon he compelled his Disciples to board the ship and cross before him to the other side, while he was dismissing the people. 23 After he had sent the crowds away, he went up on the mountain by himself to pray. He remained there alone in the evening.

24 But the ship was already in the midst of the Sea, tossed by the waves. For the wind was against them. 25 Toward morning, Jesus went out to them, walking on the Sea. 26 When the Disciples saw him walking on the water, they were terrified, and exclaimed: "It is a ghost!" They screamed for fear.

27 Jesus spoke to them immediately, and said: "Courage! It is I. Do not be afraid." 28 Peter told him: "Master, if it is you, command me to come to you on the water." 29 He said: "Come." Peter got out of the ship and walked on the water to go to Jesus. 30 But he was frightened by the violent wind, began to sink, and shouted: "Master, save me!"

31 Jesus stretched out his hand immediately, seized him, and said: "Man of little faith! Why did you waver?" 32 So they boarded the ship. Thereupon the wind ceased. 33 The men in the ship worshipped him, and said: "You are indeed the Son of God."

34 Then they crossed over to the other side, and landed at the region of Gennesaret. 35 The inhabitants of the region recognized him. So they sent messengers into all that neighborhood, and brought to him all those who were sick. 36 They entreated him to let them touch the fringe of his garment. All those who did were healed.

CHAPTER 15

TRADITIONS AND COMMANDMENTS

1 Then some Scribes and Pharisees came to Jesus, and asked him: 2 "Why do your Disciples violate the traditions of our ancestors? For they do not purify their hands when they eat bread."

3 He answered them: "And why do you violate the commandments of God with your traditions? 4 For instance, God commanded: 'Honor your father and your mother, and everyone who curses his father and mother must be put to death.'

5 "But you say: 'Everyone who tells his father or mother that he gives to God whatever is useful to them, 6 does not need to provide for his parents. Thus you nullify the commandments of God with your traditions.

7 "You hypocrites! Isaiah prophesied well about you when he said: 8 'These people honor me with their lips. But their hearts are far away from me. 9 Their worship is meaningless. For the commandments they teach are human precepts.' "

DEFILEMENT

10 Thereupon Jesus gathered the people around him and told them: "Listen and understand! 11 What defiles a man is not the food he eats, but the word he speaks."

12 Later on, the Disciples came to him and told him: "You must know that the Pharisees were shocked when they heard your remark." 13 Jesus answered them: "My Father in heaven will uproot every plant which he has not planted himself. 14 Leave them alone. They are blind guides of blind men. Now when the blind lead the blind, they will both fall into the ditch."

15 Then Peter asked him: "Explain this parable for us." Jesus answered him: 16 "So you did not understand me either. 17 Well, you know that the food which a man eats, goes into the stomach, and then it is disposed of. 18 But the words which a man speaks proceed from the mind, and that is what defiles a man.

19 "For out of the mind proceed evil thoughts, murder, adultery, fornication, theft, perjury and blasphemy. 20 A man is defiled by these sins. He is not defiled by his unpurified hands."

THE CANANEAN WOMAN

21 Then Jesus went away from there and retired to the region of Tyre and Sidon. 22 Thereupon a Cananean woman of that district came out, and screamed: "Have mercy on me, O Lord, Son of David: My daughter is possessed by a dreadful demon."

23 He did not answer a word. But the Disciples implored him, and said: "Help her and send her away, for she keeps on screaming after us." 24 He answered them: "I am sent only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel."

25 In the meantime, the woman approached, knelt before him, and said: "My Lord, help me." 26 He replied: "It is not right to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs." 27 She retorted: "Yes, my Lord. For even the dogs eat the crumbs which fall from their master's table."

28 Thereupon Jesus said: "Woman, your faith is great. Let your daughter be healed, as you have wished." Indeed her daughter was healed at that very moment.

HEALINGS

29 Then Jesus went away from there, passed along the

shore of the Sea of Galilee, went up on the mountain, and sat down there. 30 Great crowds came to him, and brought with them the lame, the blind, the deaf, the crippled, as well as other sick men, and put them at his feet. He cured them all.

31 The people were astonished, when they saw the dumb speaking, the crippled restored to health, the lame walking, the blind seeing, and they glorified the God of Israel.

FEEDING THE FOUR THOUSAND

32 Then Jesus called his Disciples aside, and said to them: "I pity these people. They have been staying with me for three days, and they have nothing to eat. I do not want to send them away hungry. For they will faint on the way."

33 His Disciples replied: "Where can we get bread enough in this desert to feed such a crowd?" 34 Jesus asked them: "How many loaves have you?" They answered him: "Seven loaves and a few fishes."

35 Thereupon he ordered the people to sit down on the ground. 36 He took the seven loaves and the fishes, he gave thanks, he broke them, and handed them to his Disciples, who distributed them to the multitude.

37 They all ate and were satisfied. Later on, they gathered the pieces which were left over, and filled seven baskets with them. 38 Those who had eaten were four thousand besides women and children. 39 Then he dismissed the people, boarded a ship and went to the region of Magdala.

CHAPTER 16

THE MIRACLE OF JONAH

1 At that time, the Pharisees and the Sadducees came to test him, and asked him to show them a miracle from heaven. 2 He answered them: "In the evening you forecast fair weather when the sky is pink. 3 In the morning you forecast a storm when the sky is dark red. You hypocrites, you know how to read the signs of the sky. But how is it that you cannot read the signs of the times?"

4 "Men of a wicked and adulterous generation! You ask for a miracle. But no miracle will be given to you except that of Jonah the Prophet." So he left them and went away.

PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES

5 When the Disciples went across the lake, they noticed
that they had forgotten to take bread with them. 6 Then Jesus
said to them: "Look out and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees
and Sadducees." 7 The Disciples thought that Jesus made that
remark, because they had not taken bread with them.

8 Jesus guessed their thoughts and told them: "Men of little
faith, you are worrying about not taking bread with you. 9 So
you still do not understand. Well, remember the five loaves for
the five thousand and the number of baskets you filled after-
wards. 10 Remember the seven loaves for the four thousand
and the number of baskets you filled afterwards."

11 "As you see, I was not talking about bread when I warned
you to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees."
12 Then they understood that he was not warning them against
the leaven of bread, but against the doctrines of the Pharisees
and Sadducees.

PETER'S TESTIMONY

13 When Jesus came to the district of Caesarea Philippi, he
asked his Disciples: "Who do the people say that I am?" 14 They
answered him: "Some say, John the Baptist. Others say, Elijah.
And others, Jeremiah, or one of the Prophets."

15 Jesus asked them again: "But who do you say that I
am?" 16 Simon Peter answered him: "You are the Messiah,
the Son of the living God."

17 Jesus said to him: "Blessed are you, Simon, son of
Jonah! For you have not received that revelation from a man,
but from my Father in heaven. 18 So I say to you: You are
Peter the rock, and upon that rock I will build my Church, which
the powers of Hades will be unable to overcome. 19 I will give
you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. Moreover, whatever
you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you
loose on earth will be loosed in heaven."

20 Thereupon he strictly forbade them to tell anyone that
he was the Messiah.

FIRST PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

21 From that time onwards, Jesus began to explain to his
Disciples that he must go up to Jerusalem, endure great suffer-
ing at the hands of the elders, chief priests and scribes, be put
to death, and rise on the third day."

22 Then Peter took him aside, reproved him, and said: "God forbid, my Lord. That will never happen to you."

23 But he turned and said to Peter: "Go away from me, Satan. You have shocked me. This time, you are not inspired by God, but by man."

FOLLOWING JESUS

24 Then Jesus said to his Disciples: "Whoever wants to come after me let him deny himself, take up his cross and follow me. 25 For everyone who wants to save his life will lose it. But everyone who loses his life for my sake will find it.

26 "It does not profit a man at all, if he gains the whole world, but loses his own life. There is no ransom a man can give to recover the life he has lost.

27 "For the Messiah will come with his Angels in the glory of the Father. Then he will reward every man according to his deeds. 28 Well, I tell you, some of you who are standing here will live to see the Messiah coming in his Kingdom."

CHAPTER 17

TRANSFIGURATION

1 Six days later, Jesus took Peter, James, and his brother John, led them apart on a high mountain, 2 and was transfigured before them. His face glittered as the sun, and his garments became as white as the light.

3 Thereupon Moses and Elijah appeared conversing with him. 4 Then Peter said to Jesus: "Master, we would like to stay here. If you wish, I will erect here three tents, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah."

5 While he was still speaking, suddenly a shining cloud overshadowed them. Thereupon a voice came out of the cloud, saying: "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Listen to him."

6 When the Disciples heard the voice, they fell upon their faces and were dreadfully frightened. 7 In the meantime, Jesus came, touched them, and said: "Arise, and do not be afraid. 8 When they looked up, they saw no one but Jesus alone.

9 As they were going down the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying: "Do not tell anyone of this vision until the Messiah is risen from the dead."

ELIJAH

10 Then his Disciples asked him: "Why do the Scribes
maintain that Elijah must come first before the Messiah?"
11 Jesus answered them: "True, Elijah must come first
and inaugurate the Messianic era. 12 But I tell you, Elijah has
come already. They did not recognize him and treated him shame-
fully. Likewise they will torture the Messiah also." 13 Then the
Disciples understood that he was speaking to them about John
the Baptist.

THE DEMONIAC

14 When they reached the crowds, a man came to Jesus,
knelt before him, and said: 15 "My Lord, have mercy on my
son, because he is a lunatic, and suffers terribly. Often he falls
into the fire, and often into the water. 16 I brought him to your
Disciples. But they could not cure him."
17 Then Jesus said: "O faithless and perverse generation!
How long must I be with you? How long must I put up with you?
Bring him here to me."
18 Then Jesus rebuked the demon, and cast him out. The
boy was healed at that very moment.
19 Later on, the Disciples came to Jesus in private, and
asked him: "How is it that we could not cast the demon out?"
20 Jesus answered them: "Because of your lack of faith. Well,
I tell you, if you have as much faith as a grain of mustard seed,
you can say to this mountain: 'Move from here to there,' and
it will certainly move. With faith nothing will be impossible for
you. 21 However, this kind of demon can be cast out only by
prayer and fasting."

SECOND PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

22 While they were staying in Galilee, Jesus told them:
"The Messiah will be delivered into the hands of men. 23 They
will put him to death. But he will rise again on the third day."
The Disciples were deeply grieved by this prediction.

THE TEMPLE TAX

24 When they had reached Capernaum, the tax collectors
came to Peter and asked him: "Does your Master pay the
temple-tax?" 25 He answered: "Yes." When he went into the

house, Jesus anticipated him and asked him: "Tell me, Simon, from whom do the earthly kings collect customs and tribute? From their own people, or from aliens?"

26 Peter answered him: "From aliens." Jesus told him: "Then their own subjects are exempt. 27 But we will not disobey them. So go down to the Sea. Throw in a hook. Catch the first fish that comes up. Open its mouth, and you will find in it a piece of money. Take that coin, and pay the temple-tax for both of us."

CHAPTER 18

HUMILITY

1 At that moment, the Disciples came to Jesus and asked him: "Who is really the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?"

2 Jesus called a child, placed him in their midst, 3 and said: "Well, I tell you, unless you turn back and become like children, you will not enter the Kingdom of Heaven. 4 For whoever is as humble as this child, is the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. 5 Whoever receives one child like this one in my name, receives me. 6 And whoever leads astray one of these little ones who believe in me, deserves to have a heavy millstone hung around his neck and be sunk in the deep sea."

TEMPTATIONS

7 "Woe to mankind, which is led astray by temptations. True, temptations have to come. But woe to the man who causes them. 8 Therefore if your hand or your foot leads you astray, cut it off and throw it away. It is better for you to enter everlasting life lame or maimed than to have two hands or two feet and be thrown into the eternal fire.

9 "If your eye leads you astray, pluck it out and throw it away. It is better for you to enter everlasting life one-eyed than to have two eyes and be thrown into the eternal fire."

THE LOST SHEEP

10 "Beware of despising one of these little ones. For I tell you that their angels have continual access to my Father in heaven. 11 Moreover, the Messiah has come to save those who are lost.

12 "Remember, if a man has a hundred sheep, and one of them has gone astray, he will leave the ninety-nine on the

mountainside and go in search of the one which went astray. 13 If he happens to find it, well, I tell you that he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine which have not gone astray. 14 Likewise your Father in heaven does not want to lose a single one of these little ones."

FRATERNAL RECONCILLIATION

15 "If your brother wrongs you, go to him and reprove him when you are alone with him. If he listens to you, you have won back your brother. 16 If he does not listen to you, take one or two brethren along with you, to have your entire conversation confirmed by two or three witnesses. 17 If he refuses to listen to them, appeal the case to the Church. If he refuses to listen even to the Church, treat him as a pagan and a publican. 18 Well, I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven. And whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven."

UNITED PRAYER

19 "Well, again I tell you that if two of you agree on earth about any request, you will certainly obtain it from my Father in heaven. 20 For wherever two or three are gathered in my name, I am there also in their midst."

FORGIVENESS

21 Then Peter came to him and asked him: "Master, how many times must I forgive my brother who wrongs me? As many as seven times?" 22 Jesus answered him: "I do not tell you seven times, but seventy times seven."

THE CRUEL SERVANT

23 "The Kingdom of Heaven is like a king, who wanted to settle accounts with his servants.

24 "When he had begun the reckoning, one of his servants who owed him ten thousand talents was brought in. 25 As he could not pay, his master gave orders to sell him with his wife, his children, and all his property in payment of the debt. 26 Thereupon the servant knelt before him, implored him, and said: 'Master, give me time, and I will pay you in full.' 27 His master, moved with pity for him, released him and cancelled his debt.

28 "But when that servant went out, he met one of his fellow-servants who owed him one hundred shillings. Thereupon he caught him by the throat, and said to him: 'Pay me your debt.' 29 His fellow-servant knelt before him, implored him, and said: 'Give me time, and I will pay you.' 30 The cruel servant refused. He went instead and threw him into prison until he should repay his debt.

31 "When the other servants saw what had occurred, they were deeply grieved. So they went to their master and reported the entire story to him.

32 "Thereupon his master sent for him, and told him: "You wicked servant! I cancelled your enormous debt when you entreated me. 33 Therefore it was your duty to have mercy on your fellow-servant as I had mercy on you.'

34 "Then his angry master handed him over to the jailers and gave them orders to torture him until he should pay his entire debt. 35 So also my heavenly Father will do to everyone of you, if you do not forgive the trespasses of your brother with all your heart."

CHAPTER 19

DIVORCE

1 When Jesus had finished these sermons, he left Galilee, and went to the region beyond the Jordan. 2 Large crowds followed him. So he cured their sick there.

3 Then the Pharisees came to him to test him and asked him: "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife on any grounds whatever?"

4 He answered them: "You have read in the Scripture that the Creator at the beginning made a man and a woman, 5 and said: 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother. He will cling to his wife. And the two will become one flesh.' 6 So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore let no man separate those whom God has joined together."

7 But they asked him: "Then why did Moses command that a man may give a writ of separation to his wife and then put her away?"

8 Jesus answered them: "Moses permitted you to divorce your wives on account of your perversity. But that was not the original tradition. 9 Therefore I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife for any other cause except unfaithfulness and

marries another woman commits adultery. And anyone who marries a divorced woman commits adultery also."

10 Then the Disciples said to him: "If that is the right relation of a man to his wife, then it is inexpedient to marry at all."

11 Jesus answered them: "Celibacy is not acceptable for everyone. It is only for those who have a special gift for it. 12 There are men who have been eunuchs from their birth. There are men who have been made eunuchs by other men. And there are men who have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the Kingdom of Heaven. So whoever is able to accept celibacy, let him accept it."

BLESSING OF CHILDREN

13 Then some parents brought their children and asked him to lay his hands on them and bless them. The Disciples reproved them.

14 But Jesus said: "Let the children alone, and do not prevent them from coming to me. For theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven." 15 Thereupon he laid his hands upon them, blessed them, and went away.

THE RICH YOUNG MAN

16 Then a young man came to Jesus, knelt before him, and asked him: "Good Master, what good work must I do to inherit everlasting life?"

17 Jesus answered him: "Why do you call me good? No one is good except God. But if you want to inherit everlasting life, obey the commandments."

18 The young man asked him again: "Which ones?" Jesus answered him: "Do not kill. Do not commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not bear false witness. 19 Honor your father and mother. And love your neighbor as yourself."

20 The young man said to him: "I have obeyed all these commandments since my childhood. What else must I do?"

21 Jesus answered him: "If you want to become perfect, sell your property, give the money to the poor, and you will possess a treasure in heaven. Then come back and follow me."

22 But when the young man heard this advice, he went away broken-hearted. For he was very wealthy.

23 Thereupon Jesus said to his Disciples: "Well, I tell you,

it will be hard for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. 24 Again I tell you, it is easier for a camel to pass through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

25 When the Disciples heard this statement, they were utterly amazed and asked him: "Then who can be saved? 26 Jesus looked at them, and answered: "This achievement is impossible for man, but everything is possible for God."

THE REWARD

27 Then Peter asked him: "Listen, we have given up everything and followed you. What reward are we going to get?"

28 Jesus answered him: "Well, I tell you, in the new world, when the Messiah will sit on his glorious throne, you who have followed me will sit on twelve thrones and will judge the twelve tribes of Israel. 29 Then everyone who has given up houses, or land, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, for my name's sake, will receive a hundredfold reward and will inherit everlasting life. 30 Then many who are first will be last, and the last will be first."

CHAPTER 20

THE LABORERS OF THE VINEYARD

1 "The Kingdom of Heaven is like a householder who went out in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard. 2 He agreed to pay them a shilling a day and sent them to his vineyard.

3 "About nine o'clock he went out again and saw some others standing idle in the market-place. 4 He told them: 'Go to my vineyard also, and I will pay you fairly for your work.' So they went off.

5 "About noon and about three o'clock in the afternoon, he went out again, and did the same thing. 6 Finally, about five o'clock in the afternoon, he went out again, and found still others, standing idle. He asked them: 'Why do you stay here idle all day?' 7 They answered: 'Because nobody has hired us.' He told them: 'Go to my vineyard also, and I will pay you fairly for your work.'

8 "In the evening, the owner of the vineyard said to his overseer: 'Call the laborers, and pay them the same wages, beginning with the last and ending with the first.' 9 So those who were hired last, about five o'clock in the afternoon, came first and received a shilling apiece.

10 "Those who were hired first, early in the morning, came last and expected to get more. But they also received a shilling apiece. 11 Therefore they grumbled against the householder, 12 and said: 'These men who were hired last worked only one hour. But you have put them on an equal footing with us who have done the heavy work of the day during the scorching heat.

13 "The householder answered their spokesman: 'My friend, I am doing you no wrong. We agreed for a shilling a day. 14 Take your money and go home. I want to give as much to this last comer as I give you. 15 I think, I am free to do with my money as I please. You have no right to be angry because I am generous. 16 So the last will be first, and the first last. For many are invited, but few are eligible."

THIRD PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

17 Then, as Jesus was going up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve Disciples aside on the way, and said to them: 18 "Listen! We are now going up to Jerusalem. There the Messiah will be betrayed to the chief priests and Scribes. He will be sentenced to death by them. 19 He will be delivered to the Gentiles. He will be derided, flogged, and crucified. But he will rise again on the third day."

CHRISTIAN LEADERSHIP

20 Thereupon the mother of the sons of Zebedee came to him with her sons. She knelt before him to make a request. 21 Jesus asked her: "What do you want?" She answered: "Grant to my two sons to sit, one on your right hand and the other on your left, when you become a King."

22 Jesus replied: "You do not know what you are asking for. Can you drink the cup I am going to drink, and be baptized, as I am going to be baptized?" They answered him: "We can."

23 Then Jesus said to them: "Indeed you will drink my cup and you will be baptized with my baptism. But I have no authority to place you on my right and on my left. Because these seats will be granted by my Father to those whom he has foreordained."

24 When the other ten heard this request, they were very indignant at the two brothers. 25 But Jesus called them aside and told them: "You know that the rulers of the pagans enslave their subjects, and their great men oppress them. 26 But it will not be so among you. On the contrary, whoever wants to

be great among you must be your servant. 27 And whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave. 28 For the Messiah has not come to be served, but to serve and to give his life as a ransom for the people."

THE TWO BLIND MEN

29 As they were leaving Jericho, a large crown followed him. 30 Thereupon two blind men sitting by the roadside heard that Jesus was passing by, and cried aloud: "Have mercy on us, O Lord, Son of David."

31 The people reproved them, and told them to keep quiet. But they shouted all the more, and said: "Have mercy on us, O Lord, Son of David!"

32 Jesus stopped, called them, and asked them: "What do you want me to do for you?" 33 They answered: "Open our eyes." 34 Jesus took pity on them, and touched their eyes. They regained their sight immediately, and followed him.

CHAPTER 21

MESSIANIC ENTRY

1 As they came to Bethphage on the Mount of Olives near Jerusalem, Jesus sent two Disciples, 2 and said to them: "Go to the village opposite you. There you will find a donkey and a colt, tied together. Untie them and bring them here. 3 If anyone says anything to you, reply: 'The Lord needs them.' Then he will allow you to take them immediately."

4 Thus the prophecy was fulfilled: 5 "Tell the daughter of Zion: 'Look, your King is coming to you meek and mounted on a donkey with a colt, the foal of a beast of burden.' "

6 So the Disciples went off and did as Jesus had ordered them. 7 They brought the donkey with the colt, put their garments on them, and he mounted the donkey. 8 A very large number of people spread their cloaks in his way. Others cut branches from the trees, and scattered them before him.

9 The crowds, which marched before him and after him, shouted: "Hosanna to the Son of David! Blessed is the King who comes in the name of the Lord! Hosanna in the highest!" 10 So, when he entered Jerusalem, all the city was in commotion. The onlookers kept asking: "Who is this man?" 11 The people answered: "This is Jesus the Prophet from Nazareth of Galilee."

CLEANSING THE TEMPLE

12 Thereupon Jesus went into the temple of God. He drove out all those who were selling or buying in it. He overturned the tables of the money-changers and the stands of the pigeon-dealers. 13 He told them: "The Scripture says: 'My house will be called a house of prayer.' But you have made it a den of thieves."

14 Then the blind and the lame came to him. He cured them all. 15 The chief priests and the Scribes were indignant when they saw the miracles which he had performed, and the children who were shouting in the temple: "Hosanna to the Son of David!" 16 So they asked him: "Do you hear what they say?" Jesus answered them: "Yes. Remember the Scriptural passage: 'You have received praise from the mouths of children and infants.'" 17 Then he left them, went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

THE FIG TREE

18 In the morning, as he was returning to the city, Jesus felt hungry. 19 Thereupon he saw a fig tree by the roadside. He went up to it, but found on it nothing but leaves. Then he said: "Let no fruit ever grow on you again." The fig tree withered up at that very moment.

20 When the Disciples saw this miracle, they were amazed, and asked him: "How did the fig tree wither up instantly?"

21 Jesus answered: "Well, I tell you, if you have faith and do not waver, you will do more than what I have done to this fig tree. For even if you say to this mountain, 'Rise up and plunge into the sea,' it will certainly be done. 22 Likewise, you will obtain everything you pray for in faith."

AUTHORITY

23 Then Jesus went into the temple. As he was preaching there, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to him and asked him: "By what authority do you act as you do, and who gave you that authority?"

24 Jesus answered them: "Well, I will ask you a question also. If you answer it, I will tell you by what authority I act as I do. Tell me: 25 Where did John's baptism come from? Was it from God or from men?" They argued with one another: "If we say, 'It was from God,' he will tell us: 'Then why did

you not believe him?' 26 If we say, 'It was from men,' we are afraid of the people. For they all consider John a Prophet."

27 So they answered Jesus: "We do not know." Then Jesus said to them: "Well, I will not tell you by what authority I act as I do either."

THE TWO SONS

28 "Here is another question: There was a man who had two sons. He went to the first one and said: 'My son, go and work in the vineyard today.' 29 He answered: 'I will not go.' But later on, he changed his mind and went to work.

30 "Then the father went to his second son and told him the same thing. He answered: 'Yes, father.' But he did not go to work.

31 "Now which one of the two sons did the will of the father?" They answered him: "The first one." Then Jesus said to them: "Well, I tell you, the publicans and the harlots will go to the Kingdom of Heaven ahead of you. 32 For John came to you on a mission of righteousness. You did not believe in him, while the publicans and the harlots did. Even after you saw him, you did not repent and you did not believe in him."

THE WICKED TENANTS

33 "Listen to another parable: A landowner planted a vineyard, set a fence around it, dug a wine-press in it, and built a watch tower. Then he leased it to tenants, and went abroad.

34 "When the time for the vintage approached, he sent his servants to the tenants to receive his share of the fruit. 35 But the tenants seized his servants, beat the first one, killed the second one, and stoned the third one. 36 Again, the landowner sent other servants, more than the first ones. But the tenants treated them likewise.

37 "Finally, the landowner sent his own son to them, because he thought that they would respect him. 38 But when the tenants saw the son, they said to one another: 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.' 39 So they seized him, drove him out of the vineyard, and killed him.

40 "Now, when the owner of the vineyard returns, what is he going to do to those tenants?" 41 They answered him: "He will put those miserable men to a miserable death, and he

will lease his vineyard to other tenants who will pay him his share of the vintage when the season comes."

THE CORNERSTONE

42 Then he added: "You have read in the Scriptures: 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the cornerstone.' It was the Lord's work and seems marvellous in our eyes. 43 Therefore I tell you that the Kingdom of God will be taken away from you and will be given to nations who will produce the proper fruit. 44 Now anyone who falls on this stone will be broken. And anyone on whom this stone falls will be pulverized."

45 When the chief priests and Pharisees had heard these parables, they were sure that he was speaking about them. 46 So they wanted to arrest him. But they were afraid of the people. For they considered him a Prophet.

CHAPTER 22

THE WEDDING BANQUET

1 Again Jesus preached in parables, and said: 2 "The Kingdom of Heaven is like a king, who gave a wedding banquet for his son. 3 So he sent his servants to summon those whom he had invited to the banquet. But they refused to come.

4 "Again he sent other servants, and said to them: Tell those whom I have invited: 'Listen! I have prepared my banquet. My bullocks and my fat calves are slaughtered, and everything is ready. Come to the wedding festival.'

5 "But they ignored him and went off, one to his estate and another to his business. 6 The rest of them seized his servants, insulted them, and killed them.

7 "When the king heard this news, he was furious. So he sent his troops, put those murderers to death, and burned their city.

8 "Thereupon he said to his servants: 'The banquet is ready. But those whom I had invited proved unworthy of it. 9 So go to the thoroughfares and invite to the banquet everyone you find. 10 The servants went out to the streets, and gathered all the people they could find, good or bad. Thus the hall was filled with guests.

11 "But when the king went in to look at the guests, he noticed a man who was not wearing a wedding garment, 12 and said to him: 'My friend, how is it that you came here without a wedding garment?' He made no reply.

13 "Then the king said to his attendants: 'Bind him hand and foot, and throw him into the outer darkness where sinners are wailing and gnashing their teeth.' 14 For many are invited, but few are eligible."

TRIBUTE TO CAESAR

15 At that time, the Pharisees consulted together about the ways and means of entrapping Jesus in argument. 16 So they sent their disciples and the Herodians to him, and asked him: "Master, we know that you are sincere and that you teach the way of God truthfully, fearlessly and impartially. 17 So give us your opinion: Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?"

18 Jesus saw their malice and answered them: "Hypocrites, why do you try to trap me? 19 Show me the coin for the tax." They handed him a shilling. 20 Thereupon Jesus asked them: "Whose is this effigy and inscription?" 21 They answered: "Caesar's." Then Jesus said to them: "Render therefore to Caesar what belongs to Caesar, and to God what belongs to God."

22 When they heard his answer, they were amazed. So they left him and went away.

THE SEVEN BROTHERS

23 On the same day, some Sadducees who do not believe in resurrection came to Jesus, 24 and said: "Master, Moses said that if a man dies without children, his brother must marry his widow and raise up a family for him.

25 "Now there were seven brothers among us. The first one of them married and died. As he had no children, he left his wife to his brother. 26 So did the second and the third, down to the seventh brother. 27 After them, the woman died also. 28 At the resurrection, whose wife will she be? For every one of them had married her."

29 Jesus answered them: "You are wrong, because you do not understand the Scriptures and the attributes of God. 30 For after the resurrection, human beings will neither marry nor be given in marriage. On the contrary, they will live like angels in heaven.

31 "As to the resurrection of the dead, you have read what God himself said: 32 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of

Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' Consequently, God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living." 33 The people who heard him were amazed by his doctrine.

THE GREATEST COMMANDMENT

34 When the Pharisees heard that he had silenced the Sadducees, they consulted together again. 35 Then one of them, a lawyer, tested him with this question: 36 "Master, what is the greatest commandment in the Law?"

37 Jesus answered him: "You must love the Lord your God with your whole heart, your whole soul, and your whole mind.' 38 This is the first and the greatest commandment. 39 The second one is similar to the first one: 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.' 40 All the Law and the Prophets are summarized in these two commandments."

THE SON OF DAVID

41 While the Pharisees were assembled there, Jesus asked them: 42 "Tell me, what do you think about the descent of the Messiah? Whose son is he?" They answered him: "David's."

43 He said to them: "Yes. But David, inspired by the Holy Spirit, calls him 'Master' in this Scriptural passage: 44 'The Lord said to my Master: Sit at my right hand until I put your enemies under your feet.' 45 Now, if David calls him 'Master,' he cannot be his son." 46 No one could give him an answer. So from that day no one ventured to ask him any more questions.

CHAPTER 23

THE SCRIBES AND THE PHARISEES

1 Then Jesus preached to the people and to his Disciples, 2 saying: "The Scribes and the Pharisees are the successors of Moses. 3 Therefore do and observe whatever they tell you. But do not imitate their actions. For they preach, but do not practice.

4 "They pile up heavy and insupportable burdens, and they put them on other men's shoulders. But they will not lift a finger to move them. 5 They do everything to make a show before the people. They wear large phylacteries and long tassels. 6 They love the places of honor at banquets, the first seats in the synagogues, 7 respectful greetings in the market-place, and the title of Rabbi.

8 "Now do not give the title of Rabbi to anyone among you. For you have only one Teacher, Christ, and you are all brethren. 9 Do not give the title of Father to anyone on earth. For you have only one Father, your Father in heaven. 10 Do not give the title of Master to anyone among you. For you have only one Master, Christ. 11 Moreover, your leader must be your servant. 12 For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled. And everyone who humbles himself will be exalted."

DENUNCIATION OF THE PHARISEES

13 "But woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you devour the property of widows, and you make endless prayers under any pretext.

14 "Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you lock the doors of the Kingdom of Heaven. You do not go in yourselves, and you do not allow those to go in who are trying to enter.

15 "Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you traverse land and sea to make a single convert, and when you convert him, you make him twice as much a son of Hades as yourselves.

16 "Woe to you, blind guides! Because you say: 'If anyone swears by the temple, his oath is not binding. But if anyone swears by the gold of the temple, his oath is binding.' 17 Blind fools! Which is greater? The gold, or the temple which consecrates the gold?

18 "Again you say: 'If anyone swears by the altar, his oath is not binding. But if anyone swears by the gift on the altar, his oath is binding.' 19 Blind fools! Which is greater? The gift, or the altar which consecrates the gift?

20 "Therefore everyone who swears by the altar, swears at the same time by everything upon it. 21 Likewise everyone who swears by the temple, swears at the same time by the temple as well as by God who dwells in the temple. 22 And everyone who swears by heaven, swears at the same time by the throne of God, and by God himself who sits upon that throne.

23 "Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you pay tithes on mint, on dill, and on cummin. But you neglect the weightier commandments of the Law: righteousness, mercy, and faith. You should observe the latter, without overlooking the former. 24 Blind guides, you strain the gnat, but you swallow the camel.

25 "Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you cleanse the outside of the cup and the plate, while the inside is full of extortion and injustice. 26 Blind Pharisees! You must first cleanse the inside of the cup. Then the outside will also be clean.

27 "Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you are like white-washed sepulchres which outwardly look beautiful, but within are full of dead men's bones and all kinds of impurity. 28 So you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but within you are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 "Woe to you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you build tombs for the Prophets. You decorate the monuments of the righteous, 30 and you say: 'If we had been living in the days of our forefathers, we would not have joined them in the murder of the Prophets.' 31 Thus you testify against yourselves by admitting that you are the descendants of those who murdered the Prophets."

RETRIBUTION

32 "Go on, and complete the crimes of your forefathers!

33 "You serpents, you brood of vipers! You cannot escape the damnation of Hades! 34 Listen! I am going to send you more Prophets, sages, and teachers. But you will kill them, crucify them, flog them in your synagogues, and drive them from one city to another.

35 "Thus you will become responsible for all the righteous blood which has been shed on earth, from the blood of Righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, the son of Barachiah whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar. 36 Well, I tell you, all these crimes will be laid at the door of this generation."

LAMENTATION

37 "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, murdering your prophets and stoning your apostles! How often I have yearned to gather your children around me, as a hen gathers her brood under her wings! But you refused. 38 Look, now your house is desolate. 39 For I tell you that you will not see me again until you exclaim: 'Blessed is the Messiah who comes in the Lord's name.' "

CHAPTER 24

PROPHECY OF THE END

1 Thereupon Jesus went out of the temple. As he was proceeding on his way, the Disciples came to him and called his attention to the buildings of the temple. 2 But he said to them: "Look at these buildings! Well, I tell you, not one stone will be left upon another. For everything will be torn down."

3 Later on, while he was resting on the Mount of Olives, the Disciples asked him privately: "Tell us when this disaster will happen, and what will be the sign of your manifestation at the end of the world."

FALSE PROPHETS

4 Jesus answered them: "Look out. Let no one mislead you about my coming. 5 Because many impostors will come in my name, saying: 'I am the Messiah!' And they will mislead many people. 6 You will hear of wars and rumors of wars. But do not be alarmed by them. True, all these disasters must happen. But that will not be the end of the world."

WARS AND PERSECUTIONS

7 "Yes, nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various countries. 8 But that will be only the beginning of the ordeal.

9 "Then they will hand you over to torture and they will put you to death. You will be hated by the Gentiles on account of my name. 10 Many will fall away, betray one another, and hate one another. 11 Many false prophets will appear, and many will be misled by them. 12 Wickedness will increase and the charity of most men will grow cold. 13 But everyone who endures to the end will be saved."

SIGNS OF THE END

14 "Now this Gospel of the Kingdom will be preached first all over the world as a testimony to all the Gentiles. Then the end will come. 15 Then you will see the abominable sacrilege standing in the holy temple. Daniel the Prophet has predicted this calamity. Every reader will understand what I mean.

16 "Then all those who live in Judea must flee to the mountains. 17 The man who happens to be on the housetop

must not go down to take anything out of his house. 18 The man who happens to be in the field must not go back to take his coat.

19 "Woe to the pregnant and nursing women in those days! 20 Pray that you may not have to flee in the winter or on the Sabbath day. 21 For in those days there will be greater affliction than there has ever been from the beginning of the world until now, or ever will be again. 22 Now if those days had not been cut short, no human being would escape. But those days will be cut short for the sake of the elect."

IMPOSTORS

23 "Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Messiah!' or 'There he is!' do not believe it. 24 For false messiahs and prophets will appear, and they will perform great miracles and wonders to lead astray, if they can, even the elect.

25 "Now look out! I have foretold you everything. 26 Therefore if they say to you, 'There he is in the desert!' do not go out. If they say, 'Here he is in the private chamber!' do not believe it."

THE SECOND COMING

27 "For as the lightning starts in the east and flashes to the west, so the coming of the Son of God will be. 28 It will be preceded by disasters, because wherever there is a carcass, there the vultures will flock together.

29 "Immediately after the affliction of those days, the sun will be darkened. The moon will not give any light. The stars will fall from heaven. The powers of heaven will be shaken. 30 Then the sign of the Messiah will appear in the sky. All the nations of the earth will stand in awe, as they will see the Messiah coming from the clouds of heaven with great power and glory. 31 Then he will send out his angels with a loud-sounding trumpet to gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

THE FIG TREE

32 "Now listen to the parable of the fig tree: As soon as its branches grow soft and put forth leaves, you know that the summer is coming. 33 So also, when you see all these events, you must know that he is at your very door.

34 "Well, I tell you, the men of this generation will live to see all these occurrences. 35 Heaven and earth will pass away. But my words will not pass away."

WATCHFULNESS

36 "Now about that day and that hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven. Only my Father knows. 37 For as it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Messiah. 38 In those days before the Flood, the people were eating, drinking, marrying, and giving in marriage until the very day that Noah went into the Ark. 39 They knew nothing about the Flood until it came and swept them all away. So it will be at the coming of the Messiah also.

40 "Then of two men in the field one will be taken, and the other left. 41 Of two women at the hand-mill one will be taken, and the other left. 42 Therefore watch. For you do not know on what day your Lord is coming.

43 "But you may be sure what the householder would have done, if he had known at what time of the night the thief was coming. Of course, he would have watched and would not have allowed the thief to break into his house. 44 Therefore you must be ready also. For the Messiah is coming at an hour you do not expect."

THE FAITHFUL SERVANT

45 "Here is an opportunity for the faithful and thoughtful servant. His master has placed him over the members of his household to give them their food at the proper time. 46 Well, that servant will be happy when his master on his arrival finds him fulfilling his duty. 47 Well, I tell you, that his master will put him in charge of all his property."

THE WICKED SERVANT

48 "But if he is a bad servant, he will say to himself that his master is going to stay away a long time. 49 He will begin to beat his fellow-servants. He will eat and drink with drunkards. 50 Of course, his master will come on a day when the servant does not expect him and at an hour he does not know at all. 51 Then his master will punish him severely, and will put him with the unbelievers in a place where sinners are wailing and gnashing their teeth."

CHAPTER 25

THE TEN VIRGINS

1 "The Kingdom of Heaven is like ten virgins, who took
their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. 2 Five of
them were wise, and five were foolish. 3 The foolish ones brought
their lamps, but took no oil with them. 4 But the wise ones
took flasks of oil with their lamps. 5 As the bridegroom was
delayed, they all grew drowsy and fell asleep.

6 "At midnight a cry was heard: 'Wake up! The bridegroom
is coming! Come out to meet him!' 7 Thereupon all the virgins
awoke, and trimmed their lamps. 8 Then the foolish ones told
the wise ones: 'Give us some of your oil. For our lamps are
going out.'

9 "But the wise ones answered: 'We are afraid that we
have not enough oil for us and for you. You better go to the
dealers and buy some for yourselves.' 10 But while they were
gone to buy it, the bridegroom arrived. The wise ones who were
ready went in with him to the wedding banquet. Thereupon the
door was closed.

11 "Later on, the foolish ones came, and said: 'Lord, Lord,
open the door for us.' 12 But he answered: 'Well, I tell you,
I do not know you.' 13 Therefore watch. For you do not know
the day and the hour at which the Messiah is coming."

THE TALENTS

14 "The Kingdom of Heaven is like a man going abroad
who called his servants, and entrusted his property to them.
15 He gave five talents to the first one, two talents to the second,
and one talent to the third, to each one according to his ability.
Then he went away.

16 "The first one who had received five talents went into
business immediately with the money, and made a profit of five
talents more. 17 Likewise, the second one who had received two
talents made a profit of two talents more. 18 But the third one,
who had received one talent, went away, dug a hole in the
ground, and buried his master's money.

19 "After a long time, the master of those servants came
back and settled accounts with them. 20 The first one who had
received five talents came and brought him five talents more,
and said: 'Master, you gave me five talents. Look, I have made
a profit of five talents more.' 21 His master said to him: 'Well

done, good and faithful servant! You have been trustworthy in charge of a small sum. I will put you in charge of a large sum. Come, share the festival of your master.'

22 "The second one who had received two talents came next, and said: 'Master, you gave me two talents. Look, I have made a profit of two talents more.' 23 His master said to him: 'Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been trustworthy in charge of a small sum. I will put you in charge of a large sum. Come, share the festival of your master.'

24 "Then the third one who had received one talent came, and said: 'Master, I knew you were a greedy man. You reap where you have not sowed, and gather where you have not winnowed. 25 So, as I was afraid, I went and buried your talent in the ground. Look, here is your money.'

26 "His master answered him: 'Wicked and idle servant! You knew that I reap where I have not sowed, and gather where I have not winnowed. 27 Then you ought to have put my money in the bank. Because when I came back, I would have received my money with interest.'

28 " 'Therefore take that talent away from him, and give it to the man who has the ten talents. 29 For everyone who has much will be given more, and will be plentifully supplied. But everyone who has little will be deprived even of the little he has. 30 Now cast this unworthy servant into the outer darkness where sinners are wailing and gnashing their teeth.' "

THE LAST JUDGMENT

31 "When the Messiah comes in his glory with his holy angels, he will sit on his glorious throne. 32 He will gather all the nations before him. He will separate them one from another as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. 33 He will place the sheep on his right hand and the goats on his left.

34 "Then the King will say to those on his right hand: 'Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. 35 For I was hungry, and you gave me food. I was thirsty, and you gave me drink. I was a stranger, and you welcomed me. 36 I was naked, and you clothed me. I was in prison, and you came to see me.'

37 "The righteous will ask him: 'Lord, when did we see you hungry and gave you food, or thirsty and gave you drink? 38 When did we see you a stranger, and welcomed you, or naked, and clothed you? 39 When did we see you sick, or in prison, and visited you?'

40 "The King will answer them: 'Well, I tell you, insofar as you did it to one of the least of these my brethren you did it to me.'

41 "Then the King will say to those on his left hand: 'Go away from me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for Satan and his devils! 42 For I was hungry, but you gave me no food. I was thirsty, but you gave me no drink. 43 I was a stranger, but you did not welcome me. I was naked, but you did not clothe me. I was sick and in prison, but you did not visit me.'

44 "They will also ask him: 'Lord, when did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister to you?'

45 "He will answer them: 'Well, I tell you, insofar as you did not do it to one of the least of these my brethren you did not do it to me.' 46 Then the wicked will go into everlasting punishment, and the righteous into everlasting life."

CHAPTER 26

FOURTH PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

1 When Jesus had finished all these sermons, he said to his Disciples: 2 "You know that after two days the Passover is coming. Then the Messiah will be betrayed and crucified."

THE CONSPIRACY

3 Then the chief priests, the Scribes, and the elders of the people gathered in the house of the high priest called Caiaphas, 4 and plotted to arrest Jesus by cunning and put him to death. 5 But they agreed that they should not do it during the festival, in order to avoid an uproar among the people.

THE ANOINTMENT

6 Now, when Jesus was at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, 7 a woman came to him with an alabaster jar of a very expensive perfume, and poured it on his head, as he sat at the table. 8 When the Disciples saw it, they were indignant and said: "Why this waste? 9 For we might have sold this perfume for a high price and given the proceeds to the poor."

10 Jesus heard that remark and said: "Why do you bother the woman? She has rendered me a noble service. 11 You always have the poor with you. But you will not always have me.

12 When she poured this perfume on my body, she prepared
me for my funeral. 13 Well, I tell you, wherever this Gospel is
preached, all over the world, her act also will be mentioned
in her commemoration."

THE BETRAYAL

14 Then one of the twelve Disciples, who was called Judas
Iscariot, went to the chief priests, 15 and asked them: "What
will you give me if I hand him over to you?" They promised
him thirty silver pieces. 16 From that moment he watched for
an opportunity to betray him.

PASSOVER PREPARATIONS

17 On the first day of the Unleavened Bread, the Disciples
came to Jesus and asked him: "Where do you want us to make
the preparations for your Passover Supper?" 18 He answered:
"Go into the city to a certain man, and tell him: The Master
says: 'My time is drawing near. I am going to celebrate the
Passover at your house with my Disciples.'" 19 His Disciples
did as Jesus had ordered them, and prepared the Passover Supper.

THE BETRAYER

20 In the evening he sat down at the table with the twelve
Apostles. 21 As they were eating, he said: "Well, I tell you,
one of you will betray me." 22 They were very sorrowful, and
began to ask him one after another: "Is it I, Master?"

23 Jesus answered them: "The man who has eaten from
the same dish with me will betray me. 24 The Messiah will go
away, as it has been prophesied about him in the Scriptures.
But woe to the man who will betray him! It would have been
better for that man if he had never been born."

25 Then Judas who betrayed him asked him: "Is it I
Master?" Jesus answered: "Yes, you said it yourself."

THE HOLY EUCHARIST

26 During the Supper Jesus took the bread, offered thanks,
broke it, gave it to his Disciples, and said: "Take, eat, this is
my Body."

27 Then he took the cup, offered thanks, gave it to them,
and said: "Drink of it, all of you. 28 This is my Blood of the
New Testament which is poured out for many, for the remission

of sins. 29 I tell you, I will never drink this fruit of the vine again until that day when I will drink the new wine with you in the Kingdom of my Father."

PREDICTION OF DENIALS

30 Thereupon they sang a hymn, and went out to the Mount of Olives. 31 Then Jesus said to them: "You will all desert me tonight. For it is written in the Scriptures: 'I will strike the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.' 32 But after my resurrection I will go before you and meet you in Galilee."

33 Peter declared to him: "I will never desert you, even if all the others do." 34 Jesus said to him: "Well, I tell you, this very night, before the cock crows, you will deny me three times." 35 Peter replied: "I will not deny you, even if I have to die with you." All the Disciples made similar statements.

THE AGONY

36 Then Jesus went with them to a place called Gethsemane, and said to them: "Sit down here while I go and pray over there." 37 Thereupon he took Peter and the sons of Zebedee along with him, and he began to be distressed and dismayed. 38 He told them: "My soul is very sorrowful, even unto death. Stay here, and watch with me."

39 Then he walked a little further, fell on his face, and prayed: "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from me. Yet not as I will, but as you will."

40 When he went back to his Disciples, he found them asleep, and said to Peter: "So you were not able to watch with me for a single hour! 41 Watch and pray. Then you will not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."

42 Again, he went away for the second time, and prayed: "My Father, if this cup cannot pass away from me unless I drink it, thy will be done."

43 When he came back, he found them asleep again. For they could not keep their eyes open. 44 So he left them again, went away, prayed for the third time, and repeated the same petitions.

45 When he came back to his Disciples for the last time, he said to them: "Are you still asleep and resting? Listen, the hour is drawing near. The Messiah will be delivered into the hands of sinners. 46 Rise, let us go away from here. But look! My betrayer has arrived."

THE ARREST

47 While Jesus was still speaking, Judas, one of the twelve Disciples, came suddenly. He was accompanied by a large detachment of guards armed with swords and clubs who had been sent by the chief priests and the elders of the people.

48 The traitor had given them a signal, saying: "The man is the one I will kiss. Arrest him." 49 So he came up to Jesus and said: "Hail, Master!" Thereupon he kissed him affectionately. 50 Jesus said to him: "My friend, what did you come here for?" In the meantime, the guards came forward, laid hands on Jesus, and arrested him.

51 Thereupon one of the Disciples of Jesus reached out his hand, drew his sword, struck the attendant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. 52 But Jesus said to him: "Put your sword back into its place. For all those who draw the sword will perish by the sword. 53 You know that I can appeal to my Father and immediately have more than twelve legions of angels to defend me. 54 But these events must take place. Thus the prophecies of the Scriptures will be fulfilled."

55 Then Jesus said to the crowd: "You have come out to arrest me with swords and clubs, as if I were a bandit. Day after day I preached to you in the temple, and you did not arrest me. 56 But all these events have taken place in fulfillment of the prophecies of the Scriptures." Thereupon all the Disciples abandoned him and ran away.

BEFORE CAIAPHAS

57 In the meantime, the guards who had arrested Jesus led him to Caiaphas, the high priest, where the Scribes and the elders were assembled. 58 Peter followed them at a distance as far as the courtyard of the high priest, went inside, and sat with the servants to see the end.

59 Now the chief priests and the members of the council were trying to get false testimony against Jesus, and put him to death. 60 But they found none, although many false witnesses had volunteered. 61 Finally, two false witnesses came forward and testified: "This man said: 'I can tear down the temple of God and rebuild it in three days.' "

62 The high priest then stood up and asked him: "What is your answer to the accusations these men bring against you?" 63 But Jesus remained silent. Thereupon the high priest told

him: "In the name of the living God, tell us whether you are the Messiah, the Son of God."

64 Jesus answered him: "Yes. You said it yourself. Moreover, I tell you, before long you will see the Messiah seated at the right hand of Almighty God and coming down from the clouds of heaven."

65 The high priest tore his garments, and said: "He has blasphemed. We have no further need of witnesses. You have now heard his blasphemy. 66 What is your verdict?" They all answered: "He is guilty of a capital crime." 67 Then they spat on his face and buffeted him. Some of them slapped him, 68 and asked him: "Prophesy to us, O Messiah! Who struck you?"

THE DENIAL

69 Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard. A maid came to him, and said: "You were with Jesus of Galilee also." 70 But he denied it before them all and said: "I do not know what you mean."

71 When he went out to the vestibule, another maid saw him, and said to the bystanders: "This man also was with Jesus of Nazareth." 72 He denied it again with an oath: "I do not know that man at all."

73 A little while afterward, the bystanders came to Peter, and said: "You are certainly one of them also. For your accent betrays you." 74 Then he began to curse and swear: "I do not know that man at all." At that moment the cock crowed.

75 Thereupon Peter remembered what Jesus had foretold him: "Before the cock crows, you will deny me three times." Then he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAPTER 27

SUICIDE OF JUDAS

1 In the morning, all the chief priests and the elders of the people consulted together against Jesus, in order to put him to death. 2 So they bound him, led him away, and handed him over to Pilate the procurator.

3 When Judas saw that Jesus was sentenced to death, he repented, and brought back the thirty silver pieces to the chief priests and the elders, 4 saying: "I have sinned by betraying an innocent man." They answered: "That does not concern us. That is your affair." 5 Thereupon Judas flung down the silver pieces, left the temple, went away, and hanged himself.

6 The chief priests took the silver pieces and said: "It is
not lawful to put this money into the treasury, because it is
blood money." 7 So after a consultation, they bought with it
the Potter's Field as a cemetery for strangers. 8 Therefore that
field has been called the Field of Blood to this day.

9 Thus the prophecy of Jeremiah was fulfilled: "They took
the thirty silver pieces, the reward for the man on whom a
price was set by the sons of Israel, 10 and they gave them for
the Potter's Field, as the Lord had ordered them."

BEFORE PILATE

11 Then Jesus stood before the procurator. He asked him:
"Are you the King of the Jews?" Jesus answered him: "Yes.
You said it yourself." 12 But when he was accused by the chief
priests and the elders, he made no answer. 13 Pilate asked him
again: "Have you heard how many accusations they made against
you?" 14 But he gave no answer even to a single accusation.
The procurator was greatly surprised.

JESUS AND BARABBAS

15 Now during the festival the procurator was accustomed
to release for the people any prisoner they chose. 16 At this
time, there was a notorious prisoner named Barabbas.

17 So when the people were assembled for this purpose,
Pilate asked them: "Whom do you want me to release for you,
Barabbas, or Jesus who is called the Messiah?" 18 For he knew
that they had delivered him out of envy.

19 Moreover, while he was sitting on the tribunal, his wife
sent him the following message: "Do not harm that righteous
man. For I have suffered much in a dream today on his account."
20 But the chief priests and the elders persuaded the people
to demand the release of Barabbas and the execution of Jesus.

21 The procurator asked them again: "Which one of the
two do you want me to release for you?" They all answered:
"Barabbas!"

22 Pilate asked them again: "Then what shall I do with
Jesus who is called the Messiah?" They all answered: "Let him
be crucified."

23 The procurator asked them again: "What crime has he
committed?" But they shouted all the louder: "Let him be
crucified!"

24 Pilate saw that he was gaining nothing. For the uproar only became worse. So he took water, washed his hands in front of the crowd, and said: "I am innocent of the blood of this righteous man. The responsibility is all yours."

25 All the people answered: "Let his blood be on us and on our children." 26 So Pilate released Barabbas for them. On the other hand, he gave orders to have Jesus flogged and crucified.

THE CROWN OF THORNS

27 Then the soldiers took Jesus into the praetorium and gathered the entire detachment before him. 28 They stripped him, and put a scarlet robe on him. 29 They plaited a crown of thorns, placed it on his head, put a reed in his right hand, knelt before him, and derided him, saying: "Hail, King of the Jews!"

30 Moreover, they spat on him, took the reed, and struck him on his head. 31 After deriding him, they took off his scarlet robe, put his own clothes on him, and led him away to crucify him.

SIMON THE CYRENIAN

32 As they went out of the city, they came upon a Cyrenian called Simon. They compelled him to carry his Cross.

THE CRUCIFIXION

33 When they arrived at a place called Golgotha, which means the Place of the Skull, 34 they offered him wine mixed with gall. But when he tasted it, he refused to drink it.

35 Then the soldiers crucified him and divided his garments among them by casting lots. Thus the prophecy was fulfilled: "They divided my garments and cast lots for my vesture." 36 Then they sat down and kept guard over him. 37 The accusation against him was placed over his head on an inscription, which read: "This is Jesus, the King of the Jews."

DERISIONS

38 Two bandits were crucified with him, one on his right and the other on his left. 39 The passers-by jeered at him, shook their heads, 40 and said: "You can tear down the temple and rebuild it in three days. If so, save yourself now. If you

are the Son of God, come down from the Cross. Then we will believe in you."

41 Likewise, the chief priests, the scribes, the elders, and the Pharisees derided him also, and said: 42 "You saved others. But you cannot save yourself. If you are the King of Israel, come down from the Cross. Then we will believe in you. 43 You trusted in God. Let God save you now, if he loves you. For you said: 'I am the Son of God.'"

44 Even the bandits who were crucified with him reviled him in similar terms.

DESPAIR AND DEATH

45 Now from the sixth hour darkness overspread all the country until the ninth hour. 46 At about the ninth hour, Jesus cried aloud: "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani!" That is to say: "My God, my God! Why have you forsaken me?"

47 Some of the bystanders who heard him said: "Listen! He is calling Elijah!" 48 One of them ran at once, took a sponge, filled it with vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave it to him to drink. 49 But the others said: "Let us see whether Elijah will come to save him."

50 Then Jesus cried aloud again, and expired. 51 Thereupon the curtain of the temple was rent in two from top to bottom. The earth shook. The rocks were split. 52 The tombs were opened. Many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep arose, 53 came out of the tombs after his resurrection, went into the Holy City, and appeared to many.

THE CENTURION

54 When the Centurion and the soldiers who kept guard over him saw the earthquake and the other omens, they were filled with awe, and said: "Indeed he was the Son of God!"

THE WOMEN

55 Many women also were there looking on from a distance. They had followed Jesus from Galilee ministering to him. 56 Among them were Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of Zebedee.

THE BURIAL

57 In the evening a rich man from Arimathea called

Joseph, who was also a disciple of Jesus, came forward boldly. 58 He went to Pilate and asked him for the body of Jesus. Pilate granted his request.

59 Joseph took down the body from the Cross, wrapped it in a clean linen shroud, 60 and buried it in his own new tomb, which he had cut in the rock. Thereupon he rolled a great stone over the door of the tomb, and went away.

61 Mary Magdalene and the other Mary were sitting there opposite the tomb.

THE GUARDS

62 On the next day, after the Day of Preparation, the priests and the Pharisees went in a body to Pilate, 63 and said to him: "Sir! We remember that when this imposter was still alive, he declared: 'After three days I will rise again.' 64 Therefore give orders to have the tomb closely guarded until the third day. Otherwise, his Disciples may come, steal him away, and then tell the people: 'He has risen from the dead.' Then this last fraud will be worse than the first one."

65 Pilate answered them: "You have a guard of soldiers. Go and make the tomb as safe as you can." 66 So they went and made the tomb secure by sealing the stone and by setting a guard.

CHAPTER 28

THE RESURRECTION

1 After the Sabbath, as the first day of the week was dawning, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went to see the tomb.

2 Thereupon a violent earthquake shook the earth. For an Angel of the Lord descended from heaven, came to the tomb, rolled the stone back from the entrance, and sat upon it. 3 His face was shining like lightning, and his garments were as white as snow. 4 The guards trembled for fear and became like dead men.

5 Then the Angel said to the women: "Do not be afraid. For I know that you are looking for Jesus the Crucified. 6 He is not here. For he has risen, as he foretold you. Come and look at the place where the Lord lay. 7 Now go quickly and tell his Disciples that he has risen from the dead, and is going

to Galilee before you. You will see him there. Now I have told you my message."

JESUS AND THE WOMEN

8 The women hurried away from the tomb frightened yet overjoyed, and ran to announce the news to the Disciples. 9 On the way, Jesus met them and said to them: "Hail!" The women went up to him, clasped his feet, and worshipped him. 10 Jesus said to them: "Go and tell my brethren to go to Galilee. They will see me there."

THE BRIBE

11 While the women were on their way, some of the guards went into the city and reported to the chief priests the miracle of the Resurrection. 12 The chief priests held a meeting with the elders, and after a consultation they gave the soldiers a large sum of money, 13 saying: "Tell the people: 'His Disciples came by night and stole him away while we were asleep.' 14 If this report reaches the procurator, we will persuade him and keep you out of trouble."

15 So the soldiers took the money and did as they were ordered. This story has been current among the Jews until this day.

FINAL INSTRUCTIONS

16 Now the eleven Apostles went to the mountain in Galilee where Jesus had ordered them to meet him. 17 When they saw him they worshipped him. But some of them hesitated.

18 Then Jesus came and said to them: "Full authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. 19 Go therefore, convert all nations, baptize them in the name of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, 20 and teach them to observe the commandments I have given you. And remember, I will be with you always, to the very end of the world. Amen.

THE HOLY GOSPEL
ACCORDING TO SAINT MARK

CHAPTER 1

JOHN THE BAPTIST

1 This is the beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, 2 as it has been predicted by the Prophets: "Listen, I send my messenger before you. He will announce your coming. 3 A Prophet is preaching in the desert: Prepare the way of the Lord. Straighten out his paths."

4 John the Baptist appeared in the desert and preached a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. 5 The inhabitants of all the land of Judea and of the city of Jerusalem went out to him, confessed their sins, and were baptized by him in the river Jordan.

6 John wore a garment of camel's hair and a leather belt around his waist. He ate locusts and wild honey. 7 He preached, and said: "After me comes a mightier man than I whose sandal-strap I am not worthy to stoop down and untie. 8 I have baptized you with water. But he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit."

THE BAPTISM OF JESUS

9 In those days, Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized by John in the Jordan. 10 As he came out of the water, immediately he saw the heavens rent asunder and the Holy Spirit like a dove descending upon him. 11 Then a voice came out of the heavens, and said: "You are my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

THE TEMPTATIONS

12 Thereupon the Holy Spirit led him out in the desert. 13 He remained in the desert for forty days during which he was tempted by Satan. He lived with the wild animals. But the angels ministered unto him.

IN GALILEE

14 After John had been imprisoned, Jesus returned to Galilee and began to preach the Gospel of the Kingdom of God. 15 He proclaimed: "The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is drawing near. Repent, and believe in the Gospel."

THE FIRST APOSTLES

16 As Jesus was passing along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew, the brother of Simon. They were casting their nets into the Sea. For they were fishermen. 17 Jesus said to them: "Follow me. For I will make you fishers of men. 18 Immediately, they left their nets and followed him.

19 As he went on a little further, he saw James, the son of Zebedee, and his brother John. They were mending their nets in their boat. 20 He called them immediately. They left their father Zebedee in the boat with their hired servants and followed him.

PREACHING WITH AUTHORITY

21 They proceeded to Capernaum. On the very first Sabbath day, Jesus went into the synagogue, and preached to the people. 22 They were amazed at his sermons. For he taught, not like the Scribes, but like a man who had authority.

THE DEMONIAC

23 In the synagogue there was a man possessed by an unclean spirit who shouted, 24 and said: "What do you want from us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know that you are the Son of God."

25 Jesus rebuked him, and said: "Silence! Get out of him." 26 The unclean spirit convulsed the demoniac, shouted loudly, and went out of him. 27 All the people were amazed, and kept asking one another: "What does this mean? What is this new doctrine? For he gives orders with authority even to the unclean spirits, and they obey him." 28 So his fame spread at once all over Galilee.

PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW

29 As they came out of the synagogue, Jesus with James and John went into the house of Simon and Andrew. 30 The

mother-in-law of Simon was in bed sick with fever. They told him immediately about her. 31 He went up to her, grasped her hand, and raised her up. The fever left her at once, and she waited on them.

HEALINGS

32 In the evening, after sunset, they brought to him all the sick and the demoniacs. 33 Indeed the entire city was gathered together at his door. 34 He cured many who were afflicted with various diseases, and cast out many demons. But he did not allow the demons to speak about it, because they all knew that he was the Messiah.

35 In the morning, long before daybreak, he got up, left the house, went away to a solitary place, and began to pray. 36 Simon and his companions sought him out, 37 found him, and said to him: "All the people are looking for you."

38 Jesus answered: "Let us go to the neighboring towns. I want to preach in them also. For that is the reason I came out here." 39 So he went all over Galilee, preaching in their synagogues, and casting out demons.

THE LEPER

40 Then a leper came to him, knelt before him, implored him, and said: "If you will, you can cleanse me." 41 Jesus, moved with compassion, stretched out his hand, touched him, and said: "I will. Be cleansed."

42 At that very moment the leprosy left him, and he was cleansed. 43 Thereupon Jesus dismissed him and warned him: 44 "See that you say nothing about it to any man. But go, show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings of purification prescribed by Moses as an evidence of your cure." 45 But he went off, talked about it freely, and spread the story widely. So Jesus could not enter any city openly, and had to dwell in the countryside. Nevertheless, the people came to him from every direction.

CHAPTER 2

THE PARALYTIC

1 A few days later, Jesus returned to Capernaum. Immediately, the rumor spread that he was in somebody's house.

2 Thereupon so many people were gathered together that

there was no longer room for them even about the door. He preached the Gospel to them.

3 A paralytic carried by four men was brought to him. 4 As they could not get near him because of the crowd, they removed the roof above him, made an opening, and lowered the bed on which the paralytic lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic: "My son, your sins are forgiven." 6 But some of the Scribes who were sitting there pondered in their minds: 7 "This man is blaspheming. Only God can forgive sins."

8 Jesus guessed their thoughts immediately, and said to them: "Why do you ponder such wicked thoughts in your minds? 9 Which is easier? To say to the paralytic: 'Your sins are forgiven!' Or to say to him: 'Stand up, take up your bed, and walk!' 10 Well, I will show you that the Son of man has authority to forgive sins on earth."

11 Thereupon he said to the paralytic: "I tell you, stand up, take up your bed, and go home!" 12 The paralytic stood up at once, took up his bed, and went out in the presence of all the people. They were all amazed, and glorified God, saying: "We have never seen such a miracle before."

13 Again he went out of the town along the seashore. The people followed him. So he preached to them.

LEVI

14 As Jesus was passing along, he saw Levi, the son of Alphaeus, sitting in the custom-house, and said to him: "Follow me."

15 As he sat at the table in Levi's house, many publicans and sinners joined Jesus and his Disciples. For many of them were his followers. 16 When the Scribes and the Pharisees saw that he was eating with publicans and sinners, they asked his Disciples: "Why does your Master eat with publicans and sinners?"

17 Jesus heard the question and answered them: "The healthy do not need a physician, but the sick do. I have not come to call the righteous to repentance, but the sinners.

FASTING

18 The disciples of John and the Pharisees used to fast. So they came and asked him: "Why do the disciples of John and the Pharisees fast, while your Disciples do not fast?"

19 Jesus answered them: "How can the wedding guests fast, while the bridegroom is with them? Of course, as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. 20 But the day will come, when the bridegroom will be taken away from them. Then in those days they will fast."

NEW AND OLD

21 "No one uses a piece of new cloth to patch an old coat. If he does, the new patch will break away from the old coat and make the hole worse than ever. 22 Likewise, no one puts new wine into old wineskins. If he does, the new wine will burst the skins, the wine will run out, and the skins will be ruined. Therefore new wine must be put into fresh wine-skins."

SABBATH OBSERVANCE

23 One day Jesus was going through the wheatfields on the Sabbath day. Thereupon his Disciples began to pluck the ears of wheat and eat them as they went along. 24 Then the Pharisees said to him: "Look! Your Disciples are doing what is not lawful on the Sabbath day."

25 Jesus answered them: "You have read in the Scriptures what David and his men did when they were hungry. 26 He simply went into the house of God, when Abiathar was high priest, ate the oblation loaves, and gave them to his companions also. As you know, no one except the priest is allowed to eat them."

27 Then he added: "The Sabbath day was made for man, not man for the Sabbath day. 28 Therefore the Son of Man is also Lord of the Sabbath day."

CHAPTER 3

THE CRIPPLE

1 Thereupon Jesus went into the synagogue again, where he met a man with a withered hand. 2 His opponents were watching him to see whether he would heal him on the Sabbath day, and to bring a charge against him.

3 Jesus said to the man with the withered hand: "Stand up and come forward!" 4 Then he asked them: "Is it lawful on the Sabbath day to do good, or to do harm, to save life, or to kill?" They remained silent.

5 He looked around at them with anger, grieved at their cruelty, and said to the man: "Stretch out your hand!" He stretched it out. His hand was restored and sound like the other.

SON OF GOD

6 The Pharisees went out and immediately consulted with the Herodians against him as to how they should put him to death. 7 Therefore Jesus went away with his Disciples to the Sea. A large crowd followed him from Galilee, from Judea, 8 from Jerusalem, from Idumea, from the region beyond the Jordan, and from the neighborhood of Tyre and Sidon. For they had heard of the miracles he had performed.

9 So he told his Disciples always to have a ship ready for his use to avoid the crowds which pressed upon him. 10 For he cured so many patients that all those who were suffering from diseases crowded around him and tried to touch him. 11 Whenever the unclean spirits saw him, they knelt before him, and shouted: "You are the Son of God!" 12 But he warned them repeatedly not to disclose his identity.

THE TWELVE APOSTLES

13 Then he went up on the mountain, where he summoned those whom he wanted. They all went to meet him there. 14 He appointed twelve of them to accompany him and to preach. 15 He gave them power to heal diseases, and cast out demons. Their names are the following: 16 Simon, whom he surnamed Peter; 17 James, the son of Zebedee, and his brother John, whom he surnamed Boanerges, that is to say sons of thunder; 18 Andrew; Philip; Bartholomew; Matthew; Thomas; James, the son of Alphaeus; Thaddaeus; Simon the Cananean; 19 and Judas Iscariot, who betrayed him. Then they went into a house.

BLASPHEMY

20 But the crowds gathered again in such numbers that they were unable even to have their meals. 21 His relatives heard of his whereabouts, and came to seize him. For they thought that he was mad.

22 The Scribes, who had come down from Jerusalem, said: "He is possessed by Beelzebub, and he is casting out demons through the prince of demons."

23 So he called them, and preached to them in parables: "How can Satan cast out Satan? 24 A kingdom which is at

war with itself cannot endure. 25 Likewise, a household which is at war with itself cannot endure either. 26 If Satan has rebelled against Satan, then he is at war with himself, and cannot endure. Because he has reached his end. 27 No one can enter a strong man's house and carry off his property unless he first binds the strong man. Then he can plunder his house.

28 "Well, I tell you, all sins and blasphemies will be forgiven to the sons of men. 29 But the man who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will never be forgiven and is liable to eternal damnation." 30 He made that statement, because they were saying: "He is possessed by an unclean spirit."

HIS RELATIVES

31 Then his Mother and his brethren came, stood outside, sent him a message, and called him. 32 A crowd was sitting around him, when they told him: "Listen! Your Mother and your brethren are outside looking for you."

33 He answered them: "Who are my Mother and my brethren?" 34 Then he looked at those who sat around him, and said: "Here are my Mother and my brethren. 35 For everyone who does the will of God is my brother, my sister and my Mother."

CHAPTER 4

THE SOWER

1 Again Jesus began to preach to the people by the seashore. A large crowd gathered around him. So he boarded a ship on the Sea and sat down. All the people stayed on land close to the water. 2 He preached to them many lessons in parables, and told them in the course of his sermon:

3 "Listen! There was a sower who went out to sow. 4 As he was sowing, some seeds fell along the path. But the birds came and ate them up.

5 "Other seeds fell on rocky ground, where the soil was shallow. They sprouted immediately, because they had not sunk deep in the ground. 6 But when the sun rose, they were parched, and withered away, because they had taken no root.

7 "Other seeds fell among the thorns. But the thorns grew up and choked them.

8 "Other seeds fell on good ground. They yielded a growing and increasing crop. They produced, one thirtyfold, another sixtyfold, and another a hundredfold."

9 Then he added: "Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear."

10 When he was alone, his followers and the twelve Apostles came to him and asked him about the meaning of the parable. 11 He answered them: "It is granted to you to know the secrets of the Kingdom of God. But everything must be told in parables to the outsiders. 12 Thus, 'they will look and look, but they will never see. They will listen and listen, but they will never understand. So they will never turn back to me and let me forgive their sins.'" 13 Thereupon he added: "So you do not understand this parable. Then how are you going to understand all the other parables?

14 "Well, the sower sows the Gospel. 15 The seeds which fell along the path are those in whom the Gospel is sown. But as soon as they have heard it, Satan comes immediately and takes away the Gospel which has been sown in their hearts.

16 "The seeds which fell on rocky ground are those who hear the Gospel and receive it at once with joy. 17 Yet they are too shallow to plant it deep in their hearts. So they remain loyal only for a little while. But when trouble or persecution comes on account of the Gospel, they fall away immediately.

18 "The seeds which fell among the thorns are those who hear the Gospel, 19 but allow the cares of the world, the deceptions of riches, and other passions to creep in, to choke the Gospel, and to make it unproductive.

20 "The seeds which fell on good ground are those who hear the Gospel, receive it, and yield, one a thirtyfold, another a sixtyfold, and another a hundredfold crop."

THE LAMP

21 Then he added: "No one brings in a lamp and hides it under a bushel, or under a bed. On the contrary, everyone places a lamp on the lampstand. 22 For there is nothing hidden which will not be disclosed, and there is nothing concealed which will not be revealed. 23 Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear."

THE MEASURE

24 Then he said: "Listen carefully. The measure you give will be the measure you receive, and even more besides. 25 For everyone who has much will be given more. And everyone who has little will be deprived even of the little he has."

GROWTH OF THE SEED

26 Then he said: "The Kingdom of God is like a man who scatters seed upon the ground. 27 While he sleeps at night and gets up in the morning day after day, he finds that the seed is sprouting and growing. But he does not know how. 28 The earth produces of itself, first the blade, then the ear, and finally the full grain in the ear. 29 When the crop is ripe, he puts in the sickle at once, because the harvest has come."

THE MUSTARD SEED

30 Then he said: "To what can we liken the Kingdom of God? Or by what parable can we illustrate it?

31 "It is like a grain of mustard seed which is sown in the ground. It is the smallest of all seeds on earth. 32 Yet after it is sown, it grows up and becomes the greatest of all shrubs. It puts out such large branches that the birds of the sky can make nests under their shade."

33 So he preached the Gospel to them with many such parables as they were able to understand easily. 34 He preached to the people only in parables. But privately he explained everything to his Disciples.

THE STORM

35 In the evening of that same day he said to his Disciples: "Let us cross over to the other side." 36 So they dismissed the crowd and took him away in the ship in which he was sitting. Some other boats accompanied him.

37 Then a heavy storm of wind came up. The waves dashed into the ship and almost filled it with water. 38 He was asleep on a pillow in the stern. His Disciples woke him up, and said to him: "Master, wake up! We are sinking!"

39 Thereupon he awoke, rebuked the wind, and said to the Sea: "Peace! Be still!" The wind lulled, and there was a great calm. 40 Then he said to them: "Why are you afraid? You have no faith at all."

41 They were terrified, and said to one another: "Who is this man whom even the wind and the Sea obey?"

CHAPTER 5

THE DEMONIAC

1 Later on, they reached the other side of the Sea in the region of the Gadarenes. 2 When Jesus went out of the ship, he met a man possessed by an unclean spirit who came out of the cemetery.

3 This demoniac lived among the tombs. No one could bind him even with chains. 4 He had been bound with shackles and chains often before. But he always tore the chains apart, and broke the shackles to pieces. No one was strong enough to subdue him. 5 Continually, day and night, he roamed among the tombs and in the mountains, howling and bruising himself with stones.

6 When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran, knelt before him, 7 and shouted loudly: "What do you want of me, Jesus, Son of God the most High? I implore you in the name of God, do not torture me."

8 For Jesus had said to the demon: "Come out of this man, you unclean spirit." 9 Then he asked him: "What is your name?" He replied: "My name is Legion. For there are many of us." 10 They implored him urgently not to send them out of the country. 11 Now a large herd of swine was grazing there on the mountainside. 12 So all the demons entreated him: "Send us to the herd, and let us enter the swine."

13 Jesus gave them leave at once. Then the demons went out of the man and entered the swine. Thereupon the herd of about two thousand rushed down the cliff into the sea, and perished in the water.

14 The herdsmen fled and reported the news in the city and in the fields. So the people came out to see what had happened. 15 They came to Jesus and found the man who had been possessed by the legion of demons sitting quietly with his clothes on and in his right mind. They were terrified. 16 The eye-witnesses told them the story of the demoniac and the swine.

17 The inhabitants implored Jesus to depart from their region. 18 As he was boarding the ship, the former demoniac wanted to accompany him. 19 Jesus did not permit it, but said to him: "Go home to your people, and tell them what the Lord has done for you and how he had pity on you." 20 So he went away and told everybody in Decapolis how Jesus had cured him. All of them were amazed.

JAIRUS

21 Then Jesus crossed over by ship to the other side of
the Sea. A large crowd gathered together to meet him as he
reached the shore.

22 One of the leaders of the synagogue called Jairus was
looking for him. When he saw him, he fell at his feet 23 and
appealed to him, saying: "My little daughter is dying. Come,
lay your hand on her, cure her, and restore her to life." 24 So
Jesus went away with him. A large crowd followed him and
pressed around him.

WOMAN WITH A HEMORRHAGE

25 Now there was a woman who had been afflicted with a
hemorrhage for twelve years. 26 She had suffered a great deal
at the hands of many physicians, and had spent everything she
possessed. Yet she obtained no relief. On the contrary she grew
worse.

27 She had heard the reports about Jesus. So she came up
in the crowd behind him and touched his garment. 28 For she
thought: "If I can only touch his garment, I will recover."
29 Immediately, the hemorrhage ceased, and she felt in her body
that she was cured of that scourge.

30 Jesus instantly noticed that healing power had proceeded
from him, turned around in the crowd, and asked: "Who touched
my garment?" 31 His Disciples answered him: "You see the
crowd pressing around you, yet you ask who touched you?"

32 But he still looked around to see the person who had
touched him. 33 The woman knew what she had experienced.
So she came forward frightened and trembling, knelt before
him, and told him the whole truth. 34 Jesus said to her:
"Daughter, your faith has healed you. Go in peace, and be free
of your scourge."

THE DAUGHTER OF JAIRUS

35 While he was still speaking, messengers came from the
house of the leader of the synagogue, and said: "Your daughter
is dead. Do not bother the Master any further." 36 When Jesus
heard the news, he said immediately to the leader of the
synagogue: "Do not be afraid. Only have faith."

37 He allowed no one to accompany him except Peter, James,
and John, the brother of James. 38 When he reached the house

of the leader of the synagogue, he found everything in an uproar. For the people were weeping and wailing loudly. 39 So he went in, and told them: "Why do you make this uproar and wail? The child is not dead. She is asleep."

40 The bystanders laughed at him. He drove them all out. Then he took the child's father and mother as well as his companions, went into the room where the child was lying, 41 grasped her hand, and said: "Talitha, koumi!" That is to say: "Little girl, I tell you, rise up."

42 The little girl rose up immediately, and walked about. All of them were amazed. 43 But he strictly forbade them to report the miracle to anyone. Then he ordered them to give the child something to eat.

CHAPTER 6

JESUS AT NAZARETH

1 Then he left that place and returned to his home town. His Disciples followed him. 2 On the Sabbath day he preached in the synagogue. Many of those who heard him were astonished, and kept asking: "Where did he acquire this power and this wisdom? Where did he learn to perform such great miracles? 3 This man is the carpenter, the Son of Mary, the brother of James, Joseph, Judas, and Simon. His sisters are living with us." So they all turned against him.

4 Jesus said to them: "A prophet is nowhere treated more shamefully than in his own country, among his own relatives, and in his own home." 5 Therefore he could not perform any great miracles there. He only laid his hands on a few sick people and healed them. 6 He was amazed by their unbelief. So he went and preached in the neighboring villages.

INSTRUCTIONS TO THE APOSTLES

7 Then he called his twelve Apostles and began to send them out two by two. He gave them power to cast out unclean spirits. 8 He instructed them to take for their journey only a staff, but no bag, no bread, and no money in their belts. 9 He ordered them to wear sandals and only one coat.

10 Moreover, he said to them: "Whenever you go to a house, stay there until you leave the place. 11 Whenever you leave a city which refused to receive you, shake off the dust from the soles of your feet as a testimony to them. Well, I tell

you, on the Day of Judgment the sentence will be more lenient for Sodom and Gomorrah than for that city."

12 So they went away, and preached repentance to the people. 13 They expelled many demons and healed many sick people by anointing them with oil.

DEATH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

14 King Herod heard of Jesus, whose name was now well known, and said: "John the Baptist has risen from the dead. That is why he possesses such miraculous powers." 15 Others said: "He is Elijah." Still others said: "He is a Prophet, or like one of the old Prophets." 16 When Herod heard these comments, he said again: "He is John the Baptist whom I have beheaded. He has risen from the dead."

17 Now Herod himself had arrested John, bound him, and put him in prison on account of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife whom he had married. 18 For John said to Herod: "It is not lawful for you to marry your brother's wife."

19 Herodias felt bitterly against him, and wanted to kill him. But she could not. 20 For Herod feared John, as he knew that he was a righteous and holy man. So he protected him. He was very much disturbed when he heard him talk. Yet he liked to hear him.

21 An opportunity came when Herod, on his birthday, gave a banquet for his courtiers, his officers, and the chieftains of Galilee. 22 Then the daughter of Herodias came in and danced. She pleased Herod and his guests so much that the King said to the girl: "Ask for anything you want, and I will give it to you." 23 He repeated the pledge with an oath: "I will give you whatever you ask me for, up to half my kingdom."

24 The girl went out and asked her mother: "What shall I ask him for?" She answered: "The head of John the Baptist." 25 The girl hurried back immediately to the king, and made her request: "I want you to give me at once the head of John the Baptist on a platter."

26 The king was exceedingly sorry. But because of his oath and his guests he did not want to break his promise. 27 So the king immediately sent a soldier of his bodyguard with orders to bring John's head. Accordingly, the soldier went out and beheaded John in the prison. 28 Then he brought back his head on a platter, gave it to the girl, and the girl handed it to her mother.

29 When John's disciples heard of it, they came, removed his body, and laid it in a tomb.

RETURN OF THE APOSTLES

30 In the meantime, the Apostles returned to Jesus and reported to him all they had done and taught. 31 He said to them: "Let us go away by ourselves to a solitary spot and rest a little while." Because so many people were coming and going that they had no time even to eat their meals.

32 So they went away by themselves in their ship to a solitary spot. 33 But many saw them start, hurried to the place on foot from all the neighboring cities, arrived there ahead of them, and were waiting to meet him.

THE FIVE THOUSAND

34 When Jesus went out of the ship, he found a large crowd gathered. He had compassion on them, because they were like sheep without a shepherd, and preached to them at length.

35 When it was already late, his Disciples came to him, and said: "This place is deserted, and it is late already. 36 Dismiss the people, and let them go to the neighboring farms and villages, where they can buy food for themselves. For they have nothing to eat."

37 Jesus answered them: "Give them something to eat yourselves." They asked him: "Do you want us to go and buy two hundred shillings worth of bread and give it to them to eat?" 38 He asked them: "How many loaves have you? Go, and see." They found out, and told him: "We have five loaves and two fishes."

39 Thereupon he ordered the people to sit down in parties on the green grass. 40 So they sat down in groups, by hundreds and by fifties. 41 He took the five loaves, looked up to heaven, blessed them, broke them, and gave them to the Disciples to pass to the people. Likewise, he distributed the two fishes among them.

42 They all ate and were satisfied. 43 Later on, they gathered the pieces which were left over, and filled twelve baskets of bread and fish. 44 Yet those who had eaten the loaves were five thousand men.

WALKING ON THE SEA

45 Then Jesus compelled the Apostles to board the ship immediately and cross over to the other side toward Bethsaida, while he was dismissing the crowd. 46 When he had sent the people away, he went up the mountain to pray.

47 In the evening the ship was far out in the midst of the Sea, and he was on the land alone. 48 He saw them struggling at the oars, as the wind was against them. So toward morning, he went out to them, walking on the Sea. He meant to pass them by.

49 But they saw him walking on the Sea. They thought it was a ghost, and shrieked aloud. 50 For they all saw him and were terrified. But he spoke to them immediately, and said to them: "Courage! It is I. Do not be afraid."

51 Thereupon he stepped up into the ship beside them, and the wind lulled. They were utterly amazed. 52 They had not grasped the lesson of the loaves, because their minds were still blinded.

CURES

53 Then they crossed over to the other side, landed at Gennesaret, and moored their ship. 54 As they were going out of the ship, the people recognized Jesus immediately. 55 They hurried all over that neighborhood, and began to bring their sick on their beds wherever they heard he was. 56 So wherever he went, in villages, cities, and farms, they laid the sick in the market-places, and implored him to let them touch the fringe of his garment. For all those who touched him were healed.

CHAPTER 7

TRADITIONS AND COMMANDMENTS

1 Then some Pharisees and Scribes, who had come from Jerusalem, gathered around him. 2 They had noticed that some of his Disciples were eating their food with unpurified, that is to say, unwashed hands, and criticized them.

3 For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they purify their hands up to the wrist in accordance with the tradition of their forefathers. 4 So when they come from the market-place, they do not eat unless they purify themselves. They also observe many other traditions about purifying cups, pots, and vessels of bronze.

5 Therefore the Pharisees and the Scribes asked him:
"How is it that your Disciples do not observe the traditions of
our forefathers, and eat their food without purifying their
hands?"

6 Jesus answered them: "Isaiah prophesied well about you
hypocrites in the Scriptures when he said: 'These people honor
me with their lips. But their hearts are far away from me. 7 Their
worship is meaningless. For the divine commandments they teach
are human precepts.'

8 "Thus you abandon the commandments of God, and cling
to the traditions of men about purifying pots and cups, and other
similar traditions." 9 Then he added: "How skillfully you violate
the commandments of God in order to observe your traditions.

10 "For instance, Moses said: 'Honor your father and your
mother,' and 'Whoever curses his father and mother must be
put to death.' 11 But you say: 'Whoever tells his father or mother
that he gives to God as Korban, that is to say, as a gift, whatever
might have been of use to them, 12 does not need to provide for
his parents.' 13 Thus you nullify the commandments of God
through the traditions you have handed down. You have many
other similar practices."

DEFILEMENT

14 Then he gathered the people around him, and said to
them: "Listen to me, all of you, and understand: 15 What
defiles a man is not what he eats, but what he speaks. 16 Who-
ever has ears to hear, let him hear."

17 When he had left the crowd and gone home, the Disciples
asked him what he meant by this parable. 18 He answered
them: "Are you also dull-minded? As you see, nothing that
goes into a man's mouth from the outside can defile him. 19
Because it does not go into his mind, but into his stomach, and
then it is disposed of."

20 Then he added: "What defiles a man is what goes out
of a man's mind from within. 21 For from within, out of the
minds of men, come evil thoughts, adultery, fornication, murder,
22 theft, greed, wickedness, deceit, profligacy, envy, blasphemy,
pride, and foolishness. 23 All these evils come from inside, and
they defile a man."

THE SYROPHENICIAN WOMAN

24 Then he left that place and went away to the region of

Tyre and Sidon. He entered a certain house, and wanted no one to know of it. But he could not keep it a secret.

25 A woman whose little daughter was possessed by an unclean spirit heard about him immediately, came up to him, and knelt before him. 26 She was a Gentile of Syrophenician descent. She implored him to cast the demon out of her daughter.

27 Jesus said to her: "Allow the children first to eat all they want. For it is not right to take their food and throw it to the dogs."

28 She answered him: "Yes, my Lord. For even the dogs are allowed to eat the children's crumbs under the table."

29 Jesus said to her: "You answered right. Go home. The demon has left your daughter." 30 Indeed, when the woman went home, she found her daughter resting on the bed and the demon gone.

THE DEAF-MUTE

31 Again Jesus departed from the region of Tyre and Sidon, and went back to the Sea of Galilee through the region of Decapolis. 32 They brought him a man who was deaf and dumb, and implored him to lay his hand on him.

33 Jesus took him aside from the crowd privately, put his fingers into his ears, spat, and touched his tongue. 34 Then he looked up to heaven, sighed, and said to him: "Ephphatha!" which means: "Open." 35 Indeed his ears were opened immediately, his tongue was released, and he talked plainly.

36 He warned the people not to tell anybody about it. But the more he warned them, the more they proclaimed it. 37 They were all amazed beyond measure, and said: "He has performed great miracles. He made the deaf hear and the dumb speak."

CHAPTER 8

THE FOUR THOUSAND

1 In those days a large crowd had gathered again, and they had nothing to eat. Jesus called his Disciples and said to them: 2 "I pity these people. For they have been staying with me three days now, and they have nothing to eat. 3 If I send them home hungry, they will collapse on the way, because some of them have come from a long distance."

4 His Disciples answered him: "Where can we find bread enough to satisfy them here in this deserted place?" 5 He asked

them: "How many loaves have you?" They answered him: "Seven."

6 Then he ordered the people to sit on the ground. He took the seven loaves, offered thanks, broke them, and gave them to his Disciples to pass to the people. They distributed them.

7 They had also a few small fishes. He blessed them and told his Disciples to serve them also to the people. 8 They all ate and were satisfied. Later on, they filled seven baskets with the pieces which were left over. 9 Those who ate were about four thousand. Then Jesus dismissed the people, 10 boarded a ship immediately, and went to the region of Dalmanutha.

THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES

11 Thereupon the Pharisees came, and began to argue with him. They asked him for a miracle from heaven in order to test him. 12 Jesus sighed deeply and said: "Why do the men of this generation want a miracle? Well, I tell you, I am not going to give them a miracle." 13 So he left them, boarded the ship again, and crossed over to the opposite shore.

14 His Disciples had forgotten to bring bread. They had only one loaf with them in the ship. 15 Then Jesus warned them and said: "Look out! Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod." 16 The Disciples argued with one another, and said: "He made that remark because we have no bread."

17 Jesus guessed their thoughts, and said: "You argue with one another, because you have no bread. You do not perceive and do not understand yet. Your minds are still blinded. 18 You have eyes, but you do not see. You have ears, but you do not hear. And you have no memory at all. Now, tell me: 19 When I broke the five loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces did you remove?" They answered him: "Twelve."

20 Jesus asked them again: "Now, when I broke the seven loaves for the four thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces did you remove?" They answered him: "Seven." 21 Then he asked them: "How is it that you still do not understand?"

THE BLIND MAN

22 When they arrived at Bethsaida, they brought him a blind man, and implored him to touch him.

23 Jesus took him by the hand, and led him out of the village. Then he spat on his eyes, laid his hands upon him, and asked him: "Do you see anything?"

24 The blind man looked up and answered: "I see men walking, but they look like trees."

25 Jesus laid his hands upon his eyes again, and made him look up. Thereupon he was restored, and saw every man clearly. 26 Then he sent him away to his home and said: "Do not go back to the village, and do not tell anybody about it."

PETER'S TESTIMONY

27 Then Jesus and his Disciples went on to the villages of Caesarea Philippi. On the way he asked them: "Who do the people say that I am?" 28 They answered him: "John the Baptist. Others say, Elijah. Others say, one of the Prophets."

29 Jesus asked them: "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered him: "You are the Messiah." 30 Thereupon he warned them strictly not to tell anyone about it.

THE FIRST PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

31 Then Jesus predicted to them for the first time that the Messiah must endure many sufferings; that he must be rejected by the elders, the chief priests, and the scribes; that he must be killed; and that he must rise again after three days.

32 He made that statement very clearly. Peter took him aside, and began to reproach him. 33 But Jesus turned, looked at this Disciples, and reprimanded Peter, saying: "Go away from me, Satan! For you are thinking, not according to God, but according to man."

FOLLOWING JESUS

34 Then Jesus called the people along with his Disciples, and said to them: "Whoever wants to come after me let him deny himself, let him take up his cross, and let him follow me.

35 "For everyone who wants to save his life will lose it. And everyone who loses his life for me and for my Gospel will save it.

36 "It does not profit a man at all, if he gains the entire world, but loses his own life. 37 There is no ransom a man can give to recover the life he has lost. 38 Moreover, if anyone is ashamed of me and of my Gospel in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Messiah will also be ashamed of him, when he comes with his holy angels in the glory of his Father."

CHAPTER 9

THE TRANSFIGURATION

1 Then Jesus added: "Well, I tell you, some of you who are standing here will certainly live to see the Kingdom of God when it comes with all its majesty."

2 Six days later, Jesus took Peter, James, and John, led them up on a high mountain apart by themselves, and was transfigured before them. 3 His garments became glistening and exceedingly white like snow, as no fuller on earth could bleach them. 4 Elijah and Moses appeared to them conversing with Jesus.

5 Peter said to Jesus: "Rabbi, we would like to stay here. Let us erect three tents, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." 6 He did not know what he was talking about. For they were terribly frightened.

7 Thereupon a cloud overshadowed them, and a voice came out of the cloud, saying: "This is my beloved Son. Listen to him." 8 Suddenly, when they looked around, they saw no one else with them except Jesus.

ELIJAH

9 As they were going down the mountain, he commanded them to tell no one what they had seen until after the resurrection of the Messiah. 10 The Disciples kept to themselves what Jesus had told them. But they were wondering what he meant by his resurrection.

11 Then they asked him: "Why do the Scribes maintain that Elijah must come first before the Messiah?" 12 Jesus answered them: "True, Elijah must come first and inaugurate the Messianic era. But it is also written in the Scriptures that the Messiah must endure many sufferings and be treated shamefully. 13 However, I assure you that Elijah has already come, and was mistreated by them, as it is written in the Scriptures."

THE DEMONIAC

14 Once, when Jesus came to his Disciples, he noticed that a large crowd had gathered around them while they were arguing with some scribes. 15 When the people saw him, they were amazed. So they ran up and greeted him.

16 Jesus asked the scribes: "What are you arguing with one another about?" 17 Someone from the crowd answered him:

"Master, I have brought to you my son, who is possessed by a dumb spirit. 18 Whenever he seizes him, the boy is convulsed. Then he foams, he gnashes his teeth, and he faints. I asked your Disciples to expel the demon, but they could not do it."

19 Jesus replied: "O faithless generation! How long am I going to stay with you? How long am I going to put up with you? Bring him to me."

20 They brought the boy to him. When the spirit saw Jesus, he convulsed the boy who fell on the ground and rolled about foaming. 21 Jesus asked his father: "How long has he had this disease?" His father answered: "Since childhood. 22 Many times he has thrown him into the fire and into the water to kill him. But if you can do anything, have mercy on us and help us."

23 Jesus said to him: "If you believe, everything is possible to the believer." 24 The boy's father cried aloud and said with tears: "Lord, I believe, help my unbelief!"

25 When Jesus noticed that the people came running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit, saying: "You dumb and deaf spirit, I command you to come out of him and never enter him again." 26 The spirit shrieked, convulsed the boy violently, and went out of him. The boy became like a corpse. Many thought that he was dead. 27 But Jesus took him by the hand and raised him. Then the boy stood up.

28 When Jesus had gone home, his Disciples asked him privately: "Why could we not expel him?" 29 He answered: "This kind can be expelled only by prayer and fasting."

THE SECOND PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

30 Then they went away from there and travelled through Galilee. But he did not want anyone to know it. 31 For he predicted his Passion to his Disciples, and said: "The Messiah will be betrayed into the hands of men who will kill him. But he will rise again on the third day." 32 The Disciples did not understand what he meant, and they were afraid to ask him.

HUMILITY

33 Then Jesus came to Capernaum. When he reached his house, he asked his Disciples: "What were you discussing on the way?" 34 But they made no answer. For on the way they had been discussing which one of them was the greatest. 35 So he sat down, called the twelve Apostles and said to them:

"Whoever wants to be first, must be last of all and servant of all."

36 Then he took a child, placed him in the midst of them, put his arms around him, and said to them: 37 "Whoever receives one of these children in my name receives me. And whoever receives me, receives not me, but the Father who sent me."

38 John said to him: "Master, we saw a man casting out demons in your name. We forbade him, because he is not one of our followers."

39 But Jesus said to him: "Do not forbid him, because no one who performs a miracle in my name will be able to speak evil of me soon after. 40 For whoever is not against us, is for us. 41 Moreover, whoever gives you a cup of water to drink in the name of the Messiah, well, I tell you that he will certainly receive his reward."

TEMPTATIONS

42 "Whoever leads astray one of these little ones might better have a millstone hung around his neck and be thrown into the sea.

43 "If your hand leads you astray, cut it off. It is better for you to inherit everlasting life maimed than to be thrown with both hands into Hades, 44 where the devouring worm never dies and the fire is never extinguished.

45 "If your foot leads you astray, cut it off. It is better for you to inherit everlasting life lame than to be thrown with both feet into Hades, 46 where the devouring worm never dies and the fire is never extinguished.

47 "If your eye leads you astray, pluck it out. It is better for you to enter the Kingdom of God with one eye than to go with both your eyes into Hades, 48 where the devouring worm never dies and the fire is never distinguished.

49 "For every man must be purged with divine fire, as every sacrifice must be sprinkled with sacred salt. 50 Salt is a blessing. But if salt has been spoiled, it is absolutely useless. Have the sacred salt of love in your hearts, and live in peace with one another."

CHAPTER 10

DIVORCE

1 Then he left that place and went to the region of Judea
beyond the Jordan. The people gathered around him again. So,
as his custom was, he preached to them. 2 Thereupon the
Pharisees came to Jesus in order to test him and asked him
whether it is lawful for a man to divorce his wife. 3 He answered
them: "What has Moses commanded you to do?" 4 They replied:
"Moses allows a man to give his wife a writ of separation and
to divorce her."

5 Jesus said to them: "Moses gave you this commandment
on account of your perversity. 6 But from the beginning of
creation, 'God made them male and female. 7 For this reason
a man will leave his father and mother, he will cling to his wife,
8 and the two will become one flesh.' So they are no longer two
but one. 9 Therefore let no man separate those whom God has
joined together."

10 When they returned home, his Disciples asked him again
about this question. 11 Jesus said to them: "Whoever divorces
his wife and marries another commits adultery. 12 And if a
woman divorces her husband and marries another, she commits
adultery also."

THE BLESSING OF CHILDREN

13 Then some women brought their children to him, and
asked him to bless them. His Disciples reproved those who had
brought them.

14 When Jesus noticed it, he was indignant, and said to
them: "Let the children come to me, and do not try to stop
them. For the Kingdom of God belongs to those who are similar
to them. 15 Well, I tell you, whoever does not accept the Kingdom
of God like a child shall not enter it at all." 16 Then he took
the children in his arms, laid his hands on them, and blessed
them.

THE RICH YOUNG MAN

17 As Jesus was going on his journey, a man ran up
to him, knelt before him, and asked him: "Good Master, what
must I do to inherit eternal life?"

18 Jesus said to him: "Why do you call me good? No one
is good except God alone. 19 You know the commandments:

'Do not commit adultery. Do not kill. Do not steal. Do not bear false witness. Do not defraud. Honor your father and mother.' "

20 He replied: "Master, I have observed all these commandments since my youth." 21 Jesus looked at him affectionately and said to him: "You lack one thing. Go, sell all your possessions, distribute the proceeds to the poor, and you will possess a treasure in heaven. Then take up your cross and follow me." 22 He became crestfallen at this advice and went away sorrowful. For he had great possessions.

23 Jesus looked around and said to his Disciples: "How hard it is for those who possess wealth to enter the Kingdom of God!" 24 His Disciples were amazed at this statement. Then Jesus said to them: "My children, how hard it is for those who trust in wealth to enter the Kingdom of God. 25 It is easier for a camel to pass through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God."

26 His Disciples were staggered and asked themselves: "Then who can be saved?" 27 Jesus looked at them and said: "It is impossible for men, but not for God. For anything is possible for God."

THE REWARD

28 Then Peter said to him: "Look, we have left everything we had, and we have followed you." 29 Jesus answered him: "Well, I tell you, whoever has forsaken home, or land, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, for me and for the Gospel, 30 will receive a hundred times as much now in this life in homes, land, brothers, sisters, fathers, mothers, and children after the persecutions, and in the world to come eternal life. 31 Then many who are first will be last, and the last will be first."

THIRD PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

32 So they went on their way up to Jerusalem. He walked ahead of them, while his Disciples followed him in amazement and dismay. Then Jesus took his twelve Disciples aside, and predicted to them what would befall him: 33 "Now we are going up to Jerusalem. There the Messiah will be betrayed into the hands of the chief priests and the scribes. They will sentence him to death. They will hand him over to the Gentiles. 34 They will deride him. They will flog him. And they will kill him. But he will rise again on the third day."

CHRISTIAN LEADERSHIP

35 Then James and John, the sons of Zebedee, came to him,
36 and said: "Master, we want you to do for us whatever we
ask." Jesus asked them: "What do you want me to do for you?"
37 They replied: "Grant us that we may sit one at your right
and one at your left in the days of your glory."

38 Jesus said to them: "You do not know what you ask.
Can you drink the cup that I drink and be baptized with the
baptism with which I am baptized?"

39 They answered him: "We can." Jesus said to them:
"Indeed you will drink the cup that I drink, and you will be
baptized with the baptism with which I am baptized. 40 But
I cannot grant you the privilege of sitting at my right and at
my left. For these places belong to those for whom they have
been foreordained."

41 When the other ten Disciples heard this request, they
began to be very indignant at James and John. 42 Thereupon
Jesus called them and said to them: "You know that those who
are supposed to rule over the Gentiles enslave them, and their
great men oppress them. 43 But it must not be so with you.
On the contrary, whoever wants to be great among you must
be your servant. 44 And whoever wants to be your leader must
be the slave of all. 45 For the Messiah has not come to be
served, but to serve, and give his life as a ransom for the
people."

THE BLIND BARTIMAEUS

46 Then they came to Jericho. As Jesus was leaving Jericho
with his Disciples and a large crowd, Bartimaeus, the son of
Timaeus, a blind man, was sitting by the roadside begging.
47 When he learned that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began
to cry aloud: "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!"

48 Many reproved him and told him to be still, but he
cried out all the more. 49 Then Jesus stopped and said: "Call
him." They called the blind man, saying. "Courage! Get up,
he is calling you."

50 He threw off his mantle, got up, and went to Jesus.
51 He asked him: "What do you want me to do for you?" The
blind man answered: "Master, let me receive my sight." 52
Jesus said to him: "Go your way. Your faith has healed you."
He regained his eyesight immediately and followed Jesus on
the way.

CHAPTER 11

MESSIANIC ENTRY

1 When Jesus was approaching Jerusalem and had come to Bethphage and Bethany, at the Mount of Olives, he sent out two of his Disciples, 2 and said to them: "Go to the village opposite you, and just as you enter it, you will find a colt tied, on which no one has ever sat. Untie it and bring it here. 3 If anyone asks you why you are doing it, answer: 'The Lord needs it and will send it back here at once.' "

4 So they went away and found a colt tied outside a door in the open street. They untied it. 5 But some of the bystanders asked them: "What are you doing? Why do you untie that colt?"

6 They answered as Jesus had told them to do, and they let them go. 7 So they brought the colt to Jesus, threw their garments on it, and Jesus mounted it.

8 Many spread their garments on the road, while others cut branches from the trees and scattered them in his path. 9 Those in front and those behind shouted: "Hosanna, blessed is the Messiah who comes in the Lord's name. 10 Blessed is the kingdom of our father David which is coming. Hosanna in the highest!"

11 So he entered Jerusalem, went into the temple, and surveyed all the shrines. As it was already late, he returned to Bethany with his twelve Disciples.

THE FIG TREE

12 On the next day, after they had left Bethany, he felt hungry. 13 Thereupon he saw in the distance a fig tree covered with leaves, and he went to see if he could find any fruit on it. When he reached it, he found nothing but leaves. For it was not the season for figs. 14 Then he said: "Let no one ever eat fruit from you hereafter." His Disciples heard this curse clearly.

CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

15 When they reached Jerusalem, he went into the temple, and began to drive out those who were buying and selling in the temple. He overturned the tables of the money-changers and the stands of the pigeon-dealers. 16 Moreover, he would not allow anyone to carry any article through the temple.

17 Then he admonished them, saying: "It is written in the Scriptures: 'My house will be called a house of prayer for all the nations.' But you have made it a den of bandits."

18 When the high priests, the Pharisees, and the scribes heard it, they sought a way to put him to death. But they were afraid of him, because all the people admired his sermons. 19 In the evening Jesus went out of the city.

FAITH

20 In the morning, as the Disciples passed by, they saw that the fig tree had withered to its roots. 21 Peter remembered and said: "Master, look! The fig tree which you cursed is withered."

22 Jesus answered: "Have faith in God. 23 Well, I tell you, all a man needs is to believe without any doubt in his mind that what he says will take place. Then he can say to this mountain: 'Rise up, and jump into the sea,' and he will have what he wants.

24 "Therefore I tell you, no matter what you ask in prayer, believe that you will receive it, and you will have it."

FORGIVENESS

25 "Now when you stand up to pray, forgive any grievance you have against anyone. Then your heavenly Father will also forgive your trespasses. 26 But if you do not forgive others, your heavenly Father will not forgive you either."

AUTHORITY

27 Then Jesus went back to Jerusalem. As he was walking in the temple, the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders came to him, and asked him: 28 "What authority have you for acting as you do? And who gave you that authority?"

29 Jesus answered them: "I am going to ask you one question. If you answer me, then I will tell you what authority I have for acting as I do. 30 Was the baptism of John from heaven or from men? Answer me."

31 They argued among themselves: "If we say, 'From heaven,' he will ask us: 'Why did you not believe him?' 32 Yet we cannot say: 'From men.'" For they were afraid of the people who considered John as a Prophet. 33 So they answered: "We do not know." Jesus said: "Then I am not going to tell you what authority I have for acting as I do either."

CHAPTER 12

THE VINEYARD

1 Then he began to preach to them in parables. He said:
"A man planted a vineyard, fenced it in, dug a wine-press, built
a tower, leased it to tenants, and went abroad.

2 "At the proper season he sent a servant to get from
the tenants his share of the fruit of the vineyard. 3 They
seized him, beat him, and sent him back empty-handed.

4 "Again he sent them another servant. They stoned him,
wounded him in the head, and treated him shamefully.

5 "And again he sent another servant. They killed him.
So they did with many others whom they abused or murdered.

6 "He still had one well-beloved son. So he sent him last
of all, thinking: 'They will respect my son.' 7 When the tenants
saw him coming, they said to one another: 'He is the heir.
Let us kill him and inherit his property.' 8 So they seized him,
killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard."

9 Then Jesus added: "Now what will the owner of the
vineyard do? He will come back, he will put the tenants to
death, and he will lease the vineyard to others. 10 You have
read the passage of the Scripture: 'The stone which the builders
rejected has become the cornerstone.' 11 It was an act of the
Lord and it is marvellous in our eyes."

12 Thereupon the chief priests sought to arrest him, but
they were afraid of the people. For they knew that the parable
was meant for them. So they left him and went away.

TRIBUTE TO CAESAR

13 Then the chief priests sent some Pharisees and Herodians
to Jesus to entrap him in argument. 14 They came and said
to him: "Master, we know that you are sincere and fearless,
that you do not court human favor, and that you preach the
way of God in truth. Therefore tell us. Is it lawful to pay taxes
to Caesar or not? 15 Should we pay them, or should we not
pay them?"

But Jesus knew their treachery and said to them: "Why
do you try to trap me? Bring me a coin and let me look at it."
16 They brought him one. Then he asked them: "Whose effigy
and inscription is this?" They answered him: "Caesar's."

17 So he said to them: "Pay to Caesar what belongs to
Caesar, and to God what belongs to God." They were amazed
at his answer.

THE SADDUCEES

18 Then some Sadducees, who do not believe in the resurrection, came to Jesus and asked him this question:

19 "Master, Moses commanded us that if a man dies, leaving a wife but no child, his brother must marry his widow and raise a family for him.

20 "Now there were seven brothers among us. The first one of them married and died, leaving no children. 21 Likewise, the second one married her and died, leaving no children. So did the third one, and all the others. 22 But none of the seven left any children. Last of all, the woman died also. 23 In the resurrection, whose wife will she be? For all seven of them married her."

24 Jesus answered them: "You are wrong, because you do not know the Scriptures and the attributes of God. 25 When men rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage. For they are like angels in heaven.

26 "As for the resurrection of the dead, you have read in the Book of Moses, in the passage about the bush, how God said to him: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' 27 Therefore he is not the God of the dead, but of the living. So you are entirely wrong."

THE GREAT COMMANDMENTS

28 Then one of the scribes came to Jesus and heard him arguing with the Sadducees. He saw that Jesus answered them well. So he asked him: "Which is the first of the commandments?"

29 Jesus answered him: "The first one is: 'Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord, 30 and you must love the Lord your God with your whole heart, your whole soul, your whole mind, and your whole strength.' This is the first commandment. 31 The second one is similar to the first one: 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.' No other commandment is greater than these."

32 The scribe said to him: "Well, Master, you are right, for there is one God, and there is none other but he. 33 To love him with our whole heart, our whole soul, our whole mind, and our whole strength, and to love our neighbor as ourself is far more than all burnt offerings and sacrifices."

34 Jesus saw that he answered intelligently, and said to

him: "You are not far from the Kingdom of God." Then no one ventured to ask him any more questions.

SON OF DAVID

35 While he was preaching in the temple, Jesus said: "How can the scribes say that the Messiah is the Son of David? 36 David himself, inspired by the Holy Spirit, said: 'The Lord said to my Master: Sit at my right hand until I put your enemies under your feet.' 37 If David himself calls him Master, how can he be his son?" Now the mass of the common people listened to his sermons with great pleasure.

SCRIBES AND PHARISEES

38 Then in the course of his sermon, Jesus said: "Beware of the scribes. They love to walk about in long robes, to be greeted with respect in the market-places, 39 to have the front seats in the synagogue, and the places of honor at the banquets. 40 But they devour the houses of widows and make endless prayers under any pretext. Therefore they will receive a heavier sentence."

THE WIDOW'S MITE

41 Then Jesus sat down opposite the treasury and watched the people who dropped money into it. Many wealthy men were contributing large sums.

42 After them a poor widow came and put in two copper coins which make a penny. 43 Jesus called his Disciples and said to them: "Well, I tell you, this poor widow has given more than all those who made donations to the treasury. 44 All the others contributed out of their abundance. But she, out of her poverty, has donated everything she possessed, and all she had to live on."

CHAPTER 13

DESTRUCTION OF THE TEMPLE

1 As Jesus was going out of the temple, one of his Disciples said to him: "Look, Master, what wonderful stones and buildings!" 2 Jesus answered: "Do you see these great buildings? Not a stone will be left here on another stone. It will all be demolished."

THE END OF THE WORLD

3 Then, as he was sitting on the Mount of Olives opposite
the temple, Peter, James, John, and Andrew asked him privately:
4 "Tell us when it will happen, and what will be the sign that
it will be accomplished."

5 Jesus answered them: "Look out, let no one mislead you
about it. 6 For many will come in my name, saying, 'I am the
Messiah,' and many will be misled by them. 7 So when you
hear of wars and rumors of wars, you must not be alarmed.
All that has to take place, but that will not be the end. 8 For
nation will rise against nation, kingdom against kingdom. There
will be earthquakes, famines, and upheavals in various places.
But this will be only the beginning of the ordeal."

PERSECUTIONS

9 "Then be on your guard. For you will be delivered to
councils. You will be flogged in synagogues. You will be arraigned
before governors and kings for my sake to give testimony
before them. 10 For the Gospel must first be preached to all
nations.

11 "When they arrest you and bring you to trial, do not
premeditate, and do not worry beforehand about what you will
say. But say whatever is given you in that hour. For it is not
you that will speak, but the Holy Spirit. 12 Brother will deliver
up brother to death, the father his child, and the children will
rise up against their parents and kill them. 13 You will be
hated by all for my name's sake. But whoever endures to the
end will be saved."

THE SIGNS

14 "Finally, you will see the dreadful sacrilege, of which
the Prophet Daniel spoke, standing where it ought not. Let the
reader understand. Then those who live in Judea must fly to
the mountains. 15 The man who happens to be on the housetop
must not go down, nor enter his house to take anything out of
it. 16 The man who happens to be in the field must not go
back to get his coat.

17 "Woe to pregnant and nursing women in those days.
18 Pray that you may not have to flee in the winter. 19 For in
those days there will be such great affliction as has never been
since God has created the world, and never will be again.

20 Now if the Lord had not shortened those days, no human being would escape. But he has shortened them for the sake of the elect whom he chose."

FALSE PROPHETS

21 "Then if anyone says to you: 'Look, here is the Messiah!' or 'There he is!' do not believe it. 22 For false Messiahs and false prophets will appear. They will perform great miracles and wonders to lead astray even the elect. 23 Now look out! I have foretold you everything."

THE MESSIAH

24 "After the affliction of those days the sun will be darkened. The moon will not shed its light. 25 The stars will fall from heaven. And the powers of heaven will be shaken. 26 Then the Messiah will appear and come down from the clouds with great power and glory. 27 Thereupon he will send out his angels to gather his elect from the four winds, from the ends of the earth to the ends of heaven."

THE FIG TREE

28 "Now learn a lesson from the fig tree. As soon as its branches grow soft and put forth leaves, you know that summer is near. 29 So also, when you see all these events, you will know that he is approaching at your very door. 30 Well, I tell you, this generation will live to see all these events take place. 31 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away."

WATCHFULNESS

32 "But about that day or hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. 33 Look out and watch. For you do not know when the time will come.

34 "The Messiah is like a man going on a journey, who leaves home, puts his servants in charge, and commands the doorkeeper to watch. 35 Therefore watch. For you do not know when the Master of the house will come, in the evening, or at midnight, or toward daybreak, or in the morning. 36 Otherwise, he will come suddenly and find you asleep. 37 Now what I say to you, I say to all: Watch."

CHAPTER 14

THE COUNCIL

1 It was then two days before the Passover and the festival of the Unleavened Bread. The chief priests and the scribes were plotting how to arrest him by cunning. 2 But they said: "It must not be done during the festival. Otherwise, there may be an uproar among the people."

THE ANOINTMENT

3 At that time, Jesus was in Bethany at the house of Simon the leper. As he was sitting at the table, a woman came in with an alabaster flask of pure and very expensive nard perfume. She broke the flask and poured the perfume over his head.

4 Some of the guests said indignantly to themselves: "Why was the perfume thus wasted? 5 It might have been sold for more than three hundred shillings and given to the poor." Consequently, they reproached her.

6 But Jesus said to them: "Leave her alone. Why do you annoy her? She has performed a noble service for me. 7 For you have the poor with you always. Whenever you wish, you can help them. But you will not always have me. 8 She has done what she could. She has anointed me beforehand for my burial. 9 Well, I tell you, wherever the Gospel is preached, all over the world, her act also will be mentioned in her commemoration."

THE BETRAYAL

10 Then Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve Apostles, went to the high priests in order to betray Jesus to them. 11 They were delighted to hear it and promised to pay him for it. So he sought an opportunity to betray him.

PREPARATIONS

12 On the first day of the Unleavened Bread, when it was customary to sacrifice the lamb, his Disciples asked him: "Where do you want us to go and prepare for you the Passover Supper?"

13 So he sent out two of his Disciples and said to them: "Go into the city and you will meet a man carrying a pitcher of water. Follow him, 14 and wherever he enters, tell the householder that the Master says: 'Where is the guest room where

I can eat my Passover Supper with my Disciples?' 15 He will show you a large upper room, furnished and ready. Make your preparations for us there." 16 His Disciples started, went into the city, and found everything as he had told them. So they prepared the Passover Supper.

THE BETRAYER

17 When it was evening, he came with his twelve Disciples. 18 As they were at the table eating, Jesus said: "Well, I tell you, one of you who is eating with me will betray me."

19 They were sorrowful and began to ask him one after the other: "Is it I?" And then another: "Is it I?" 20 He answered them: "It is one of the twelve Disciples who is dipping his bread in the same dish with me. 21 The Messiah is going away as it is written of him in the Scriptures. But woe to the man who betrays him! It would have been better for that man if he had never been born."

THE HOLY EUCHARIST

22 As they were eating, Jesus took the bread, blessed it, broke it, gave it to them, and said: "Take, eat, this is my body."

23 Then he took the cup, offered thanks, and gave it to them. They all drank of it. 24 And he said to them: "This is my blood of the New Testament, which is poured out for the people. 25 Well, I tell you, I will never drink the product of the vine again until the day when I will drink the new wine in the Kingdom of God."

PREDICTION OF DENIALS

26 Thereupon they sang a hymn of praise and went out to the Mount of Olives. 27 Then Jesus said to them: "You will all turn away from me tonight. For it is written in the Scriptures: 'I will strike the shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered.' 28 But after my resurrection, I will go before you and meet you in Galilee."

29 Peter said: "I will not turn away from you, even if all the others do." 30 Jesus answered: "Well, I tell you, this very night before the cock crows twice, you will deny me three times." 31 But Peter persisted vehemently: "Even if I have to die with you, I will never deny you." They all repeated the same statement.

THE AGONY

32 Thereupon they went to a place called Gethsemane. Then he said to his Disciples: "Sit down here while I pray." 33 He took Peter, James, and John along with him. Then he grew distressed and dismayed. 34 He said to them: "My soul is sorrowful to death. Stay here and watch."

35 Then he went a little further, fell on the ground, prayed that, if it were possible, that hour might pass away from him, 36 and said: "Abba, Father, anything is possible for you. Take this cup away from me. Nevertheless, not my will, but your will be done."

37 When he returned, he found them sleeping, and said to Peter: "Simon, are you asleep? Could you not watch for one hour? 38 Watch and pray. Then you will not fall into temptation. The spirit indeed is ready, but the flesh is weak."

39 Again he went away and repeated the same prayer. 40 When he returned he found them asleep again. They could not keep their eyes open, and they did not know what to answer him.

41 When he returned for the third time, he said: "Are you still asleep and resting? Wake up! The hour has come. The Messiah is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 42 Rise up. Let us go. Look! The betrayer is drawing near."

THE ARREST

43 While Jesus was still speaking, Judas, one of the Twelve, came accompanied by a detachment of the guard armed with swords and clubs, sent by the high priests, the scribes, and the elders. 44 His betrayer had given them a signal, saying: "The one I will kiss is the man. Arrest him and take him away safely." 45 So when he arrived on the spot, he went to him at once and exclaimed: "Rabbi!" and kissed him.

46 Then they laid hands on him and arrested him. 47 But one of the Disciples drew his sword, struck one of the attendants of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

48 Jesus said to the crowd: "You have come out to arrest me with swords and clubs as if I were a bandit. 49 I have been preaching to you in the temple day after day, and you did not arrest me. But the Scriptures must be fulfilled."

THE YOUNG DISCIPLE

50 Thereupon all his Disciples abandoned him and fled.

51 But a young man followed him. He was wearing only a linen sheet wrapped around his bare body. Some youngsters laid hold of him. 52 He left the linen sheet in their hands and ran away from them naked.

BEFORE THE HIGH PRIEST

53 Then they led Jesus to the high priest with whom all the chief priests, the elders, and the scribes were assembled. 54 Peter followed him at a long distance into the interior of the courtyard of the high priest, sat down with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

55 The chief priests and the whole council tried to get evidence against Jesus in order to put him to death, but they could find none. 56 For while many gave false testimony against him, their evidence did not agree. 57 Then some witnesses stood up and made these false accusations: 58 "We have heard him say: 'I will demolish this temple, built by human hands, and after three days I will build another, not built by human hands.'" 59 But again their evidence did not agree.

60 Then the high priest stood up in their midst and asked Jesus: "Have you no answer to make? What have you to say to these accusations?" 61 But Jesus remained silent and made no answer. Again the high priest asked him: "Are you the Messiah, the Son of the blessed Lord?"

62 Jesus answered: "I am. Indeed you will see the Messiah sitting at the right hand of the Almighty and coming down from the clouds of heaven."

63 Thereupon the high priest tore his garments and said: "What more evidence do we need? 64 You have all heard his blasphemy yourselves. What is your verdict?" 65 They all pronounced him guilty of a capital crime. Some began to spit on him. Others blindfolded him, buffeted him, and said to him: "Prophesy!" The servants also slapped him and beat him.

THE DENIAL

66 Now, as Peter was below in the courtyard, one of the maids of the high priest came up, 67 saw him warming himself, looked at him, and said: "You also were with Jesus of Nazareth!" 68 But he denied it, saying: "I do not know him. I do not understand what you mean." Thereupon he went out to the porch. Then the cock crowed.

69 The maid saw him again and began to say to the

bystanders: "This man is one of them." 70 But again he denied it. After a little while, again the bystanders said to Peter: "You certainly are one of them. For you are a Galilean and your speech proves it." 71 Then he began to curse and swear: "I do not know this man you are talking about."

72 At that moment the cock crowed for the second time. Then Peter remembered how Jesus had said to him: "Before the cock crows twice, you will deny me three times." When he thought of it, he wept.

CHAPTER 15

BEFORE PILATE

1 As soon as it was daylight, the high priests, the elders, the scribes, and the whole council held a consultation against Jesus. Subsequently, they bound him, took him away, and delivered him over to Pilate. 2 Pilate asked him: "Are you the King of the Jews?" He answered: "Yes, you say it yourself."

3 Moreover, the high priests made many accusations against him. 4 So Pilate asked him again: "Have you no answer to make? See how many charges they bring against you." 5 But Jesus made no further answer at all. Pilate was amazed at his silence.

BARABBAS

6 During the festival Pilate used to release for them any prisoner they petitioned for. 7 Now there was in prison a man called Barabbas, one of the rebels who had committed murder in the insurrection. 8 So the crowd began to shout and demand the customary favor.

9 Pilate asked them: "Do you want me to release the King of the Jews for you?" 10 For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him out of envy. 11 But the chief priests instigated the crowd to demand the release of Barabbas instead.

12 Pilate asked them again: "Then what do you want me to do with the man you call the King of the Jews?" 13 They shouted back: "Crucify him!" 14 Pilate asked them once more: "What crime has he committed?" But they shouted all the louder: "Crucify him."

15 Pilate wished to appease the crowd. So he released Barabbas for them. Then he gave orders to have Jesus flogged and delivered him to be crucified.

THE CROWN OF THORNS

16 Thereupon the soldiers led Jesus away into the court,
that is the Praetorium, and gathered the whole detachment.
17 Then they put a purple robe on him, plaited a crown of
thorns, placed it on his head, 18 and began to salute him:
"Hail, King of the Jews!"

19 Then they struck his head with a reed, spat on him,
and knelt down in homage to him. 20 After they had mocked
him, they took off his purple robe, put his own clothes on him,
and led him out to crucify him.

THE CYRENIAN

21 On the way they compelled a passer-by, Simon the
Cyrenian, the father of Alexander and Rufus, who was coming
in from the country, to carry his cross.

THE CRUCIFIXION

22 So they brought him to the place called Golgotha, which
means the Place of the Skull. 23 They offered him wine mingled
with myrrh, but he refused to take it.

24 Then they crucified him and divided his garments among
them, casting lots for them to see what each one should take.
25 It was the third hour when they crucified him. 26 The
inscription of the accusation against him was written over his
head: "The King of the Jews."

DERISIONS

27 With him they crucified two bandits, one on his right
and one on his left. 28 Thus the passage of the Scriptures was
fulfilled: "He was reckoned with the transgressors."

29 Those who passed by jeered at him, shaking their heads
and saying: "You who can tear down the temple and rebuild it
in three days, 30 save yourself and come down from the cross."

31 Likewise, the chief priests and the scribes also mocked
him among themselves and said: "He saved others, but he
cannot save himself. 32 Let Christ, the King of Israel, come
down from the cross now. When we see it, we will believe in
him." Those who were crucified with him also reviled him.

DESPAIR AND DEATH

33 When the sixth hour had come, darkness overspread the whole country until the ninth hour. 34 At the ninth hour Jesus cried aloud: "Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani!" That is to say: "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"

35 Some of the bystanders, when they heard it, said: "Listen, he is calling Elijah." 36 One of them ran, filled a sponge with vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave it to him to drink, saying: "Wait, let us see whether Elijah will come to take him down." 37 Then Jesus uttered a loud cry and expired.

THE CENTURION

38 Thereupon the curtain of the temple was rent in two from top to bottom. 39 When the centurion, who stood opposite him, saw that he cried aloud and expired, he exclaimed: "Indeed this man was the Son of God."

THE WOMEN

40 There were also some women watching from afar. Among them were Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James the Younger and of Joseph, and Salome. 41 These women used to accompany him and minister to him when he was in Galilee. There were also many other women who had come with him to Jerusalem.

THE BURIAL

42 Now it was already evening on the day of Preparation, that is to say the day before the Sabbath. 43 Then Joseph of Arimathea, a high-ranking counsellor, who was also waiting for the Kingdom of God, went boldly to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus.

44 Pilate was astonished that Jesus had died so soon. So he summoned the Centurion and asked him whether he was already dead. 45 When he heard his report, Pilate granted the body to Joseph.

46 Then Joseph bought a linen shroud, took him down from the Cross, wrapped him in the shroud, laid him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock, and rolled a stone against the door of the tomb. 47 Mary Magdalene and Mary, the mother of Joseph, observed the tomb in which he was laid.

CHAPTER 16

THE RESURRECTION

1 Right after the Sabbath, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought perfumes in order to go and anoint Jesus. 2 They went to the tomb very early in the morning of the first day of the week soon after sunrise.

3 On their way they asked one another: "Who will roll away the stone from the door of the tomb for us?" 4 But when they looked up, they noticed that the huge stone had been already rolled away.

5 So they went into the tomb and saw a young man dressed in white on the right side. They were astonished. 6 But he told them: "Do not be afraid. You are looking for Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has risen, he is not here. This is the place where they laid him. 7 But go, tell his Disciples and Peter that he is waiting for you in Galilee. There you will see him as he told you."

8 Terrified and bewildered, the women ran out, fled from the tomb, and said nothing to anyone. For they were afraid.

APPARITIONS

9 After his resurrection, early in the morning of the first day of the week, Jesus appeared for the first time to Mary Magdalene from whom he had cast out seven demons. 10 She went and reported this apparition to his Disciples, as they were mourning and weeping. 11 But they could not believe that he was alive and that she had seen him.

12 Afterwards, he appeared in the form of a stranger to two of his Disciples, as they were going out to the country. 13 They also reported this apparition to the other Disciples. But they did not believe them either.

FINAL INSTRUCTIONS

14 At last, he appeared to the eleven Apostles themselves as they were eating their meal. He reproached them for their unbelief, and their obstinacy in refusing to accept the testimony of those who had seen him after the resurrection.

15 Then he told them: "Go out all over the world and preach the Gospel to all men. 16 Those who believe and are baptized will be saved. Those who do not believe will be

condemned. 17 The believers will perform the following miracles:
They will cast out demons in my name. They will speak in new
languages. 18 They will handle serpents. They will drink deadly
poisons without harm. They will lay their hands on the sick
and will heal them."

THE ASCENSION

19 After these instructions, the Lord ascended into heaven
and sat at the right hand of God. 20 Then they went out and
preached everywhere. The Lord supported them and confirmed
their message with the accompanying miracles. Amen.

THE HOLY GOSPEL
ACCORDING TO SAINT LUKE

CHAPTER 1

PREFACE

1 Many writers have undertaken to compile a narrative of the events which have occurred among us in fulfillment of the Scriptural prophecies. 2 Their stories were based on the testimonies handed down to us by the original eye-witnesses and missionaries of the Gospel.

3 As you know, most excellent Theophilus, I have carefully investigated the entire revelation from its beginning. For this reason I myself have decided to write its history in a connected form for your benefit. 4 Thus you will obtain a reliable handbook of the doctrines in which you have been instructed.

ANNUNCIATION OF THE FORERUNNER

5 During the reign of Herod, king of Judea, there was a priest named Zechariah who belonged to the division of Abijah. His wife was also a descendant of Aaron. Her name was Elizabeth.

6 They were both righteous before God, strictly observing the commandments and ordinances of the Lord. 7 They had no children, for Elizabeth was barren, and they were both advanced in years.

8 Now he was officiating as priest before God when his division was on duty. 9 According to the custom of the priesthood, it fell to his lot to enter the sanctuary of the Lord and offer him incense. 10 All the congregation of the people were praying outside at the hour of incense.

11 Thereupon an Angel appeared to him standing on the right side of the altar of incense. 12 When Zechariah saw him, he was startled and overcome with fear.

13 But the Angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah. For your prayer has been heard. Your wife will bear you a son and you will name him John. 14 He will be a joy and delight to you, and many will rejoice at his birth. 15 For he will be great in the sight of the Lord. He will drink no wine nor strong drinks.

He will be inspired by the Holy Spirit from his very birth.
16 He will turn many of the children of Israel to the Lord our
God. 17 He will go before him in the Spirit and power of Elijah.
He will reconcile fathers to their children. He will bring the
disobedient back to the wisdom of the righteous. He will prepare
the people perfectly for the Lord."

18 Zechariah said to the Angel: "How can I believe such
a thing? For I am an old man, and my wife is advanced in years."

19 The Angel answered him: "I am Gabriel. I stand in the
presence of God. I have been sent to speak to you and to announce
to you these good tidings. 20 Now you will be silent and unable
to speak until the day when this event will take place. For you
have not believed my words which will be fulfilled in their time."

21 In the meantime, the people were waiting for Zechariah.
They wondered at his delay in the sanctuary. 22 When he came
out, he could not speak to them. So they knew that he had seen
a vision in the temple. He kept making signs to them, but
remained dumb. 23 When the days of his ministration were
completed, he went back to his home.

24 Soon afterward, his wife Elizabeth became pregnant.
She kept herself in seclusion for five months. She said: 25 "The
Lord has done this favor to me. He has deigned to remove the
disgrace I have endured among men."

ANNUNCIATION OF THE MESSIAH

26 Six months later, the Angel Gabriel was sent by God
to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, 27 to a virgin betrothed
to a man named Joseph of the house of David. The virgin's
name was Mary.

28 So the Angel went to her house, and said to her: "Hail,
gracious Virgin, the Lord is with you." 29 She was startled by
what he said and wondered what his greeting meant.

30 But the Angel said to her: "Do not be afraid, Mary.
For you have found grace with God. 31 Consequently, you will
become pregnant, you will give birth to a Son, and you will
name him Jesus. 32 He will be great and he will be called the
Son of the Most High. The Lord our God will give him the
throne of his forefather David. 33 He will reign over the house
of Jacob forever, and his kingdom will have no end."

34 Mary asked the Angel: "How can this happen, when I
have no husband?" 35 The Angel answered her: "The Holy
Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High

will overshadow you. Therefore the Child to be born will be called the holy Son of God.

36 "Look, your relative Elizabeth in her old age became also pregnant with a son. Now this is the sixth month of pregnancy of a woman who was called barren. 37 For with God nothing is impossible."

38 Mary said: "I am the handmaid of the Lord. I am ready to serve as you say." Then the Angel departed from her.

MARY AND ELIZABETH

39 In those days, Mary arose and hurried to the highlands, to a city of Judah. 40 She entered the house of Zechariah and greeted Elizabeth. 41 When Elizabeth heard the greetings of Mary, the child leaped within her. Then Elizabeth, inspired by the Holy Spirit, 42 exclaimed with a loud voice:

"Blessed are you among women, and blessed is your holy Son. 43 But why is this favor granted to me, that the mother of my Lord should visit me? 44 For the moment your greeting reached my ears, the child leaped with joy within me. 45 Blessed is the woman who has believed that what the Lord has promised her will be fulfilled."

46 Mary said: "My soul magnifies the Lord, 47 and my spirit rejoices in God my Savior. 48 He has exalted his humble handmaid. For henceforth all generations will glorify me. 49 The Almighty Lord, whose name is holy, has done miracles for me. 50 He has shown his mercy to his pious worshipers from generation to generation. 51 He has done mighty deeds with his arm. He has routed the haughty and the conceited. 52 He has dethroned the oppressors, and he has exalted the oppressed. 53 He has enriched the poor with all his blessings, and he has despoiled the rich of all their wealth. 54 He has helped his servant Israel with his unfailing mercy. 55 He has fulfilled all the promises he had made to our forefathers, to Abraham, and to all his descendants forever."

56 Mary stayed with Elizabeth about three months. Then she returned to her own house.

BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

57 When the time came for Elizabeth to be delivered, she gave birth to a son. 58 Her neighbors and relatives heard of the great mercy the Lord had shown her. So they visited her and congratulated her.

59 On the eighth day, they came to circumcise the child, and they wanted to name him Zechariah after his father. 60 But his mother said: "No, he must be named John." 61 They told her: "None of your relatives is called by that name."

62 So they made signs to the child's father to learn what he wished him to be called. 63 He asked for a tablet and wrote on it: "His name will be John." They were all amazed. 64 Thereupon his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue was loosed. He began to speak and to praise God.

65 All their neighbors were overcome with awe. These stories were told all over the highlands of Judea. 66 All those who heard them pondered over them, and asked: "What is this child going to be?" For the hand of the Lord was over him.

67 Then his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit and prophesied, saying: 68 "Blessed is the Lord God of Israel, because he has visited and redeemed his people. 69 He has raised a Savior for us in the house of his servant David. 70 He fulfilled the promises which he had made long ago through the mouths of his holy Prophets. 71 He saved us from our enemies and from all those who hate us.

72 "He carried out his merciful dispensation and his holy covenant with our forefathers. 73 For he had sworn an oath to our forefather Abraham, 74 that he would liberate us from our oppressors and enable us to serve him fearlessly, and to live 75 in holiness and righteousness all the days of our life.

76 "And you, my child, will be called a Prophet of the Most High. For you will become the forerunner of the Lord, and you will prepare his way. 77 You will teach the people to obtain salvation through the remission of their sins. 78 Our God has been merciful to us. For he has sent us the Dawn of Heaven 79 to give light to those who live in darkness and in the shadow of death. Thus he will guide all men into the Kingdom of Peace."

80 So the child grew up, became strong in spirit, and lived in the desert until the day when he was manifested to the people of Israel.

CHAPTER 2
THE BIRTH OF JESUS

1 In those days, a decree was issued by the Emperor Augustus that a census of the whole empire should be taken. 2 It was the first census taken when Quirinius was governor of Syria. 3 So everyone went to register in his own city.

4 Joseph also went up from the town of Nazareth in
Galilee to the city of David called Bethlehem in Judea, because
he belonged to the house and lineage of David. 5 There he
registered with Mary who was betrothed to him and was
pregnant.

6 While they were there, the time for her delivery arrived.
7 So she gave birth to her first-born Son, wrapped him up in
swaddling cloths, and laid him in a manger. For there was no
room for them at the inn.

THE SHEPHERDS

8 In that region there were shepherds living in the open
fields and keeping watch over their flocks by night. 9 Suddenly,
an Angel of the Lord appeared to them, and the glory of the
Lord shone around them. The shepherds were terribly frightened.

10 But the Angel said to them: "Do not be afraid. For I
bring you good tidings of great joy for all the people: 11 Today
your Savior, Christ the Lord, has been born in the city of David.
12 This is the sign by which you will know him: You will find
a baby, wrapped up in swaddling clothes and lying in a manger."

13 Suddenly, a multitude of the heavenly host appeared
with the Angel praising God, and saying: 14 "Glory to God
in the highest, peace on earth, and good will among men."

15 When the Angel had gone away from them into heaven,
the shepherds said to one another: "Let us go over to Bethlehem
and see this event which has occurred, and which the Lord has
announced to us." 16 So they hurried there, and found Mary
and Joseph with the Baby lying in the manger.

17 The shepherds saw him, and reported the message of
the Angel concerning this Child. 18 They were all amazed at
what the shepherds told them.

19 But Mary treasured up all these predictions and pondered
over them in her heart. 20 Then the shepherds returned, glorify-
ing and praising God for all they had heard and seen, as it
had been announced to them.

CIRCUMCISION AND PRESENTATION

21 When he was eight days old, he was circumcized. He
was called Jesus, as the Angel had named him when he announced
his birth.

22 Then the days of his Mother's purification were fulfilled.
So, according to the Law of Moses, the parents brought the

Child to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, 23 because it is written in the Scriptures that "every first-born male must be consecrated to the Lord." 24 Moreover, they had to offer the sacrifice prescribed in the Scriptures, namely a pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.

25 At that time, there was in Jerusalem a man named Simeon. This man was righteous and devout. He was awaiting the redemption of Israel and he was inspired by the Holy Spirit. 26 It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not die before seeing the Lord's Messiah.

27 So he went to the temple under the influence of the Holy Spirit. When the parents brought in the Child Jesus for the purpose of fulfilling the customary prescriptions of the Law, 28 Simeon took him in his arms, blessed God, and said:

29 "Lord, now dismiss your servant in peace, according to your promise. 30 For my eyes have seen the salvation, 31 which you have prepared for all peoples, 32 a light of revelation for the Gentiles, and a glory for your people Israel."

33 His mother and Joseph were amazed at what was spoken about him. 34 Simeon blessed them and said to Mary his Mother: "Listen! This child is destined to cause the fall and the rise of many in Israel. He will become a subject of controversy. 35 A sword will pierce your own heart. Thus the thoughts of many people will be revealed."

36 There was also a prophetess, Anna, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher. She was very old. When she was young, she had been married for seven years. 37 She had been a widow until she reached the age of eighty-four. She never left the temple, but worshipped night and day with fasts and prayers. 38 She came up at that very moment, gave praise to the Lord, and spoke about the Child to all those who were looking for the liberation of Jerusalem.

39 When they had fulfilled all the prescriptions of the Law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their own town of Nazareth. 40 The Child grew and became strong in spirit. He was full of wisdom, and imbued with the grace of God.

JESUS IN THE TEMPLE

41 His parents used to go to Jerusalem every year at the festival of the Passover. 42 When he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem for the festival as usual.

43 After the end of the celebrations, as they were return-

ing, the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem. Joseph and his mother did not know it. 44 They supposed that he was somewhere in the party, and proceeded a day's journey. Then they looked for him among their relatives and acquaintances.

45 When they failed to find him, they returned to Jerusalem, searching for him. 46 After three days they discovered him in the temple, sitting among the doctors of the law, listening to them, and asking them questions. 47 All those who heard him were astonished at his intelligence and at his answers.

48 When his parents saw him, they were amazed. Then his mother said to him: "My child, why have you treated us like that? Why, your father and I have been searching for you and worrying about you." 49 Jesus answered them: "Why did you search for me? You should know that I must be in my Father's house."

50 They did not understand what he meant. 51 But he went down with them, returned to Nazareth, and obeyed them. His mother kept all these incidents in her mind. 52 So Jesus advanced in wisdom, in age, and in grace with God and man.

CHAPTER 3

JOHN THE BAPTIST

1 It was in the fifteenth year of the reign of Emperor Tiberius. At that time Pontius Pilate was procurator of Judea. Herod was tetrarch of Galilee. His brother Philip was tetrarch of the districts of Iturea and Trachonitis. Lysanias was tetrarch of Abilene. 2 Annas and Caiaphas were the high priests. Then John, the son of Zechariah, received a message from God in the desert.

3 He went all over the Jordan valley, and preached a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins, 4 as the book of sermons of the prophet Isaiah says: "Listen, a Prophet is preaching in the desert. Prepare the way of the Lord. Straighten out his paths. 5 Every valley will be filled. Every mountain and hill will be leveled. The crooked places will be straightened out. The rough roads will be smoothed. 6 And all flesh will see the salvation of God."

7 He said to the people who went out to be baptized by him: "You brood of vipers! God himself has warned you to flee from the retribution to come. 8 Therefore show your repentance by your deeds. Do not say to yourselves: 'We have Abraham as our father!' For I say to you that God is able to

raise up children to Abraham out of these stones. 9 Now the ax is laid to the root of the trees. So every tree which does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire."

10 The people asked him: "What shall we do then?" 11 He answered them: "Whoever has two coats must give to him who has none. And whoever has food must do likewise."

12 The publicans also came to be baptized, and asked him: "Master, what shall we do?" 13 He answered them: "Do not exact more than what is prescribed to you."

14 The soldiers also asked him: "And we, what shall we do?" He answered them: "Extort nothing from anybody by violence or by false accusation. Be content with your wages."

15 The people were in expectation, and all of them were wondering in their minds whether he was the Messiah or not. 16 John declared to all: "I baptize you with water, but a mightier man than I is coming, whose sandal-straps I am not worthy to untie. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. 17 He has his winnowing fork in his hand. He will thoroughly cleanse his threshing floor. He will gather his wheat into his granary. And he will burn the chaff with unquenchable fire." 18 So with many other exhortations he preached the glad tidings to the people.

19 But Herod the tetrarch, who had been reproved by John because of Herodias, his brother's wife, and all the evil deeds which he had committed, 20 crowned them all by putting John in prison.

THE BAPTISM OF JESUS

21 Now, when all the people were baptized, Jesus was also baptized and was praying. Then heaven was opened. 22 The Holy Spirit descended upon him in the physical form of a dove. And a voice came from heaven, saying: "You are my beloved Son. I am well pleased with you."

GENEALOGY OF JESUS

23 Jesus was about thirty years of age when he began his ministry. He was the son, as was supposed, of Joseph, the son of Heli, 24 the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, 25 the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, 26 the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Joseph, the son of Joda, 27 the

son of Joanan, the son of Reza, the son of Zorobabel, the son of Salathiel, the son of Neri, 28 the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmodam, the son of Er, 29 the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, 30 the son of Simeon, the son of Judah, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of Eliakim, 31 the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, 32 the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Booz, the son of Salmon, the son of Naasson, 33 the son of Aminadab, the son of Aram, the son of Esrom, the son of Phares, the son of Judah, 34 the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Tharah, the son of Nachor, 35 the son of Sarug, the son of Ragau, the son of Phaleg, the son of Heber, the son of Salah, 36 the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, 37 the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Malaleel, the son of Cainan, 38 the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, who was created by God.

CHAPTER 4

THE TEMPTATIONS

1 Jesus, filled with the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan. He was led about by the Spirit in the desert for forty days, 2 and was tempted by the devil. He ate nothing during those days. When they were over, he felt hungry. 3 So the devil said to him: "If you are the Son of God, command this stone to become bread."

4 Jesus answered him: "It is written in the Scriptures: 'Man cannot live on bread alone, but also on all the commandments which proceed from the mouth of God.' "

5 Again the devil took him up on a high mountain. He showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a momentary vision, 6 and said to him: "I will give you all this authority and glory. For it has been turned over to me, and I can give it to anyone I please. 7 If you will worship me, it will be yours."

8 Jesus answered him: "Get away from me, Satan. For it is written in the Scriptures: 'You must worship the Lord your God, and adore him alone.' "

9 Finally, he led him to Jerusalem, placed him on the pinnacle of the temple and said to him: "If you are the Son of God, throw yourself down from here. 10 For it is written

in the Scriptures: 'He will command his Angels to protect you. 11 They will lift you up with their hands. So you will never strike your foot against a stone.' "

12 Jesus answered him: "We are told in the Scriptures: 'You must not challenge the Lord your God.' " 13 When the devil had concluded his temptations, he left him in peace for the time being.

JESUS AT NAZARETH

14 Then Jesus returned to Galilee in the power of the Spirit. His fame spread all over that region. 15 For he taught in their synagogues, and was glorified by them all.

16 Later on, Jesus came to Nazareth, where he was brought up. On the Sabbath day, he went to the synagogue, as he was accustomed to do, and stood up to read the Scriptures. 17 The book of the Prophet Isaiah was handed to him. He opened the book, and read the following passage:

18 "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me. For he has anointed me and sent me out to preach the Gospel to the poor, to heal the broken-hearted, to release the captives, to open the eyes of the blind, to liberate the oppressed, 19 and to proclaim the glorious year of the Lord."

20 He closed the book, gave it back to the attendant, and sat down. The eyes of all the people in the synagogue were fixed upon him. 21 He began by saying to them: "This passage of the Scripture you have heard has been fulfilled today." 22 They all spoke well of him. They were astonished at the gracious words which came from his mouth, and kept asking: "Is he not the son of Joseph?" 23 He answered them: "No doubt you will quote this proverb to me: Doctor, heal yourself! Do here in your home what we hear you did at Capernaum."

24 Then he added: "Well, I tell you, no prophet is welcome in his own country. 25 Indeed, I tell you there were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah. Then the sky was closed for three years and six months, and a great famine came over all the land. 26 Yet Elijah was not sent to one of them, but to a foreign widow at Zarephta in Sidon. 27 Likewise, there were plenty of lepers in Israel in the days of the Prophet Elisha. Yet no one of them was healed but Neeman the Syrian."

28 When the people in the synagogue heard this statement, they were all furious. 29 They rose up, drove him out of the town, and led him to the brow of the hill on which the city

was built, in order to fling him down headlong. 30 But he passed through them unseen, and went away.

THE DEMONIAC

31 Then Jesus came to Capernaum, a town of Galilee, and was preaching to the people on the Sabbath day. 32 They were astonished at his sermons, because he preached with authority.

33 In the synagogue there was a man who was possessed by the spirit of an unclean demon. He shrieked aloud, 34 and said to Jesus: "Let us alone! What do you want from us, Jesus of Nazareth? Did you come to exterminate us? I know who you are: You are the Son of God." 35 Jesus rebuked him and said to him: "Silence! Come out of him."

The demon threw the man down in the midst of them, and came out of him without doing him any harm. 36 They were all amazed, and said to one another: "What is the meaning of his message? He gives orders to the unclean spirits with authority and power. For they obey him and come out." 37 His fame spread in every place of the neighboring region.

PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW

38 Then Jesus left the synagogue and went to Simon's house and was asked to heal Simon's mother-in-law who was suffering from a violent fever. 39 He stood over her and commanded the fever to leave her. She was healed immediately, rose up, and ministered to them.

CURES

40 When the sun was setting, all those who had sick friends, suffering from various diseases, brought them to him. He laid his hand on each one of them, and healed them. 41 He also cast out demons from many persons. The demons screamed aloud and said: "You are the Messiah, the Son of God." He reproved them and did not allow them to speak. For they knew that he was the Messiah.

42 When it was day, he left the house and went to a deserted spot. The people sought him, overtook him, and tried to keep him from leaving them. 43 But he told them: "I must preach the Gospel of the Kingdom of Heaven to the other cities also. For I was sent for this purpose." 44 So he continued to preach in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAPTER 5

THE FIRST APOSTLES

1 One day he was standing by the Lake of Gennesaret, while the people pressed around him to listen to the divine Gospel. 2 Then he saw two ships on the shore of the lake. The fishermen had gone out of them and were washing their nets. 3 He boarded one of them, which belonged to Simon, and asked him to push off a little from the land. Then he sat down and preached to the people from the boat.

4 When he had finished his sermon, he said to Simon: "Put out into deep water and lower your nets for a catch." 5 Simon answered him: "Master, we worked all night and caught nothing. But as you tell me to do it, I will lower the nets."

6 When they had done so, they enclosed such a shoal of fish that their nets began to break. 7 So they beckoned to their partners in the other ship to come and help them. They came, and filled both ships so heavily that they began to sink.

8 When Simon saw it, he knelt before Jesus and said to him: "Do not approach me, O Lord, for I am a sinful man." 9 For he and all his companions, as well as James and John, the sons of Zebedee, who were Simon's partners, were amazed at the haul of fish they had taken.

10 Then Jesus said to Simon: "Do not be afraid. From now on, you will be fishers of men." 11 Thereupon they brought their boats to land, left everything, and followed him.

THE LEPER

12 Once, when Jesus was in one of the cities, he met a man covered with leprosy. When he saw Jesus, he fell on his face and begged him, saying: "My Lord, if you will, you can cleanse me." 13 Jesus stretched out his hand, touched him, and said to him: "I will. Be cleansed." Immediately, the leprosy left him.

14 Then Jesus ordered him: "Tell nobody about it. But go and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings prescribed by Moses as an evidence of your cure." 15 Yet his fame spread the more widely. Large crowds were gathered to hear him and be healed of their diseases. 16 But he retired into the desert and prayed.

THE PARALYTIC

17 One day Jesus was preaching while some Pharisees and doctors of the Law, who had come from every village of Galilee and Judea, as well as from Jerusalem, were sitting near by. For they had heard that Jesus was endowed by the Lord with power to heal.

18 Thereupon some men carrying a paralytic on a bed came up, and were trying to bring him in and place him before Jesus. 19 As they could find no way to get him in, on account of the throng, they went up on the roof and let him down through the tiles with his cot into the midst before Jesus.

20 When he saw their faith, he said: "My friend, your sins are forgiven." 21 The Scribes and the Pharisees were asking themselves: "Who is this man who utters these blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?"

22 Jesus guessed their thoughts, and answered them: "What are you pondering in your minds? 23 Which is easier? To say: 'Your sins are forgiven.' Or to say: 'Stand up and walk.' 24 But I will show you that the Son of Man has authority to forgive sins on earth." Then he said to the paralytic: "I tell you, stand up, take up your bed, and go home." 25 Immediately, he stood up before them, took up his bed, and went home, glorifying God. 26 They were all amazed and glorified God. They were filled with awe and said: "We have seen a strange miracle today."

LEVI

27 Later on, as Jesus was passing along, he saw a publican called Levi sitting at the customs-house. He said to him: "Follow me." 28 He left everything, rose up, and followed him.

29 Then Levi gave a great entertainment for him in his house. A large throng of publicans and their friends were sitting at the table with them. 30 The Scribes and the Pharisees grumbled at his Disciples, saying: "Why do you eat and drink with publicans and sinners?" 31 Jesus answered them: "Those who are healthy do not need a physician, but those who are sick do. 32 I have not come to call to repentance the righteous, but the sinners."

FASTING

33 Some Pharisees asked him: "How is it that the disciples of John and the disciples of the Pharisees fast frequently and

offer prayers, while your Disciples eat and drink?"

34 He answered them: "The wedding guests cannot fast while the bridegroom is with them. 35 But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them. Then in those days they will fast."

NEW AND OLD

36 Then he told them a parable: "No one tears a piece from a new garment to patch an old garment. If he does, the new garment will be torn and the patch will not match the old garment.

37 "Likewise, no one puts new wine in old wineskins. If he does, the new wine will burst the skins, the wine will be spilled, and the skins will be ruined. 38 On the contrary, new wine must be put in fresh wineskins. For thus both of them are safe. 39 Moreover, no one who has been drinking old wine calls for new wine. For he says: 'The old wine is better.' "

CHAPTER 6

SABBATH OBSERVANCE

1 On a Sabbath day, while Jesus was passing through the grainfields, his Disciples picked ears of wheat, rubbed them in their hands, and ate them. 2 But some of the Pharisees said to them: "Why are you doing what is not lawful on the Sabbath day?"

3 Jesus answered them: "You have read what David did when he and his companions were hungry. 4 He simply went into the house of God, took the presentation loaves, and ate them with his companions. As you know, only priests are allowed to eat them." 5 Then he added: "The Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath day."

6 On another Sabbath day, he went into a synagogue and began to preach. Now a man was there whose right hand was withered. 7 The Scribes and the Pharisees were watching to see whether he would heal people on the Sabbath, in order to find an accusation against him.

8 Jesus guessed their thoughts, and said to the man who had the withered hand: "Rise up and stand in the midst." He did so. 9 Then Jesus said to them: "I want to ask you a question. Is it lawful on the Sabbath day to do good or to do harm, to save life or to destroy it?" 10 He looked around on them all

and said to the man: "Stretch out your hand." He did so, and his right hand was restored like his left hand.

11 They were furious, and began to discuss what action they should take against Jesus.

THE TWELVE APOSTLES

12 Then he went up on the mountain, and spent the whole night in prayer to God. 13 When day came, he called his Disciples, and chose twelve of them whom he called Apostles: 14 Simon, whom he named Peter; Andrew, his brother; James; John; Philip; Bartholomew; 15 Matthew; Thomas; James, the son of Alphaeus; Simon, who was called the Zealot; 16 Judas, the brother of James; and Judas Iscariot, who became a traitor.

THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT

17 Then he came down with them and stood on a plain with a great throng of his Disciples. A large crowd of people from all Judea, Jerusalem, and the seacoast of Tyre and Sidon had come to hear him and be healed of their diseases. 18 Many of them who were tormented by unclean spirits were cured. 19 All of them were trying to touch him, because power went forth from him and healed them all.

THE BEATITUDES

20 Then he looked at his Disciples, and said: "Blessed are you poor. For yours is the Kingdom of God. 21 Blessed are you who hunger now. For you will be satisfied. Blessed are you who weep now. For you will laugh. 22 Blessed are you when men hate you, cast you off, revile you, and ban your name as evil, on account of the Messiah. 23 Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy. For indeed, your reward will be great in heaven."

THE WOES

24 "Woe to you who are rich. For you have received your comfort. 25 Woe to you who are filled. For you will hunger. Woe to you who laugh now. For you will mourn and weep. 26 Woe to you of whom all men speak well. For in this way their forefathers have treated the false prophets."

LOVE

27 "Now listen to what I tell you. Love your enemies. Do good to those who hate you. 28 Bless those who curse you. And pray for those who abuse you. 29 If a man strikes you on one cheek, offer him the other also. If a man takes away your coat, hand him your shirt also. 30 If a man begs from you, give to him always. If a man steals your property, never try to recover it.

31 "Do to other men what you want them to do to you. 32 If you love only those who love you, there is no reward for you. Why, even sinners love those who love them. 33 If you do good only to those who do good to you, there is no reward for you. Why, even sinners do as much. 34 If you lend only to those from whom you expect repayment, there is no reward for you. Why, even sinners lend to sinners to receive as much in return.

35 "But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them, without expecting anything in return. Then your reward will be great, and you will become sons of the Most High. For he is kind even to the ungrateful and the wicked. 36 Therefore be merciful, just as your Father is merciful."

THE MEASURE

37 "Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. 38 Give, and they will give you. They will pour into your lap a good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and overflowing. For the measure you give will be the measure you receive."

THE BEAM AND THE MOTE

39 Then he told them a parable: "The blind cannot lead the blind. For both of them will fall into the ditch.

40 "A disciple is not better than his master. But every disciple, when he is well trained, will become just as good as his master.

41 "You observe the mote in your brother's eye. But you do not notice the beam in your own eye. 42 You cannot say to your brother: 'Brother, let me remove the mote from your eye,' when you are unable to see the beam in your own eye. You hypocrite! First remove the beam from your own eye, and

then you will see clearly to remove the mote from your brother's eye."

TREE AND FRUIT

43 "A good tree does not bear bad fruit, and a bad tree does not bear good fruit either. 44 For every tree is known by its fruit. Figs are not gathered from thorns, and grapes are not picked from brambles. 45 A good man produces good out of the store of goodness in his heart. A wicked man produces evil out of the store of wickedness in his heart. For his mouth utters only what his heart contains."

HOUSE ON A ROCK

46 "You call me 'Lord, Lord!' Yet you do not practice my commandments. 47 Now I will tell you what a man is like who comes to me, listens to my Gospel, and puts it into practice. 48 He is like a man who built a house, dug deep, and laid the foundation upon the rock. When the flood came, the torrent broke upon that house, but could not shake it. For it had been built upon the rock.

49 "But whoever listens to my Gospel and does not put it into practice is like a man who built a house upon the ground without any foundation. The torrent broke against it, and the house collapsed immediately. The wreck of that house was complete."

CHAPTER 7

THE CENTURION

1 When he had finished his sermon to the people, Jesus went to Capernaum. 2 Now the servant of a Roman centurion was sick and dying. The centurion valued him very highly. 3 So when he heard of Jesus, he sent some Jewish elders to him and asked him to come and heal his servant.

4 They came to Jesus and begged him earnestly, saying: "He deserves to obtain this favor from you. 5 He loves our nation, and he built us a synagogue."

6 So Jesus went with them. He was not far from the house when the centurion sent some friends to tell him: "Lord, do not take the trouble. For I am not worthy to receive you under my roof. 7 Therefore I did not think it proper to come to you. But simply say a word, and my servant will be healed.

8 "For I myself am serving in the army, and I give orders to the soldiers under my command. I tell one to go, and he goes. I tell another to come, and he comes. And I tell my servant to do this, and he does it."

9 When Jesus heard this remark, he was astonished. He turned to the people who were following him, and said to them: "I tell you, I have never found such a great faith even in Israel." 10 When the messengers returned to the house, they found the sick servant restored to health.

THE SON OF THE WIDOW

11 The day after, Jesus, accompanied by many of his Disciples and a large crowd, went to a city called Nain. 12 Just as he was approaching the gate of the city, a dead man was carried out. He was his mother's only son, and she was a widow. A large crowd of the townspeople accompanied her.

13 When the Lord saw her, he pitied her, and said to her: "Do not weep." 14 Then he went up and touched the bier. The bearers stopped. He said: "Young man, I tell you, rise up."

15 The dead man sat up and began to speak. Jesus gave him back to his mother. 16 They were all overcome with awe, and they glorified God, saying: "A great Prophet has appeared among us. God has visited his people."

17 His fame spread all over Judea and the surrounding regions.

JOHN'S DEPUTATION

18 Now the disciples of John reported to their master all the miracles performed by Jesus. 19 So John called two of his disciples, and sent them to Jesus to ask him: "Are you the Messiah whose coming was prophesied, or shall we expect someone else?"

20 So the two disciples went to Jesus and said to him: "John the Baptist sent us to ask you: 'Are you the Messiah whose coming was prophesied, or shall we expect someone else?' "

21 In that very hour he healed many diseases, afflictions, evil spirits, and restored the sight of many who were blind. 22 So Jesus answered them: "Go and tell John what you have seen and heard yourselves. The blind see. The lame walk. The lepers are cleansed. The deaf hear. The dead are raised. The Gospel is preached to the poor. 23 And blessed is the man who will not turn away from me."

JOHN THE BAPTIST

24 As the messengers of John went away, Jesus began to speak to the crowds about John: "You did not go to the desert to see a reed shaken by the wind. 25 You did not go to see a man wearing fine clothes. Because those who wear fine clothes and live in luxury are to be found in the palaces of kings.

26 "No. You went out to see a Prophet, and more than a Prophet. 27 For this is the man of whom God tells us in the Scriptures: 'Listen, I send you my messenger to prepare the way for you.' 28 I tell you, among those born of women, no one was greater than John the Baptist. Yet the least in the Kingdom of God is greater than he. 29 The common people listened, and the publicans obeyed God by receiving the baptism of John. 30 But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected the dispensation which God had foreordained on their behalf. For they refused to be baptized by John."

CHILDISH CRITICISM

31 Then the Lord said: "To whom shall I compare the men of this generation, and what are they like? 32 They are like children sitting in the market-place and shouting to their play-mates: 'We played a jig for you, but you did not dance for us. We sang a dirge for you, but you did not weep with us.'

33 "For John the Baptist came. He was neither eating nor drinking, and you said: 'He is possessed by a demon.' 34 Now the Messiah has come. He is both eating and drinking, and you say: 'Look, he is a glutton, a drunkard, a friend of publicans and sinners.' 35 Nevertheless, divine wisdom has been vindicated by the achievements of all her Prophets."

THE SINFUL WOMAN

36 One of the Pharisees invited Jesus to dinner. So he went to his house and took his place at the table. 37 Thereupon a woman of the city, who was leading a sinful life, learned that he was having dinner at the Pharisee's house. She brought an alabaster flask of perfume, 38 stood behind him at his feet weeping, bathed his feet with her tears, wiped them off with her hair, kissed them, and anointed them with perfume.

39 When the Pharisee who had invited him saw this scene, he said to himself: "If this man were a Prophet, he would have known what kind of sinful woman is touching him."

40 Jesus answered him: "Simon, I have something to tell you." He asked: "What is it, Master?" 41 Jesus replied: "A certain money-lender had two debtors. One owed him a hundred dollars, and the other ten. 42 As they could not pay him, he cancelled what they owed him. Now which one of them would love him more?" 43 Simon answered him: "I suppose, the one for whom he cancelled most." Jesus said to him: "You are right."

44 Then he turned toward the woman and said to Simon: "Do you see this woman? I came to your house. You did not give me any water for my feet. But she has bathed my feet with her tears and wiped them off with her hair. 45 You did not give me a kiss. But from the moment I came in, she has not stopped kissing my feet. 46 You did not anoint my head. But she has anointed my feet with perfume.

47 "Therefore I tell you, her many sins are forgiven, because she has loved much. Whoever is forgiven little loves little also." 48 Then he said to her: "Your sins are forgiven."

49 Those who were dining with him began to ask themselves: "Who is this man who forgives even sins?" 50 Then he said to the woman: "Your faith has saved you. Go in peace."

CHAPTER 8

PREACHING THROUGH GALILEE

1 Soon afterwards, Jesus traveled through cities and villages, preaching and proclaiming the Kingdom of God. He was accompanied by the twelve Apostles, 2 and some women he had cured of diseases, scourges, evil spirits, and infirmities. Among them were Mary called Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons; 3 Joanna, the wife of Chusa, the manager of Herod; Susanna; and many others, who assisted him with their own means.

THE SOWER

4 Large crowds were gathered around him, and people flocked to him from every city. He preached to them in a parable:

5 "A sower went out to sow his seed. As he was sowing, some seed fell along the path. It was trampled upon and devoured by the wild birds. 6 Some fell upon the rock. But when it sprang up, it was withered, because it had no moisture. 7 Some fell among the thorns. But the thorns grew up with it and choked it. 8 Some fell on good soil, grew up, and yielded a hundredfold."

At the end of the parable, he exclaimed: "Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear."

9 His Disciples asked him what this parable meant. 10 He answered them: "It is granted to you to know the secrets of the Kingdom of God plainly. But all others must receive them in the form of parables. Thus they will look, but will not see. They will listen, but will not understand. 11 Now this is the meaning of the parable.

"The seed is the Gospel. 12 The ones along the path are those who hear it. But the devil comes and takes away the Gospel from their hearts. So they do not believe and are not saved.

13 "The ones on the rock are those who hear the Gospel and receive it with joy. But they are too shallow to plant it deep in their hearts. So they believe for a little while. But in the time of temptation they fall away.

14 "The ones among the thorns are those who hear the Gospel and pass on. For they are stifled by worries, wealth, and pleasures of life. So they produce nothing.

15 "The ones on good soil are those who hear the Gospel with a noble and generous heart. They hold it fast, and yield fruit with perseverance."

THE LAMP

16 "Nobody lights a lamp and covers it with a vessel or puts it under a bed. He places it upon a lampstand. Then those who enter will see the light. 17 For there is nothing hidden which will not be disclosed. There is no secret which will not be known and come to light. 18 Therefore listen carefully. Whoever has much will be given more. And whoever has little will be deprived even of what he imagines he has."

MOTHER AND BROTHERS

19 Thereupon his mother and his brothers came to see him. But they could not reach him on account of the crowd. 20 Then someone told him: "Your mother and your brothers are standing outside and want to see you." 21 But he answered them: "My mother and my brothers are those who listen to the Gospel and practice it."

THE STORM

22 One day Jesus boarded a ship with his Disciples and told them: "Let us cross over to the other side of the lake." So they put out. 23 As they sailed along, he fell asleep. Suddenly, a hurricane swept down the lake, swamped their ship, and endangered their lives. 24 So they came and roused him, saying: "Master, we are sinking."

He awoke and rebuked the wind and the raging waves. They lulled, and a calm fell. 25 Then he said to them: "Where is your faith?" Their terror turned to amazement. They said to one another: "Who is this man? He commands both the winds and the waves. And they obey him."

THE DEMONIAC

26 Later on, they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes. 27 As Jesus went ashore, he met a man from that city who had been possessed by demons for a long time. He did not wear any clothing and did not live in a house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, he shrieked, fell down before him, and said in a loud voice: "What do you want from me, Jesus, Son of the Most High? I beg you, do not torture me."

29 Jesus commanded the unclean spirit to go out of the man. For he had been possessed by the demon for a long time. He was confined and bound with chains and shackles. But he managed to break the fetters, and was driven by the demon into the desert.

30 Jesus asked him: "What is your name?" He answered: "Legion." For many demons had gone into him. 31 They begged him not to order them to depart into the abyss.

32 Now a large herd of swine was grazing on the mountainside. The demons implored him to allow them to go into them. He gave them leave. 33 So they came out of the man and went into the swine. Then the herd rushed headlong down the cliff into the lake, and was drowned. 34 When the herdsmen saw what had occurred, they ran away and reported the news in the city and in the country.

35 The inhabitants went out to see what had taken place. They came to Jesus and found the demoniac sitting at his feet clothed and in his right mind. They were amazed.

36 The eye-witnesses related to them how the demoniac had been cured. 37 Then all the people of the Gadarene neighborhood

asked him to go away from them. For they were terrified. So Jesus boarded the ship and returned home.

38 The demoniac begged to go with him. But Jesus dismissed him, saying: 39 "Go back to your home, and relate how God has healed you." So he went away and proclaimed all over the city what Jesus had done for him.

JAIRUS

40 On his return, Jesus was welcomed by the people, who were waiting for him. 41 Thereupon a man named Jairus, a leader of the synagogue, came to Jesus, fell down at his feet, and begged him to come to his house. 42 He had an only daughter, about twelve years old. And she was dying.

WOMAN WITH HEMORRHAGE

As Jesus was going along, the people pressed around him. 43 Now there was a woman who had been suffering from a hemorrhage for twelve years. She had spent all her money on doctors. But she could obtain no cure from anyone. 44 So she came up behind him, and touched the fringe of his garment. Her hemorrhage stopped immediately.

45 Then Jesus asked: "Who touched me?" As all denied it, Peter said: "Master, the people around are pressing you, and you ask who touched you?" 46 But Jesus replied: "Someone touched me. For I know that healing power went out from me."

47 The woman saw that she had not escaped his notice. So she came forward trembling, and fell down before him. She declared in the presence of all the people for what reason she had touched him and how she had been cured immediately. Jesus said to her: 48 "Courage, my daughter. Your faith has healed you. Go in peace."

THE DAUGHTER OF JAIRUS

49 While he was still speaking, a messenger came from the house of the leader of the synagogue and said to him: "Your daughter is dead. Do not trouble the Master any more." 50 Jesus heard it and said to him: "Do not be afraid. Only have faith, and she will be healed."

51 When he reached the house, he allowed no one to enter with him except Peter, John, James, and the father and mother of the child. 52 They were all weeping and lamenting her. But

he said to them: "Do not weep. She is not dead. She is asleep."

53 They laughed at him. For they knew that she was dead. Jesus put them all out. 54 Then he grasped her hand and called aloud: "My child, arise." 55 Her spirit returned, and she rose up immediately. Then Jesus asked them to give her something to eat. 56 Her parents were amazed. But he ordered them to tell no one what had occurred.

CHAPTER 9

INSTRUCTIONS TO THE APOSTLES

1 Then Jesus called his twelve Disciples together, and gave them power and authority to cast out all demons, and to cure all diseases. 2 So he sent them out to proclaim the Kingdom of God and to heal the sick.

3 He said to them: "Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money, nor an extra coat. 4 Whatever house you enter, remain there until you leave. 5 Whenever they do not receive you, depart from that city and shake off the very dust from your feet as a protest against them." 6 So they departed and went from village to village preaching the Gospel and healing the sick everywhere.

HEROD

7 When Herod the tetrarch heard all the deeds performed by Jesus, he was perplexed. Some said that John had risen from the dead, 8 some that Elijah had appeared, and others that one of the ancient Prophets had come back to life.

9 Herod said: "I have beheaded John. But who is this man about whom I hear such reports?" Consequently, he endeavored to see him.

10 Then the Apostles returned and related to Jesus all they had done. He took them along and withdrew apart to a deserted spot of a city called Bethsaida. 11 But the crowds learned of it and followed him. He welcomed them, spoke to them about the Kingdom of God, and restored to health those who needed to be healed.

THE FIVE THOUSAND

12 The day began to decline. So the twelve Apostles came to Jesus and said to him: "Dismiss the people and let them go

to the neighboring villages and farms, where they may lodge and find provisions. For we are here in a deserted place."

13 He answered them: "You give them something to eat." They said to him: "We have only five loaves and two fishes. Do you want us to go and buy food for all these people?" 14 For there were about five thousand men there.

Jesus said to his Disciples: "Have them sit down in groups of about fifty each." 15 They did so, and made them all sit down. 16 Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, looked up to heaven, blessed them, broke them, and gave them to his Disciples to pass to the people. 17 They all ate and were satisfied. The pieces left over filled twelve baskets.

PETER'S TESTIMONY

18 Later on, Jesus went to pray by himself, apart from the Disciples who accompanied him. Then he asked them: "Who do the people say that I am?"

19 They answered: "Some say, John the Baptist. Others say, Elijah. And others say that one of the ancient prophets has come back to life."

20 He asked them again: "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered: "You are the Messiah whom God has anointed." 21 He warned them and commanded them not to disclose this secret to anyone.

FIRST PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

22 Then Jesus added: "The Messiah will endure many sufferings. He will be rejected by the elders, the chief priests, and the scribes. He will be put to death. But he will rise again on the third day."

FOLLOWING JESUS

23 Then Jesus added: "Whoever wants to come after me, let him deny himself, let him take up his cross daily, and let him follow me. 24 For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it. But whoever loses his life for my sake will save it.

25 "It does not profit a man at all, if he gains the whole world, but loses or ruins himself. 26 For if anyone is ashamed of me and of my Gospel, the Messiah also will be ashamed of him when he comes in his glory, the glory of the Father and his holy Angels. 27 Indeed, I tell you, there are some standing here who will live to see the Kingdom of God."

THE TRANSFIGURATION

28 About eight days later, Jesus, accompanied by Peter, John, and James, went up on the mountain to pray. 29 As he was praying, the appearance of his countenance was altered and his garments became dazzling white. 30 Moreover, two men were talking with him. They were Moses and Elijah. 31 They appeared in glory and spoke of the martyrdom which he would undergo in Jerusalem.

32 Peter and his companions had been overcome by sleep. When they woke up, they saw his glory and the two men who were standing with him. 33 As they were parting from him, Peter said to Jesus: "Master, we would like to stay here. Let us erect three tents, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." For he did not know what he was talking about.

34 As he was still speaking, a cloud came and overshadowed them. They were frightened as they passed under the cloud. 35 Then a voice came out of the cloud saying: "This is my beloved Son. Listen to him."

36 At the sound of this voice they saw that Jesus was alone. But they kept silent and they told no one in those days of what they had seen.

THE DEMONIAC

37 On the following day, when they came down from the mountain, they were met by a large crowd. 38 Thereupon one of them shouted: "Master, I implore you, look at my son. 4 He is my only child. 39 Well, he is possessed by a demon, and suddenly he shrieks, he is convulsed, he foams, and he falls down exhausted. 40 I asked your Disciples to cast the demon out, but they could not."

41 Jesus said in reply: "O you faithless and perverse generation! How long must I be with you and put up with you? Bring your son here." 42 Even while the boy was coming, the demon flung him down and convulsed him. But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, healed the boy, and gave him back to his father. 43 They were all amazed at the majestic power of God.

SECOND PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

While they were all wondering at the miracles he was performing, Jesus said to his Disciples: 44 "Remember these words: The Messiah will be betrayed into the hands of men."

45 But they did not understand what he meant. Indeed their minds were blinded. So they could not perceive it. On the other hand, they were afraid to ask him about it.

THE LEADER

46 Then a discussion arose among them as to which one of them was the greatest. 47 Jesus guessed the question that was in their minds. So he took a child, made him stand by his side, 48 and said to them: "Whoever receives this child in my name, receives me. And whoever receives me, receives the Father who sent me. For the least among you all is the greatest."

49 Thereupon John said to him: "Master, we saw a man casting out demons in your name. But we stopped him, because he is not one of our followers." 50 Jesus answered him: "Do not stop him. For whoever is not against you, is for you."

THE SAMARITANS

51 When the time of his ascension approached, Jesus decided to go to Jerusalem. 52 So he sent messengers before him, who went ahead and entered a village of the Samaritans to make preparations for him. 53 But the Samaritans refused to receive him, because he was evidently going to Jerusalem.

54 When his Disciples, James and John, heard this report, they asked him: "Lord, do you want us to order fire to come down from heaven and consume them, as Elijah did?" 55 Jesus turned, reproved them, and said to them: "You have no idea how wrong you are. 56 For the Messiah did not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them." So they went on to another village.

SACRIFICES OF THE FOLLOWERS

57 As Jesus was going along the road, a man said to him: "I will follow you wherever you go." 58 Jesus answered him: "The foxes have their holes, and the birds of the sky have their nests. But the Messiah has no place to lay his head."

59 He said to another: "Follow me." He replied: "Let me first go and bury my father." 60 Jesus said to him: "Leave the dead to bury their dead. You must go and proclaim the Kingdom of God."

61 Another said to him: "I will follow you, my Lord, but allow me first to say farewell to my relatives at home." Jesus

answered him: "No one who puts his hand to the plough and then looks back is fit for the Kingdom of God."

CHAPTER 10

THE SEVENTY-TWO DISCIPLES

1 After these events the Lord appointed seventy-two other disciples and sent them ahead of him, two by two, to every city or place which he intended to visit.

2 He said to them: "The harvest is plentiful, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray to the master of the harvest to send out laborers for his harvest. 3 Go your way. Remember, I send you like lambs among wolves. 4 Carry neither purse, nor wallet, nor sandals. Do not stop to exchange greetings with anyone on the way.

5 "Whatever house you enter, say first: 'Peace to this house.' 6 If a peace-lover lives there, your blessing will rest upon him. But if not, it will come back to you. 7 Stay at the same house, eat and drink whatever they have to give you. For the laborer deserves his salary. Do not move from one house to another. 8 Whenever you visit a city and they welcome you, eat whatever they offer you. 9 Heal the sick there, and tell them: 'The Kingdom of God is drawing near to you.'

10 "But whenever you visit a city and they do not welcome you, go out into the open streets and say: 11 'We protest! We wipe off the very dust of your city that sticks to our feet. But you must know that the Kingdom of God is drawing near to you.' 12 I tell you that on the Day of Judgment the sentence will be more lenient for Sodom than for that city."

UNREPENTANT CITIES

13 "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles performed before you had taken place in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 Therefore on the Day of Judgment the sentence will be more lenient for Tyre and Sidon than for you. 15 And you, Capernaum, exalted as high as heaven, you will sink as low as Hades.

16 "Whoever listens to you, listens to me. Whoever rejects you, rejects me. And whoever rejects me, rejects the Father who sent me."

RETURN OF THE DISCIPLES

17 Then the seventy-two disciples returned with joy, saying: "Lord, even the demons obey us in your name!" 18 Jesus said to them: "I have seen Satan fall from heaven like lightning. 19 Remember, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents, scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy without any harm to yourselves. 20 Nevertheless, do not rejoice that the spirits obey you. But rejoice that your names are recorded in heaven."

21 At that moment Jesus was enraptured with joy, and said: "I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth. For you have concealed all these secrets from the wise and intelligent, but you have revealed them to children. Yes, Father, for such was your good pleasure.

22 "Everything has been handed over to me by my Father. No one knows who the Father is except the Son and anyone to whom the Son wishes to reveal him."

23 Then he turned to his Disciples, and said to them: "Blessed are the eyes which see what you see. 24 For I tell you, many prophets and kings wished to see what you see, and hear what you hear. But they did not see it and they did not hear it."

THE GOOD SAMARITAN

25 Once a lawyer rose up to test Jesus and asked him: "Master, what must I do to inherit everlasting life?" 26 Jesus answered him: "What is written in the Scriptures? What do you read in them?"

27 The lawyer replied: "You must love the Lord your God with your whole heart, your whole soul, your whole strength, and your whole mind; and your neighbor as yourself."

28 Jesus said to him: "You have answered rightly. Do that, and you will inherit everlasting life." 29 But the lawyer, wishing to justify himself, asked him: "Who is my neighbor?"

30 Jesus answered him: "A man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and he fell among bandits. They stripped him, beat him, and went off, leaving him half dead.

31 "By chance a priest was going down that road. He saw him, but passed by on the other side. 32 Likewise, a Levite came to that place and saw him, but passed by on the other side also.

33 "At last, a Samaritan who was traveling that way, came upon him, saw him, and took pity on him. 34 He went up to

him, poured oil and wine on his wounds, and bound them up. Then he put him on his mule, brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 "On the following day, he took out a couple of shillings, gave them to the innkeeper, and said to him: 'Take care of him, and whatever you spend besides, I will refund you on my way back.'

36 "Now which one of these three proved himself a neighbor to the man who fell among the bandits?" 37 The lawyer answered: "The man who showed mercy on him." Then Jesus said to him: "Go and do likewise."

MARTHA AND MARY

38 As Jesus went along, he entered a village. A woman named Martha received him in her home. 39 She had a sister called Mary, who sat at the Lord's feet and listened to his teaching.

40 Martha was over-busy with much serving. So she went to him and said: "My Lord, do you not care that my sister has left me to serve alone? Tell her to help me."

41 Jesus answered her: "Martha, Martha, you are worried and troubled about many things. 42 But only one thing is needful. Mary has chosen that good part which must not be taken away from her."

CHAPTER 11

PRAYER

1 One day Jesus was praying in a certain place. After his prayer was over, one of his Disciples asked him: "Master, teach us how to pray, as John taught his disciples." 2 He answered them: "When you pray, say:

"Our Father, who art in heaven: Hallowed be thy name. Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth, as it is in heaven. 3 Give us each day our daily bread. 4 And forgive us our sins, for we also forgive all those who trespass against us. And let us not fall into temptation, but deliver us from evil."

5 Then he added: "Suppose, one of you has a friend, to whom he goes at midnight and says: 'My friend, lend me three loaves. 6 For a friend of mine has just come to my house from a journey, and I have nothing to offer him.' 7 He will certainly feel like answering from within: 'Do not bother me. The door

is now locked. My children and I have gone to bed. I cannot get up and give you any bread.'

8 "Yet I tell you, he will get up and give him as many loaves as he needs, not because he is his friend, but because he is so persistent.

9 "Therefore I tell you: Ask, and you will receive. Seek, and you will find. Knock, and you will enter. 10 For whoever asks will receive. Whoever seeks will find. And whoever knocks will enter.

11 "No one of you fathers will give a stone to his son who asks him for some bread. No one of you will give a snake to his son who asks for a fish. 12 No one of you will give a scorpion to his son who asks him for an egg. 13 So if you, bad as you are, know enough to give good gifts to your children, your Father in heaven will be much more ready to give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him."

BLASPHEMY

14 One day, Jesus was casting out a dumb demon. When the demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke. The people were astonished. 15 But some of them said: "He is casting out demons through Beelzebub, the prince of demons." 16 Others wanted to test him and asked him for a sign from heaven.

17 Jesus guessed their thoughts, and said to them: "Every kingdom which is at war with itself will come to ruin, and one house will fall after another. 18 So if Satan is at war with himself, how can his kingdom endure? For you assert that I cast out demons through Beelzebub. 19 Now if I cast out demons through Beelzebub, through whom do your own disciples cast them out? Therefore they will be your judges. 20 But if I cast them out through the power of God, then the Kingdom of God has come upon you.

21 "When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own castle, his property is safe. 22 But when somebody stronger than he attacks him and overcomes him, he takes away the weapons on which he was relying, and distributes his spoils. 23 Whoever is not with me, is against me. And whoever does not gather with me, scatters.

24 "When an unclean spirit goes out of a man, he roams through deserts in search of rest and can find none. Then he says: 'I will go back to the house that I left.' 25 So he returns and finds his house swept and decorated. 26 Then he goes and

gets seven other spirits more wicked than himself. So they all enter and live there. Consequently, the man is worse off in the end than he was before."

27 As he made this statement, a woman in the crowd raised her voice and said: "Blessed is the mother who bore you and nursed you." 28 But he said: "Blessed are those who hear the Gospel and obey it."

THE MIRACLE OF JONAH

29 As the crowds were gathering around him, Jesus said: "This generation is wicked. They demand a miracle. But no miracle will be given them except the miracle of Jonah. 30 For as Jonah became a miracle to the people of Nineveh, so the Messiah will become a miracle to this generation.

31 "The Queen of the South will rise up on the Day of Judgment against the men of this generation and will condemn them. For she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon. Now here is a greater man than Solomon.

32 "The men of Nineveh will rise on the Day of Judgment against this generation and will condemn them. For they repented at the preaching of Jonah. Now here is a greater man than Jonah."

THE LAMP

33 "No one lights a lamp and puts it in a cellar or under a bushel. He puts it on the lampstand. Thus all those who come in will see the light.

34 "Your eye is the light of your body. When your eye is sound, your whole body is illuminated. But when your eye is unsound, then your whole body is dark. 35 Therefore be careful. Your light must not be darkness. 36 If your whole body is illuminated without any corner of it in darkness, it will be full of light, as when a lamp lights you with its rays."

THE WOES

37 As he was speaking, a Pharisee asked him to breakfast with him. So he went to his house and took his place at the table. 38 The Pharisee noticed that he did not wash his hands before breakfast. He was astonished.

39 Then the Lord said to him: "You Pharisees clean the outside of the cup and the plate, but inside you are full of

greed and wickedness. 40 You fools! You well know that the Creator of the outside made the inside too. 41 But give what you can in alms, and everything will be clean for you.

42 "Woe to you Pharisees! For you pay tithes for mint, rue, and every herb, but disregard justice and the love of God. You should have observed the latter, without neglecting the former.

43 "Woe to you Pharisees! For you love prominent seats in the synagogues and respectful salutations in the market-place.

44 "Woe to you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like unmarked graves over which men walk without knowing it."

45 Then one of the lawyers said to him: "Master, when you say that, you insult us also." 46 Jesus answered him: "Woe to you doctors of the law also! For you load men with insupportable burdens, but you will not touch them yourselves with one of your fingers.

47 "Woe to you! For you build monuments for the Prophets whom your forefathers killed. 48 So you testify to what your forefathers did and you approve it. For they killed them, and you build their monuments.

49 "This is why the Wisdom of God said: 'I will send prophets and apostles to them. They will kill them and persecute them.' 50 Thus this generation will be responsible for the blood of all the Prophets that has been shed since the creation of the world, 51 from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zechariah, who perished between the altar and the sanctuary. Yes, I tell you, this generation will be responsible for all this blood.

52 "Woe to you! For you have taken away the key to the door of knowledge. You have not entered it yourselves, and you have kept out those who tried to enter."

53 After this sermon, the Scribes and the Pharisees began to watch him closely, and provoke him to say a great deal, 54 in order to entrap him and accuse him with his own statements.

CHAPTER 12

THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES

1 In the meantime, the people gathered in thousands until they actually trod upon one another. Then Jesus began to say to his Disciples first of all: "Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 For there is nothing hidden

which will not be revealed, and there is no secret which will not be disclosed. 3 Whatever you have said in the darkness will be heard in the light. And whatever you have whispered in private rooms will be proclaimed upon the housetops.

4 "I tell you, my friends: Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, and can do nothing else after that. 5 I will show you whom to fear: Fear God who, after killing you, has power to cast you into Hades. Yes, I tell you, fear him. 6 You know that five sparrows are sold for two pennies. Yet not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God. 7 Why, even the hairs of your head are numbered. Therefore do not be afraid. You are more valuable than many sparrows.

8 "Moreover, I tell you: Whoever acknowledges me before men will also be acknowledged by the Messiah before the Angels of God. 9 But whoever denies me before men will also be denied before the Angels of God. 10 Whoever speaks against the Messiah will be forgiven. But no one who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will be forgiven. 11 When they bring you before the synagogues, the magistrates, and the authorities, do not be anxious how to answer or what to say. 12 For the Holy Spirit will teach you in that very hour what you ought to say."

AVARICE

13 While Jesus was preaching, someone in the crowd said to him: "Master, tell my brother to give me my share of our inheritance." 14 He answered him: "Who made me a judge or arbiter over you?" 15 Then he added: "Look out! Guard against all greed. For a man's life does not depend on the abundance of his possessions."

16 Then he narrated a parable to them and said: "There was a rich man whose estate yielded plentiful crops. 17 So he asked himself: 'What am I going to do? For I have no place to store my crops in.' 18 Then he answered himself: 'This is what I will do. I will pull down my storehouses and build larger ones. There I will store up my crops and my goods. 19 Then I will say to my soul: Now, my soul, you have plenty of wealth laid up for many years. Relax, eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.'

20 "But God said to him: 'You fool! This very night you must render up your soul. Then who will get what you have stored up?' 21 This will be the end of the man who lays up treasures for himself, but not with God."

DIVINE PROVIDENCE

22 Then Jesus said to his Disciples: "Therefore I tell you, do not worry about what you will eat to support your life, and what you will wear to protect your body. 23 By worrying you ruin your life which is more important than food, and you ruin your body which is more important than clothing.

24 "Look at the ravens. They neither sow nor reap. They have no storehouses nor barns. But God feeds them. You are certainly much more valuable than birds. 25 Which one of you by worrying can add a cubit to his span of life? 26 Therefore if you have no power in such a small matter, why do you worry about the rest?

27 "See how the lilies grow. They neither toil nor spin. Yet I tell you, even Solomon in all his glory was never dressed like one of them. 28 Now if God dresses so beautifully the grass, which is in the field today and is thrown into the oven tomorrow, he will much more clothe you, men of little faith.

29 "So do not seek what you will eat or drink, and do not worry about it. 30 For these are the comforts about which the Gentiles are worrying all over the world. Your Father knows that you need them. 31 But seek the Kingdom of God, and all these comforts will be given you besides.

32 "Do not be afraid, my little flock. For your Father has graciously given you his Kingdom. 33 Sell your possessions, and give alms. Provide yourselves with purses which never wear out, with inexhaustible treasures in heaven, which no thief can approach and no moth can destroy. 34 For your heart will be wherever you store up your treasures."

WATCHFULNESS

35 "Be prepared and keep your lamps burning, 36 like men waiting for their master to return home from a wedding. Be ready to open the door for him at once when he comes and knocks. 37 Blessed are those servants whom their master will find watching when he returns home. Well, I tell you, he will gird himself, he will have them sit at his table. Then he will go around and wait on them.

38 "Blessed are those servants whom their master will find watching, whether he comes late at night, or early in the morning. 39 You may be sure of this, that if the master of the house had known at what time the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have allowed his house to

be broken into. 40 Therefore you must be ready also. For the Messiah will come at an unexpected time."

41 Then Peter asked him: "My Lord, do you tell this parable for us, or for all alike?" 42 The Lord answered him: "Here is an opportunity for the faithful and wise steward, whom his master has put in charge of his household, to give its members their food supplies at the proper time. 43 Blessed is the servant whom his master on his return finds fulfilling his duty. 44 Indeed, I tell you, he will put him in charge of all his property.

45 "But that steward may say to himself that his master is not coming back for a long time. So he begins to beat the servants and the maids, to eat, to drink, and to get drunk. 46 Then the master of that steward will come back on a day when he does not expect him, and at an hour he does not know. Then he will punish him severely and assign him with the unbelievers.

47 "The servant who knew his master's wishes, but did not get ready and did not act upon them, will be flogged with many stripes. 48 But the servant who did not know, and did what deserved blows, will be flogged with few stripes. For of everyone to whom much has been given, much will be required. And of everyone to whom much has been entrusted, even more will be demanded."

GOSPEL CRUSADE

49 "I have come to bring fire on earth. I wish it were already kindled. 50 I have to receive a baptism, and I am impatient for its accomplishment. 51 You think that I have come to bring peace on earth. Not peace, I tell you, but discord. 52 From now on, if there are five people in a house, they will be divided, three against two and two against three. 53 They will be divided, father against son, and son against father; mother against daughter, and daughter against mother; mother-in-law against daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against mother-in-law."

RECONCILIATION

54 Moreover, he said to the people: "When you see a cloud rising from the west, you say immediately: 'It is going to rain.' And it does. 55 Again, when you see the south wind blowing, you say: 'It is going to be very hot.' And so it becomes.

56 You hypocrites! You know how to interpret the signs of
the sky and the earth. Then why can you not interpret the
signs of the present time?

57 "Why do you not judge what is right for yourselves?
58 When you are going with your opponent before the magistrate,
do your best on the way to settle with him. Otherwise, he will
drag you to the judge. The judge will hand you over to the
officer. And the officer will throw you into prison. 59 I tell you,
you will never get out again until you have paid your last penny."

CHAPTER 13

REPENTANCE

1 At that time, some people came up to Jesus and told
him about the Galileans whom Pilate had massacred while they
were offering their sacrifices.

2 He answered them: "You think that those Galileans were
worse sinners than any other Galileans, because they suffered
such a punishment. 3 I tell you: No. Unless you repent, you
will all perish likewise.

4 "Again, you think that those eighteen people who were
killed when the tower of Siloam fell upon them, were worse
offenders than any other inhabitants of Jerusalem. 5 I tell you:
No. Unless you repent, you will all perish likewise."

THE BARREN FIG TREE

6 Then he told them this parable: "A man had a fig tree
planted in his vineyard. He went to get its fruit, but found
none. 7 So he said to the vine-dresser: 'Listen! For three years
I have come looking for fruit on this fig tree. But I have
found none. Cut it down. Why should it waste the ground?'

8 "He answered him: 'My Lord, let it stand for this year
also, until I dig around it and manure it. 9 If it bears fruit
next year, well and good. If not, you can cut it down.' "

THE DEFORMED WOMAN

10 One day, Jesus was preaching in one of the synagogues
on the Sabbath day. 11 A woman was there who for eighteen
years had been obsessed by a spirit of infirmity. She was bent
down and could not straighten herself up at all.

12 When Jesus saw her, he called her and said to her:
"Woman, you are released from your infirmity." 13 Thereupon

he laid his hands upon her. She was made straight immediately, and she glorified God.

14 But the leader of the synagogue was indignant, because Jesus had healed her on the Sabbath day, and said to the people: "There are six days on which it is right to work. Come on them and be healed, but not on the Sabbath day."

15 The Lord answered him: "You hypocrites! Everyone of you unties his ox or his donkey from the stall on the Sabbath day and leads him away to water him. Now here is this woman, a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound for eighteen years. 16 Was it wrong that she was released from this bond on the Sabbath day?"

17 All his opponents were put to shame by his remarks, while all the people rejoiced over the glorious miracles which he performed.

THE MUSTARD SEED

18 Then Jesus said: "What is the Kingdom of God like? To what can I compare it? 19 It is like a grain of mustard seed that a man took and planted in his garden. It grew and became such a large tree that the birds of the sky built their nests in its branches."

THE YEAST

20 Again he said: "To what can I compare the Kingdom of God? 21 It is like yeast which a woman took and covered up in three measures of flour until it was all leavened."

THE NARROW GATE

22 So he went through cities and villages teaching on his way to Jerusalem. 23 Someone asked him: "Will only a few be saved?" He answered: 24 "Try to enter by the narrow gate. I tell you, many will try, but will not be able to enter.

25 "When the master of the house has gone in and shut the door, you will knock at the door, saying: 'Lord, open to us.' But he will answer you: 'I do not know where you come from.'

26 "Then you will begin to say: 'We ate and drank in your presence. You preached in our streets.' 27 But he will answer you: 'I tell you, I do not know where you come from. Depart from me, all you workers of iniquity!' 28 There you will wail and gnash your teeth when you see Abraham, Isaac,

Jacob, and all the Prophets in the Kingdom of God, while you are cast out. 29 Then many will come from east and west, from north and south, and they will sit at the table in the Kingdom of God. 30 Then some who are last will be first, and some who are first will be last."

JESUS AND HEROD

31 On that same day, some Pharisees came to Jesus, and said to him: "Go, get away from here, for Herod wants to kill you." 32 He answered them: "Go, and tell that fox: 'Listen, I cast out demons and I heal diseases today and tomorrow. But I will be through on the third day. 33 Nevertheless, I must go on today, tomorrow, and the next day. For it is impossible for a Prophet like me to die outside of Jerusalem.'

34 "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, killing the prophets and stoning the messengers of God! How often I have longed to gather your children around me, as a hen gathers her brood under her wings! But you refused. 35 Look! Now your house is desolate. And I tell you, you will not see me until the time when you will say: 'Blessed is the Messiah who comes in the name of the Lord!' "

CHAPTER 14

A MAN WITH DROPSY

1 On a Sabbath day, Jesus went to dine at the house of a leader of the Pharisees. So they were watching him. 2 Now there was a man in front of him who had the dropsy. 3 Jesus asked the lawyers and the Pharisees: "Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath day or not?" 4 But they made no answer. So he took him, healed him, and let him go.

5 Then he said to them: "If your donkey or your ox falls into a ditch on a Sabbath day, anyone of you would pull him out immediately." 6 They were unable to answer him.

PLACES OF HONOR

7 Then he noticed that the guests were choosing the best places at the table, and gave them this advice: 8 "When you are invited by anyone to a wedding banquet, do not sit down in a place of honor. For someone more distinguished than you may have been invited. 9 Then your host will come and tell

you: 'Make room for this gentleman.' Then you will proceed with shame to take the lowest place.

10 "On the contrary, when you are invited to a wedding banquet, go and sit in the lowest place. Then, when your host comes, he may tell you: 'My friend, go up higher.' So you will be honored in the presence of all the other guests. 11 For whoever exhalts himself will be humbled. And whoever humbles himself will be exalted."

DINNERS FOR THE POOR

12 Then Jesus said to his host: "When you give a luncheon or a dinner, do not invite your friends, or your brothers, or your relatives, or your rich neighbors. For then they will invite you in return and you will be repaid.

13 "When you give an entertainment, invite the poor, the maimed, the lame, and the blind. 14 Then you will be blessed, because they cannot repay you. You will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous." 15 One of the other guests who heard him, said: "Blessed is the man who will attend the banquet in the Kingdom of God."

THE GREAT BANQUET

16 Again, Jesus said to his host: "A man gave a great banquet, to which he invited many guests. 17 When the banquet hour came, he sent around his servant to tell the guests: 'Come, for everything is now ready.'

18 "All of them, with one accord, began to excuse themselves. The first one said to him: 'I have bought a piece of land. So I must go and look at it. Please excuse me.' 19 Another said: 'I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I am going to try them. Please excuse me.' 20 Another said: 'I have married. So I am unable to come. Please excuse me.' 21 The servant came back and reported these excuses to his master.

"Then the master of the house was angry and said to his servant: 'Go out quickly to the streets and squares of the city, and bring in the poor, the cripples, the lame, and the blind.' 22 The servant came back and reported: 'Master, I have done what you ordered, but there is still room.' 23 The master answered him: 'Go out to the roads and the hedges, and compel everybody to come in until my house is full. 24 For I tell you that none of the first invited guests will taste of my banquet."

FOLLOWING JESUS

25 Then Jesus turned to the large crowds which accompanied him, and said: 26 "Whoever comes to me, but does not renounce his father, mother, wife, children, brothers, sisters, and even his own life, cannot be my disciple. 27 Whoever does not take up his own cross and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 "For everyone of you who wants to build a tower sits down first and estimates its cost. Then he can see whether he has money to complete it. 29 Otherwise, when he has laid his foundation, he will be unable to finish the building. Then all those who see it will begin to ridicule him, 30 saying: 'This man started to build, and was unable to finish.'

31 "Likewise, a king, going to encounter another king in battle, sits down first and considers whether he is able with ten thousand men to meet the other king who is advancing against him with twenty thousand. 32 If he cannot, he will send envoys to the other king, while he is still far away, to sue for conditions of peace. 33 Therefore anyone of you who does not renounce all his possessions cannot be my disciple.

34 "Salt is good. But if it has been spoiled, how can it be restored? 35 It is fit neither for the land nor for the dunghill. It is simply thrown away. Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear."

CHAPTER 15

THE LOST SHEEP

1 All the publicans and sinners were drawing near Jesus to hear him. 2 So the Pharisees and the Scribes grumbled, and said: "This man receives sinners and eats with them."

3 Then Jesus told them this parable: 4 "Anyone among you who has a hundred sheep and loses one of them, will leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go in search of the one which is lost until he finds it.

5 "When he has found it, he puts it on his shoulders with joy, 6 and carries it home. Then he calls together his friends and neighbors, and says to them: 'Congratulate me, for I have found the sheep I lost.'

7 "Even so, I tell you, there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous men who need no repentance."

THE LOST COIN

8 "Likewise, a woman who has ten shillings and loses one
of them, will light a lamp, sweep the house, and search carefully
until she finds it.
9 "When she has found it, she calls together her friends
and neighbors, and says to them: 'Congratulate me, for I have
found the shilling I lost.'
10 "Even so, I tell you, there will be joy among the Angels
of God over one sinner who repents."

THE PRODIGAL SON

11 Then Jesus said: "A man had two sons. 12 The younger
of them said to his father: 'Father, give me my share of the
property.' So he divided his property between them.
13 "A few days later, the younger son gathered all his
possessions and went away to a distant country where he
squandered his fortune in riotous living. 14 After he had spent
everything, a famine arose in that country, and he began to
be in want. 15 So he went to work as the hired servant of a
citizen of that country who sent him to his fields to tend swine.
16 He was ready to fill himself with the husks the swine were
eating, but nobody would give him anything.
17 "Then he came to himself and said: 'How many of my
father's hired servants have more than enough to eat while I
am starving here! 18 I will get up, go to my father, and say
to him: Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you.
19 I am no longer worthy to be called your son. Receive me as
one of your hired servants.'
20 "So he arose and went to his father. While he was yet
a long way off, his father saw him, and had compassion on
him. He ran up, fell on his neck, and kissed him. 21 The son
said: 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you.
I am no longer worthy to be called your son.'
22 "But the father said to his servants: 'Bring quickly the
best garment and put it on him. Give him a ring for his hand,
and sandals for his feet. 23 Get the fatted calf and kill it. Let
us eat and celebrate. 24 For this son of mine was dead, and
he is now alive. He was lost, and he is now found.' So they
began to celebrate.
25 "Now his elder son was in the field. As he returned and
drew near the house, he heard music and dancing. 26 He called

one of the servants and asked him what it all meant. 27 He answered: 'Your brother has come, and your father has killed the fatted calf, because he has received him safe and sound.' 28 The older son was angry and refused to go in. His father came out and urged him to join them.

29 "But he answered his father: 'I have served you for so many years, and have never disobeyed a command of yours. Yet you have never given me a kid so that I might entertain my friends. 30 But when this son of yours came, who has devoured your fortune with harlots, you killed the fatted calf for him.'

31 "But the father answered: 'My son, you have been always with me, and all I have is yours. 32 Yet we had to celebrate and rejoice, because your brother was dead, and he is alive. He was lost, and he is found.'"

CHAPTER 16

THE SHREWD STEWARD

1 Then Jesus said to his Disciples: "There was a rich man who was informed that his manager was squandering his property. 2 Thereupon he called him and said to him: 'What is this report I hear about you? Give me an account of your stewardship. For you can no longer be my manager.'

3 "Then the manager said to himself: 'What am I going to do, now that my master is dismissing me from the stewardship? I cannot dig, and I am ashamed to beg. 4 I know what I will do, so as to win friends who will receive me into their houses when I am removed from the stewardship.'

5 "So he called his master's debtors one by one, and asked the first: 'How much do you owe my master?' 6 He replied: 'Eight hundred gallons of oil.' He said to him: 'Take your bill, sit down at once, and write fifty.' 7 Then he asked another: 'And how much do you owe?' He replied: 'One hundred bushels of wheat.' He said to him: 'Take your bill and write eighty.'

8 "His master praised the dishonest manager, because he had acted very shrewdly. For the sons of this generation are shrewder in their own sphere than the sons of light. 9 Therefore I tell you, make friends for yourselves by using your unrighteous wealth helpfully. Then, after death, you may be received into the eternal habitations."

GOD AND MAMMON

10 "The man who is trustworthy over a small sum, is trustworthy over a large sum also. The man who is untrustworthy over a small sum, is untrustworthy over a large sum also. 11 So, if you have proved untrustworthy in using unrighteous wealth nobody will entrust you with true riches. 12 And if you have been untrustworthy about what belongs to another, nobody will give you what is your own.

13 "No servant can serve two masters. For either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and oppose the other. You cannot serve God and mammon."

14 The Pharisees, who were avaricious, scoffed at him when they heard this statement. 15 He said to them: "You love to display your righteousness, but God knows your hearts. For what is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God.

16 "The Law and the Prophets prevailed until John came. Since then the Kingdom of God has been proclaimed, and everyone enters it enthusiastically. 17 But heaven and earth will pass away before a single dot of the Law is dropped.

18 "Whoever divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery. And whoever marries a woman who has been divorced from her husband commits adultery."

THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS

19 "There was a rich man dressed in purple and fine linen, who lived every day in luxury and splendor. 20 At his gate lay a poor man named Lazarus covered with sores. 21 He was longing to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table. Moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores. 22 The poor man died and was carried by the angels to Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died and was buried.

23 "In Hades, where he was tormented, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham far off, and Lazarus in his bosom. 24 He cried aloud and said: 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue. For I am consumed in this flame.'

25 "Abraham answered: 'My son, remember that you enjoyed your blessings in your lifetime, while Lazarus endured all his misfortunes. Now he is comforted here, and you are suffering there. 26 Moreover, there is a vast abyss between you

and us. So none can cross over from our side to yours, nor from your side to ours.'

27 "The rich man said: 'Then I beg you, father Abraham, send him to my father's house, 28 where I have five brothers. Let him warn them and prevent them from coming to this place of torture.' 29 Abraham answered him: 'They have Moses and the Prophets. Let them listen to them.'

30 "He said: 'No, father Abraham, if a messenger goes to them from the dead, they will repent.' 31 Abraham replied: 'If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.' "

CHAPTER 17

TEMPTATIONS

1 Then Jesus said to his Disciples: "Temptations inevitably have to come. But woe to the man who causes them. 2 He might better have a millstone hung around his neck and be thrown into the sea than lead astray one of these little ones."

FORGIVENESS

3 "Take heed to yourselves. If your brother wrongs you, reprove him, and if he repents, you must forgive him. 4 Even if he wrongs you seven times in the day and returns to you seven times, saying that he repents, you must forgive him."

FAITH

5 Then the Apostles said to Jesus: "Increase our faith." 6 The Lord said: "If your faith is as big as a mustard seed, you may say to this mulberry tree: 'Be uprooted and transplanted into the sea!' It will obey you."

GOOD-FOR-NOTHING SERVANTS

7 "You would not tell a servant who is plowing or tending sheep, when he has come in from the field: 'Come at once and sit down at my table.' 8 You would rather say to him: 'Get my supper ready, then dress yourself, and wait on me while I eat and drink. You can have your supper afterward.' 9 Moreover, do you thank the servant for carrying out your orders? I do not think you do. 10 So you also, when you have carried out your orders, should say: 'We are good-for-nothing servants. We have done only what it was our duty to do.' "

THE TEN LEPERS

11 On his way to Jerusalem, Jesus was passing between
Samaria and Galilee. 12 As he was entering a village, he was
met by ten lepers, who stood at a distance, 13 and cried aloud:
"Jesus, Master, have mercy on us."

14 When he saw them, he said: "Go and show yourselves
to the priests." Thereupon, as they went, they were cleansed.

15 Then one of them, when he noticed that he was healed,
turned back, glorifying God aloud, 16 fell on his face at the
feet of Jesus, and thanked him. He was a Samaritan.

17 Jesus asked: "Well, all ten were healed. But where are
the other nine? 18 How is it that no one has come back to
glorify God except this stranger?" 19 Then he said to him:
"Stand up, and go your way. Your faith has healed you."

THE MESSIAH

20 One day, Jesus was asked by the Pharisees when the
Kingdom of God would come. He answered them: "The Kingdom
of God is not coming visibly. 21 So the people will not say:
'Here it is!' or 'There it is!' For indeed, the Kingdom of God
is in your midst."

22 Then he said to his Disciples: "The time will come when
you will long to see the Messiah for one day only. But you will
not see him. 23 So when people tell you: 'Here he is!' or 'There
he is!' do not go, do not follow them. 24 For as the lightning
flashes and shines from one end of the sky to the other, so
the Messiah also will appear when his time comes. 25 But he
must first undergo many sufferings, and be rejected by this
generation.

26 "As in the time of Noah, so it will be also in the time
of the Messiah. 27 At that time, people were eating, drinking,
marrying, and given in marriage until the day that Noah
entered the ark. Then the deluge came and destroyed them all.

28 "Likewise, in the time of Lot, people were eating, drink-
ing, buying, selling, planting, and building. 29 But on the day
that Lot departed from Sodom, fire and brimstone rained from
heaven and destroyed them all. 30 So it will be also on the day
when the Messiah is revealed.

31 "On that day a man who is on the housetop must not
come down to take away his goods from his house. Likewise,
a man who is in the field must not come back home. 32 Remember

Lot's wife! 33 Whoever tries to save his life will lose it. And whoever loses his life will save it.

34 "On that night, I tell you, one of two men lying on one bed will be taken and the other left. 35 Again, one of two women grinding together will be taken and the other left. 36 Of two men in the field, one will be taken and the other left."

37 Then the Disciples asked him: "Master, where will all these disasters occur?" He answered them: "Right here. Because wherever there is a corpse, there the vultures will flock together."

CHAPTER 18

THE JUDGE

1 Then he told them a parable to teach them that they must always pray and never lose heart: 2 "In a certain city there was a judge who had no fear of God and no respect for man. 3 In that same city there was a widow who kept coming and saying to him: 'Vindicate me against my adversary.'

4 "For a time he refused. But then he said to himself: 'I have no fear of God and no respect for man. 5 But this widow bothers me. I will vindicate her. Otherwise, she will wear me out with her incessant visits.' "

6 Then Jesus added: "This is what the unrighteous judge said. 7 Now tell me, will not God vindicate his elect who cry to him day and night? 8 I tell you, he will vindicate them speedily. Yet, when the Messiah comes on earth, will he find men who believe in him?"

THE PUBLICAN AND THE PHARISEE

9 Then he narrated the following parable to certain men who were persuaded that they were righteous and looked down on others: 10 "Two men went up to the temple to pray. One of them was a Pharisee and the other a publican.

11 "The Pharisee stood up and prayed thus to himself: 'O God, I thank you that I am not greedy, unrighteous, and adulterous, like other men or like this publican here. 12 I fast two days in the week, I give tithes on all my income.'

13 "The publican stood far off and would not even lift up his eyes to heaven. He only struck his breast, and said: 'O God, be merciful to me a sinner.' 14 I tell you, the publican went back to his house more justified than the Pharisee. For whoever

exalts himself will be humbled. But whoever humbles himself will be exalted."

BLESSING OF CHILDREN

15 One day some women brought their babies to Jesus and asked him to bless them. The Disciples reproved them. 16 But Jesus called them up and said: "Let the children come to me, and do not try to hinder them. For the Kingdom of God belongs to those who resemble them. 17 Well, I tell you, whoever does not accept the Kingdom of God like a child will not enter it at all."

THE RICH MAN

18 One day, a certain official came to Jesus in order to test him and asked him: "Good Master, what must I do to inherit everlasting life?" 19 Jesus said to him: "Why do you call me good? No one is good except God alone. 20 You know the commandments: 'Do not commit adultery. Do not kill. Do not steal. Do not bear false witness. Honor your father and mother.' "

21 He answered: "I have observed all these commandments since my youth." 22 When Jesus heard his reply, he said to him: "You still lack one thing. Sell all your possessions, distribute the proceeds to the poor, and you will possess a treasure in heaven. Then come and follow me."

23 When he heard this advice he became sorrowful, for he was very rich. 24 Jesus looked at him and said: "How hard it is for those who possess wealth to enter the Kingdom of God! 25 For it is easier for a camel to pass through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God."

26 Those who heard this statement asked him: "Then who can be saved?" 27 He answered: "What is impossible for men is possible for God."

THE REWARD

28 Thereupon Peter remarked: "Look, we have left everything and followed you." 29 Jesus replied: "Well, I tell you, whoever has forsaken home, or parents, or brothers, or wife, or children for the Kingdom of God, 30 will receive many times more in this world, and everlasting life in the world to come."

THIRD PREDICTION OF THE PASSION

31 Later on, Jesus took the twelve Apostles aside and said to them: "Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem. Then everything written by the Prophets about the Messiah will be fulfilled. 32 For he will be handed over to the Gentiles. He will be ridiculed, insulted, spat upon, 33 flogged, and killed by them. But on the third day he will rise again." 34 His Disciples could make nothing of this prophecy. Their minds were blinded, and they could not understand what he meant.

THE BLIND MAN

35 As Jesus was approaching Jericho, he met a blind man who was sitting by the roadside begging. 36 When he heard the crowd going by, he asked what it meant. 37 They told him: "Jesus of Nazareth is passing by." 38 Then he cried aloud: "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!"

39 Those who were in front reproved him and told him to be quiet. But he cried out all the more: "Son of David, have mercy on me!" 40 So Jesus stopped and ordered him to be brought to him. When he came near, 41 Jesus asked him: "What do you want me to do for you?" He answered: "Master, let me receive my sight."

42 Jesus said to him: "Receive your sight. Your faith has healed you." 43 He regained his sight immediately, and followed him glorifying God. All the people who saw this miracle gave praise to God.

CHAPTER 19

ZACCHAEUS

1 Later on, Jesus entered and was passing through Jericho. 2 Now there was a rich man called Zacchaeus, chief of the publicans, 3 who wanted to see who Jesus was. But he could not because of the crowd. For he was small of stature. 4 So he went ahead and climbed a sycamore tree to see him as he was passing that way.

5 When Jesus reached that place, he looked up, saw him, and said to him: "Zacchaeus, come down quickly. For I must lodge at your house today."

6 He came down quickly and received him joyfully. 7 When his opponents noticed it, they all grumbled, saying: "He has gone to be the guest of a sinful man."

8 But Zacchaeus stood up and said to the Lord: "Listen, Master, I will give half of my possessions to the poor. And if I have defrauded anyone of anything, I will pay him four times as much."

9 Jesus said to him: "Today salvation has come to this house, for he also is a son of Abraham. 10 For the Messiah has come to seek and save those who are lost."

THE POUNDS

11 As the people listened attentively, Jesus went on and told them the following parable. For his impending entry into Jerusalem made them believe that the Kingdom of God would be manifested immediately.

12 Therefore he said: "A nobleman went to a distant country to receive a kingship for himself and then return. 13 So he called in ten of his servants, gave them one pound apiece, and said to them: 'Trade with them until I come back.' 14 But his fellow-citizens hated him, and sent a delegation after him to say: 'We do not want this man for our king.'

15 "When he had received his kingship and returned, he ordered the servants to whom he had given the money to be called in, and tell him what they had gained by trading. 16 The first one came in and said: 'Master, your pound made ten pounds.' 17 He said to him: 'Well done, good servant. Since you have been trustworthy with a small amount, you will be governor of ten cities now.'

18 "The second one came in and said: 'Master, your pound made five pounds.' 19 He said to him: 'Well done, good servant. Since you have been trustworthy with a small amount, you will be governor of five cities now.'

20 "Then another came in and said: 'Master, here is your pound, which I have wrapped up and kept in a napkin. 21 I was afraid of you, because you are a greedy man. You take up what you did not lay down. You reap what you did not sow. And you gather what you did not scatter.'

22 "He said to him: 'I will convict you out of your own mouth, you wicked servant. You knew that I am a greedy man; that I take up what I did not lay down; that I reap what I did not sow; and that I gather what I did not scatter. 23 Then why did you not deposit my money in the bank, so that I might have collected it with interest when I came back?'

24 "Thereupon he said to his attendants: 'Take the pound

from him and give it to the man who has the ten pounds.'
25 They said to him: 'Master, he has already ten pounds.'

26 "He answered them: 'The man who has much will be given more. And the man who has little will be deprived even of the little he has. 27 Now bring here those enemies of mine, who did not want me for their king, and execute them in my presence.' "

28 With these words he went ahead of them going up to Jerusalem.

THE MESSIANIC ENTRY

29 As Jesus was nearing Bethphage and Bethany by the mountain called the Mount of Olives, he sent two of his Disciples, 30 saying: "Go into the village opposite you. As you enter it, you will find a colt tied, on which no man has ever sat. Untie it and bring it here.

31 "If anyone asks you: 'Why do you untie it?' answer: 'The Lord needs it.' 32 The messengers went away and found everything as he had told them. 33 But as they were untying the colt, its owners asked them: "Why do you untie the colt?" 34 They answered: "The Lord needs it."

35 So they brought it to Jesus. Then they threw their garments on the colt and mounted Jesus on it. 36 As he rode along, many people spread their garments on the road.

37 As he was coming down the Mount of Olives and approaching the city, the whole throng of his Disciples began to praise God loudly and joyfully for all the miracles they had seen, 38 saying: "Blessed is the King who comes in the name of the Lord! Peace in heaven and glory in the highest!"

39 Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to him: "Master, reprove your Disciples." 40 He answered them: "I tell you, if they keep silence, the very stones will cry aloud."

LAMENTATION

41 As he approached and saw the city, he wept over it, 42 and said: "If you only knew, especially on this day, what could bring you peace. But your eyes are blinded. 43 For the day is coming when your enemies will fence you round about. They will surround you. They will hem you in on every side. 44 They will throw you and your children to the ground. And they will not leave one stone upon another within you, because you did not recognize the time of my visitation."

CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

45 Then Jesus entered the temple and began to throw out
those who were selling and buying there, 46 saying to them:
"It is written in the Scriptures: 'My house must be a house
of prayer.' But you have made it a den of bandits."

47 From that time on, he was preaching in the temple
daily. The high priests, the scribes, and the leaders were seek-
ing to destroy him. 48 But they hesitated to take any action.
For all the people hung upon his words.

CHAPTER 20

AUTHORITY

1 As Jesus was teaching the people and preaching the
Gospel in the temple, the high priests, the scribes and the
elders came, 2 and asked him: "Tell us what authority you
have for acting as you do, or who gave you that authority?"

3 He answered them: "I will ask you a question also.
4 Tell me, did the baptism of John come from heaven or from
men?" 5 They reasoned within themselves: "If we say: 'From
heaven,' he will ask us: 'Why did you not believe him?' 6 If
we say, 'From men,' the people will stone us to death. For
they are all convinced that John was a Prophet."

7 So they answered him that they did not know where
it came from. 8 Then Jesus said to them: "Neither will I tell
you by what authority I act as I do."

THE VINEYARD

9 Then Jesus narrated to the people the following parable:
"A certain man planted a vineyard, leased it to tenants, and
went abroad for a long time. 10 At the proper season, he sent
a servant to get his share of the fruits of the vineyard from
the tenants. But they beat him and sent him back empty-handed.
11 Again, he sent another servant. But they beat him, mistreated
him, and sent him back empty-handed also. 12 Again, he sent
a third servant. But they wounded him also, and threw him
out.

13 "Then the owner of the vineyard said: 'What can I do?
I will send them my beloved son. Perhaps, when they see him,
they will respect him.' 14 But when the tenants saw him, they
reasoned among themselves: 'This is the heir. Let us kill him

and inherit his property.' 15 So they drove him out of the vineyard and murdered him."

Then Jesus added: "Now what will the owner of the vineyard do with them? 16 He will come, he will put them to death, and he will lease his vineyard to other tenants." When the Jews heard it, they said: "God forbid."

17 But he looked at them and said: "This is the meaning of the Scriptural passage: 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the cornerstone.' 18 If anyone falls on that stone, he will be broken to pieces. If the stone falls on anyone, it will pulverize him."

TRIBUTE TO CAESAR

19 The chief priests and the scribes wanted to arrest Jesus at that very hour. But they were afraid of the people. For they knew that he had aimed the parables at them. 20 So they watched him and sent agents, who pretended to be honest men and tried to obtain from him a seditious statement, which they could use for handing him over to the authority and jurisdiction of the procurator.

21 So they asked him: "Master, we know that you are right in what you say and teach. You show no favor. And you preach the way of God in all sincerity. 22 Now is it right for us to pay tribute to Caesar or not?"

23 But he perceived their treachery, and said to them: "Why do you try to trap me? 24 Show me a coin. Whose effigy and inscription does it bear?" They answered him: "Caesar's."

25 He said to them: "Then render to Caesar what belongs to Caesar, and to God what belongs to God." 26 So they were unable to obtain from him a seditious statement in the presence of the people. On the contrary, they were amazed at his answer, and remained silent.

THE SADDUCEES

27 Then some Sadducees, who say that there is no resurrection, came to Jesus, 28 and asked him: "Master, Moses prescribed for us that, if a man dies childless leaving a wife, his brother must marry his widow and raise up a family for him.

29 "Now there were seven brothers. The first one married a wife and died childless. 30 The second one married her and died childless also. 31 Then the third one, and likewise all the

other brothers married her in turn and died childless. 32 Afterwards the woman died also. 33 Now at the resurrection whose wife will she be? For all of them married her."

34 Jesus answered them: "The children of this world marry and are given in marriage. 35 But those who are accounted worthy to attain that other world and the resurrection from the dead neither marry nor are given in marriage. 36 Moreover, they cannot die again. For they are equal to the Angels, and become children of God through the resurrection.

37 "Now even Moses indicated that the dead will rise again in the passage concerning the bush. There he calls the Lord 'the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' 38 So the Lord is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living, since all live in him." 39 Some of the scribes said: "Master, your answer was excellent." 40 So they did not dare to ask him any more questions.

SON OF DAVID

41 Then Jesus said to them: "What do they mean by saying that the Messiah is the son of David? 42 For David himself says in the Book of Psalms: 'The Lord said to my Master: Sit at my right hand 43 until I put your enemies under your feet.' 44 If David himself calls him Master, how can he be his son?"

THE SCRIBES

45 Then, while the people were listening, Jesus said to his Disciples: 46 "Beware of the scribes. They like to walk about in long robes. They love respectful greetings in the marketplace, front seats in the synagogues, and the places of honor at the banquets. 47 They devour the houses of widows, and they make endless prayers under any pretext. Therefore they will receive a heavier sentence."

CHAPTER 21

THE WIDOW'S MITE

1 Then Jesus looked up and saw the rich people putting their gifts into the treasury. 2 He noticed that a poor widow put in two copper coins, 3 and said to his Disciples: "Indeed, I tell you, this poor widow has put in more than all the others. 4 For they all offered gifts to God out of their abundance. But she, out of her poverty, offered all she had to live on."

THE TEMPLE

5 When Jesus was told how the temple was decorated with precious stones and votive offerings, he replied: 6 "The day will come when, of all these monuments you contemplate, not one stone will be left on another. They will all be thrown down."

THE END

7 His Disciples asked him: "Master, when will this disaster happen? What will be the preliminary signs of the approaching end?" 8 He answered: "Look out. Let no one mislead you. For many will come, saying: 'I am the Messiah!' and 'The time is drawing near!' Do not believe them. 9 Moreover, when you hear of wars and upheavals, do not be alarmed. For these events have to come first. but the end will not follow immediately."

10 Then he added: "Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. 11 There will be great earthquakes, famines, and plagues in various places. Terrible portents and omens will appear in heaven."

PERSECUTIONS

12 "But before all these events they will lay their hands on you and persecute you. They will deliver you to synagogues and prisons. They will drag you before kings and governors for my name's sake.

13 "This will be a time for you to bear testimony. 14 Therefore resolve not to meditate beforehand how to make your defense. 15 For I will give you speech and wisdom, which none of your adversaries will be able to refute or withstand.

16 "You will be betrayed even by your parents, your brothers, your kinsmen, and your friends. Some of you will be put to death. 17 You will be hated by all for my name's sake. 18 But not a hair of your head will perish. 19 By your endurance you will save your souls."

DISASTERS

20 "But when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, you must know that her devastation is at hand. 21 Then those who live in Judea must flee to the mountains. Those who live in the city must depart. Those who live in the country must

not enter the city. 22 For these are the days of vengeance, when all the prophecies of the Scriptures will be fulfilled.

23 "Woe to the pregnant and nursing women in those days! For there will be great distress in the country and fury against this people. 24 Many will fall by the edge of the sword. Many will be carried off as captives among all nations. And Jerusalem will be trampled down by the pagans until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.

25 "There will be signs in the sun, the moon, and the stars. The nations all over the earth will be dismayed and bewildered at the roaring of the sea and the waves. 26 Men will faint with fear and apprehension of what will happen to the world. For the powers of heaven will be shaken."

THE MESSIAH

27 "Then they will see the Messiah coming down from the clouds with great power and glory. 28 When all these events begin to take place, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption is drawing near."

29 Then he told them a parable: "Look at the fig tree and all the trees. 30 When they put out their leaves, you see for yourselves and know that summer is at hand. 31 So also, when you see these events take place, you will know that the Kingdom of God is drawing near. 32 Well, I tell you, this generation will live to see all these occurrences. 33 Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will not pass away."

WATCHFULNESS

34 "So look to yourselves. Do not let your hearts be overpowered by dissipation, drunkenness, and worldly cares. Otherwise, that day will overtake you suddenly. 35 For it will come like the springing of a trap on all those who live on the face of the earth. 36 Therefore watch at all times, and pray that you may be able to escape all these coming dangers and to stand before the Messiah."

37 Now in the daytime he was preaching in the temple. But in the evening he went off and spent the night on the Mount of Olives. 38 All the people came early in the morning to listen to his sermons in the temple.

CHAPTER 22

THE BETRAYAL

1 In the meantime, the festival of the Unleavened Bread, which is called the Passover, drew near. 2 The chief priests and the scribes were still planning how to kill Jesus. But they were afraid of the people.

3 Then Satan entered into Judas, called Iscariot, who was one of the twelve Disciples. 4 He went off and conferred with the priests, the scribes, and the captains of the temple how he could betray him to them. 5 They were delighted and agreed to pay him for it. 6 He accepted their offer, and sought an opportunity to betray him to them in the absence of the crowd.

PREPARATIONS

7 Then came the day of Unleavened Bread on which the Passover Lamb must be sacrificed. 8 So Jesus sent Peter and John, saying: "Go and make preparations for us to eat the Passover Supper." 9 They asked: "Where do you want us to prepare it?"

10 He answered them: "Listen. As you enter the city, you will meet a man carrying a pitcher of water. Follow him to the house he enters, 11 and tell the householder: 'Our Master asks you: Where is the guest room where I can eat the Passover Supper with my Disciples?'

12 "He will show you a large upper room furnished. Make your preparations there." 13 So they went, found everything as he had told them, and prepared the Passover Supper.

THE HOLY EUCHARIST

14 When the time came, he sat at the table with his Twelve Apostles. 15 Then he said to them: "I have longed eagerly to eat this Passover Supper with you before my Passion. 16 For I tell you, I will never eat one again until it is fulfilled in the Kingdom of God."

17 Thereupon he took the Cup, gave thanks, and said: "Take it and divide it among you. 18 For I tell you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine again until the Kingdom of God has come."

19 Then he took bread, offered thanks, broke it, gave it to them, and said: "This is my Body, which is given for you. Celebrate this Sacrament in my commemoration." 20 Likewise, he took the Cup also after the Supper, and said: "This Cup is my Blood of the New Testament which is poured out for you."

THE BETRAYER

21 "But look, the hand of the man who will betray me is at my side on this table. 22 The Messiah will go away, as it was determined. But woe to that man by whom he is betrayed." 23 Thereupon his Disciples began to question one another which one of them would perpetrate such an act.

THE LEADER

24 A dispute arose among them as to which one of them should be considered the greatest. 25 Jesus said to them: "The kings of the Gentiles enslave them, and their rulers are called Benefactors.

26 "But you must not do so. On the contrary, the greatest among you must become like the humblest, and the leader like the servant. 27 For which one is the greater? The master who sits at the table, or the servant who waits upon him? Of course, it is the master who sits at the table. Yet I am like a servant among you.

28 "You are the ones who stood by me in my trials. 29 As my Father has conferred a Kingdom on me, 30 so I confer on you the right to eat and drink at my table in my Kingdom, as well as to sit on thrones and judge the twelve tribes of Israel."

PREDICTION OF DENIALS

31 Then he said: "Simon, Simon, listen! Satan has obtained permission to sift all of you like wheat. 32 But I have prayed for you, Peter, that your faith may not fail. So when you are converted, strengthen your brethren."

33 Peter answered: "My Lord, I am ready to go with you to prison and to death." 34 Jesus said: "I tell you, Peter, before the cock crows today, you will deny three times that you know me."

THE SWORDS

35 Then he added: "When I sent you out without any purse, or bag, or shoes, did you lack anything?" They answered him: "Nothing." 36 He said to them: "But now, whoever has a purse, let him take it, and likewise a bag. Whoever has no sword, let him sell his mantle and buy a sword. 37 For I tell you that this passage of the Scriptures will be fulfilled in me: 'He was reckoned among the transgressors.' For whatever is written about me must be fulfilled." 38 They said: "Lord, look! We have two swords here." He answered: "That is enough."

39 Then he left the city and went up to the Mount of Olives, as he was accustomed to do. His Disciples followed him.

THE AGONY

40 When he reached the place, he said to his Disciples: "Pray that you may not fall into temptation."

41 Then he withdrew about a stone's throw from them, knelt down, 42 and prayed: "Father, if you are willing, remove this cup from me. Nevertheless, not my will, but your will be done."

43 An Angel appeared from heaven and strengthened him. 44 Jesus fell into an agony, and prayed more earnestly. His sweat looked like drops of blood, falling down upon the ground.

45 When he rose up from prayer, he went back to his Disciples and found them asleep from exhaustion. 46 He said to them: "Why do you sleep? Rise and pray that you may not fall into temptation."

THE ARREST

47 While he was still speaking, there came a detachment of guards, led by one of the twelve called Judas. He drew near to Jesus to kiss him. For this was the signal he had given them: "The one whom I will kiss, he is the man." 48 Jesus said to him: "Do you betray the Messiah with a kiss?"

49 When his Disciples saw what was coming they asked him: "Shall we strike with our swords?" 50 So one of them struck the servant of the high priest and cut off his right ear. 51 Jesus answered them: "That is enough." Thereupon he touched his ear and healed him.

52 Then he said to the chief priests, the captains of the

temple, and the elders who had come against him: "Have you come out with swords and clubs as against a bandit? 53 When I was with you day after day in the temple, you did not lay hands on me. But this is the best opportunity for you who belong to the powers of darkness." 54 Thereupon they arrested him, led him away, and took him into the house of the high priest.

THE DENIALS

Peter followed him at a distance. 55 Then the servants of the high priest kindled a fire in the middle of the courtyard and sat down together. Peter sat down among them. 56 A maid saw him sitting near the fire, looked at him, and said: "This man also was with him."

57 But he denied it, and said: "Woman, I do not know him." 58 Shortly after, a man saw him and said: "You are one of them too." Peter answered: "Man, I am not." 59 About an hour later, another man insisted: "This man was certainly with him, for he is a Galilean." 60 Peter replied: "Man, I do not know what you mean." Immediately, while he was speaking, the cock crowed.

61 Thereupon the Lord turned and looked at Peter. Peter remembered how the Lord had said to him: "Before the cock crows today, you will deny me three times." 62 Then Peter went out and wept bitterly.

BEFORE THE HIGH PRIEST

63 The men who were holding Jesus mocked him and beat him. 64 They blindfolded him, slapped him, and asked him: "Prophesy, who struck you?" 65 And they kept on abusing him and reviling him.

66 As soon as it was day, the elders of the people, the chief priests and the scribes assembled, brought Jesus before their council, and asked him: "Tell us, 67 are you the Messiah?" He answered them: "If I tell you, you will not believe. 68 If I ask you, you will not answer and you will not release me. 69 But before long I as the Messiah will be seated on the right hand of Almighty God."

70 They all asked him: "Are you the Son of God then?" He answered them: "I am, as you say." 71 Then they said: "What further testimony do we need? We have heard it ourselves from his own mouth."

CHAPTER 23

BEFORE PILATE

1 Then the officials of the assembly rose and brought Jesus
before Pilate. 2 They made the following accusations against
him: "This man is stirring up our people. He urges them to
refuse taxes to Caesar. And he claims to be the Messianic King."

3 Thereupon Pilate asked him: "Are you the King of the
Jews?" He answered: "Yes, as you say." 4 Then Pilate said
to the chief priests and the crowd: "I do not find this man
guilty at all."

5 But they persisted and said: "He stirs up the people by
his teaching all over Judea. He began in Galilee and he has
come here now."

BEFORE HEROD

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man
was a Galilean. 7 When he learned that he belonged to the
jurisdiction of Herod, he sent him to Herod who happened to
be in Jerusalem during those days.

8 When Herod saw Jesus, he was very glad. He had wanted
for a long time to see him, because he had heard so much about
him, and he was hoping to see some miracle performed by him.
9 He asked him many questions. But Jesus gave him no answer.
10 The Scribes and the high priests stood by and accused him
vehemently.

11 Herod and his soldiers treated him with scorn and
ridicule. Then he arrayed him in a gorgeous robe and sent him
back to Pilate. 12 So Herod and Pilate became friends on that
day. For they had been enemies formerly.

BARABBAS

13 Then Pilate called the chief priests, the leaders, and the
people, 14 and said to them: "You brought me this man on a
charge of stirring up the people. Well, I have examined him
before you and I did not find this man guilty of any of your
accusations against him. 15 Neither did Herod. For he sent
him back to us. Certainly he has not committed any capital
crime. 16 Therefore I will chastise him and release him." 17 For
at the festival he was obliged to release one prisoner for them.

18 But they all shouted together: "Away with him! Release
Barabbas for us." 19 The latter had been thrown into prison

for an insurrection which occurred in the city and for murder. 20 Therefore Pilate, who wanted to release Jesus, spoke to them again. 21 But they kept shouting: "Crucify him, crucify him!"

22 For the third time, Pilate said to them: "What crime has he committed? I have not found him guilty of any capital crime. Therefore I will chastise him and let him go."

23 But they persisted and demanded loudly that he should be crucified. Their shouts and those of the high priests prevailed. 24 So Pilate gave his consent and granted their demand. 25 He released for them the man who had been thrown into prison for insurrection and murder. But he inflicted on Jesus the punishment they wished.

THE CYRENIAN

26 As they led Jesus away, they seized a Cyrenian called Simon, who was coming in from the country, and forced him to carry on his back the Cross behind Jesus.

THE CRUCIFIXION

27 Jesus was followed by a large crowd of people and of women who bewailed him and lamented him. 28 But he turned to them and said: "Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. 29 For soon the day will come when men will say: 'Blessed are the barren women, who have never borne nor nursed any children.' 30 Then they will begin to say to the mountains: 'Fall on us!' And to the hills: 'Cover us.' 31 For if men cut down a green tree today, you can imagine what they will do to the dead wood of Jerusalem tomorrow."

32 Two criminals also were led away to be put to death with Jesus. 33 When the soldiers arrived at a place which is called the Skull, they crucified him and the criminals, one on his right and one on his left. 34 Jesus said: "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." The soldiers cast lots to divide his garments. 35 The people stood by watching. The leaders jeered at him and said: "He saved others. Let him save himself, if he is the Messiah, the elect of God."

36 The soldiers also mocked him, came up to him, offered him vinegar, 37 and said: "If you are the King of the Jews, save yourself." 38 There was also an inscription placed over

him in Greek, Roman, and Hebrew characters: "This is the King of the Jews."

THE TWO BANDITS

39 One of the crucified criminals abused him, and said: "If you are the Messiah, save yourself and us." 40 But the other reproved him and said: "Have you no fear of God? You are undergoing the same penalty as he. 41 We suffer justly indeed, for we are receiving the due reward of our misdeeds. But this man has done nothing wrong."

42 Then he said to Jesus: "Remember me, O Lord, when you come into your Kingdom." 43 Jesus answered him: "Well, I tell you, today you will be with me in Paradise."

DEATH OF JESUS

44 It was now about the sixth hour. Darkness overspread the whole country until the ninth hour. 45 The sun was darkened, and the curtain of the temple was rent in two. 46 Then Jesus cried aloud: "Father, I commit my spirit into your hands." With these words he expired.

47 When the centurion saw what had happened, he glorified God and said: "Indeed this was a righteous man." 48 All the crowd of those who had gathered to witness this spectacle, when they saw these events, returned home striking their breasts. 49 All his acquaintances and the women who had followed him from Galilee stood at a distance watching these occurrences.

BURIAL

50 Now there was a man called Joseph, a member of the council, a good and righteous man. 51 He had not concurred in the decision and the action of his colleagues. He was from the Jewish town of Arimathea and waited for the Kingdom of God.

52 This man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. 53 Then he took it down, wrapped it in a linen shroud, and laid it in a sepulchre fashioned out of the rock where no one was laid before. 54 It was the day of Preparation, and the Sabbath was beginning.

55 The women who had come with him from Galilee followed, saw the tomb, and how his body was laid. 56 Then they returned, and prepared perfumes and myrrh. On the Sabbath day, they rested according to the commandment.

CHAPTER 24

THE RESURRECTION

1 Early in the morning of the first day of the week, the Myrrh-bearers and their friends went to the tomb with the perfumes they had prepared. 2 They found the stone rolled away from the tomb. 3 But when they went inside, they did not find the body of the Lord Jesus. 4 While they were wondering about it, two men in dazzling raiment suddenly appeared in front of them. 5 The women were terrified and bowed their faces to the ground.

But the men told them: "Why do you look among the dead for the living one? 6 He is not here. For he has risen. Remember that while he was still in Galilee, 7 he foretold you that the Messiah would be betrayed into the hands of sinful men, that he would be crucified, and that he would rise on the third day."

8 Then they remembered his predictions. 9 So they returned from the tomb and reported this news to the eleven Apostles and all the other Disciples. 10 Now it was Mary Magdalene, Joanna, Mary the mother of James, and their friends who told this story to the Apostles. 11 But they thought it was all nonsense, and they did not believe them.

12 Peter, however, got up, ran to the tomb, stooped down, saw nothing but the linen bandages, and went away wondering at what had happened.

EMMAUS

13 On that very day, two of the Disciples were on their way to a village called Emmaus about seven miles from Jerusalem. 14 They were talking about all these events. 15 While they were discussing and debating, Jesus himself approached and walked with them. 16 But their eyes were blinded, and they could not recognize him.

17 He asked them: "What are you talking about? And why do you look so sad?" 18 One of them called Cleopas answered him: "Are you the only visitor in Jerusalem who does not know what has happened there in these days?"

19 He asked them again: "What was it?" They replied: "It was about Jesus of Nazareth, a prophet, mighty in deed and word before God and all the people. 20 Our chief priests and leaders delivered him to be sentenced to death and crucified.

21 "We hoped that he would be the redeemer of Israel.

Now this is the third day since these events have occurred. 22 In the meantime, some of our women have startled us. For they went to the tomb early in the morning. 23 They could not find his body. And they came back saying that they had seen a vision of Angels, who declared to them that he is alive. 24 So some of us went to the tomb and found things exactly as the women had stated. But they did not see Jesus."

25 Then he told them: "O foolish and dull-witted men, unable to believe what the Prophets have foretold! 26 You know that Christ had to endure this passion and enter his glory." 27 Then, beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he interpreted the passages referring to himself throughout the Scriptures.

28 In the meantime, they approached the village to which they were walking. He pretended to be going further. 29 But they pressed him, saying: "Stay with us, for it is late and it is getting dark." He consented to stay with them.

30 When he sat down at the table with them, he took the bread, blessed it, broke it, and gave it to them. 31 Thereupon their eyes were opened and they recognized him. But he vanished from their sight.

32 Then they said to one another: "This was the reason why our hearts burned within us when he was talking to us on the road and interpreting the Scriptures for us." 33 So they got up immediately and returned to Jerusalem.

There they found the eleven Apostles and their friends gathered together, 34 who told them that the Lord had really risen from the dead and that he had appeared to Simon. 35 Then they related their own experience on the road and how they recognized him when he broke the bread.

MANIFESTATION TO THE ELEVEN

36 As the Disciples were discussing this incident, Jesus stood in their midst, and said: "Peace unto you." 37 Frightened and terrified, they thought that they were seeing a ghost. 38 But he said to them: "Why are you upset and perplexed? Look at my hands and my feet, and be assured that it is really I. 39 Feel me and see for yourselves. A ghost has not flesh and bones, as you see I have."

40 After these words he showed them his hands and his feet. 41 Still they could not believe their eyes, as they were wild with joy. Then he asked them: "Have you anything here

to eat?" 42 They gave him a piece of broiled fish and a honeycomb. 43 He took them and ate them in their presence.

FINAL INSTRUCTIONS

44 Then he told them: "While I was still with you, I especially emphasized that all the prophecies referring to me in the Law of Moses, in the Prophets, and in the Psalms must be fulfilled." 45 Thereupon he enlightened their minds and made them understand the Scriptures.

46 He added: "It was written in the Scriptures that Christ should suffer, and rise from the dead on the third day, 47 that repentance and remission of sins should be proclaimed in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. 48 You must bear testimony to all these facts. 49 Remember, I will send you the Comforter whom my Father has promised you. Therefore stay in the city of Jerusalem until you are invested with power from on high."

ASCENSION

50 Then he led them out as far as Bethany, lifted up his hands, and blessed them. 51 While he was still blessing them, he parted from them, and was carried up to heaven. 52 They worshipped him, returned to Jerusalem with great joy, 53 and remained continually in the temple praising and glorifying God.

THE HOLY GOSPEL
ACCORDING TO SAINT JOHN

CHAPTER 1

THE WORD OF GOD

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was by
God, and the Word was God. 2 He was by God in the very
beginning. 3 Everything came into being through him, and no
existence was created apart from him. 4 In him there was life,
and that life was the Light of men. 5 That Light shines in
the darkness. But the darkness cannot overpower it.

HIS MISSION

6 A man whose name was John was sent by God. 7 He
came as a witness to bear testimony to the Light, and to help
all men to believe through him. 8 He was not the Light. He
came only to bear testimony to the Light. 9 The true Light is
that which enlightens every man coming into the world.

10 He was in the world, and the world was made through
him. Yet the world did not recognize him. 11 He came to his
own home. Yet his own people did not receive him. 12 But he
empowered all those who received him and who believed in his
name to become children of God, 13 because they owe their
rebirth not to human blood nor to the will of the flesh, but
to God.

HIS INCARNATION

14 So the Word became flesh and dwelt among us. We have
seen his glory, such as belongs to the only-begotten Son of the
Father, full of grace and truth. 15 John testified to him when
he cried: "This is the one of whom I said: 'He comes after me,
but he is above me, because he existed before me.'" 16 We
have all received from his abundance grace upon grace. 17 For
the Law was given through Moses. But grace and truth came
through Jesus Christ. 18 No man has ever seen God. The only-
begotten Son, who abides in the Father's bosom, revealed him
to us.

JOHN'S TESTIMONY

19 Here is the testimony of John when the Jews of Jerusalem sent priests and asked him: "Who are you?" 20 He asserted, he did not dissemble, he asserted openly: "I am not the Messiah."

21 For the second time, they asked him: "Who are you then? Are you Elijah?" He answered: "I am not." For the third time, they asked him: "Are you the Prophet?" He answered: "No."

22 For the fourth time they asked him: "Who are you then? Tell us, so that we may give an answer to those who sent us. What have you to say for yourself?" 23 He replied: "I am preaching in the desert: 'Straighten out the road of the Lord,' as the Prophet Isaiah said."

24 Now, those who had been sent were Pharisees. 25 At last, they asked him: "Then why do you baptize, if you are neither the Messiah, nor Elijah, nor the Prophet?"

26 He answered them: "I baptize with water. But in your midst is standing one whom you do not recognize. 27 He comes after me, but he is so superior to me that I am not worthy to untie the strap of his sandal." 28 These events took place in Bethany, beyond the Jordan, where John was baptizing. 29 On the following day, John saw Jesus coming to him, and said: "Here is the Lamb of God, who takes away the sins of mankind. 30 This is the one of whom I said: 'After me comes a man who is above me, because he existed before me.' 31 I did not know him myself. But I came to baptize with water for this purpose, that he might be manifested to Israel."

32 So John testified saying: "I saw the Holy Spirit descending from heaven like a dove and remain over him. 33 I did not know him myself. But God who sent me to baptize with water, said to me: 'The man on whom you see the Holy Spirit descend and remain, is the one who will baptize with the Holy Spirit.' 34 Now I have seen him and I am testifying that he is the Son of God."

THE FIRST APOSTLES

35 On the next day, John was standing with two of his Disciples. 36 He looked at Jesus, as he walked about, and said: "Here is the Lamb of God."

37 The two Disciples heard his remark and followed Jesus. 38 He turned around, saw them following, and asked them:

"What do you want?" They answered him: "Rabbi, which translated means Master, where are you staying?" 39 He replied: "Come and see." So they went to see where he was staying, and stayed with him the rest of that day. It was then about four o'clock in the afternoon.

40 One of the two Disciples, who had heard John's remark and followed Jesus, was Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter. 41 The first thing he did was to find his brother Simon and tell him: "We have found the Messiah," which translated means Christ.

42 Then he brought him to Jesus. Jesus looked at him and said: "You are Simon, the son of John; your name will be Kephas," which translated means Peter.

43 On the following day, Jesus decided to leave for Galilee, where he found Philip, and told him: "Follow me." 44 Now Philip was from Bethsaida, the home town of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip found Nathanael, and said to him: "We have found the man of whom Moses and the Prophets wrote in the Scriptures, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph." 46 Nathanael replied: "Can anything good come from Nazareth?" Philip told him: "Come and see."

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming toward him, and said of him: "Here is a genuine Israelite, in whom there is no guile." 48 Nathanael asked him: "How do you know me?" Jesus answered him: "Even before Philip called you, I saw you while you were under the fig tree."

49 Nathanael said: "Rabbi, you are the Son of God, you are the King of Israel." 50 Jesus said to him: "You believe, because I told you I had seen you under the fig tree. You will see greater wonders than that."

51 Then he added: "Well, well, I assure you, from now on, you will see heaven open wide and the Angels of God ascending and descending upon the Messiah."

CHAPTER 2

THE WEDDING AT CANA

1 On the third day, a wedding took place at Cana in Galilee. The Mother of Jesus was there. 2 Jesus and his Disciples were also invited to the wedding.

3 As the wine ran short, the Mother of Jesus told him: "They have no wine left." 4 Jesus answered her: "Mother, what

does it matter to me and to you? My time has not yet come."
5 Then his Mother said to the servants: "Do whatever he tells
you."

6 Now there were six stone water-jars standing there ready for the Jewish custom of ritual purification, each one of them containing two or three measures apiece.

7 Jesus said to the servants: "Fill the jars with water." So they filled them up to the brim. 8 Then he added: "Now, draw some of it off, and give it to the master of ceremonies." They did so.

9 The master of ceremonies tasted the water which had been turned into wine. But he did not know where it came from. Only the servants who had drawn the water, knew. So he called the bridegroom 10 and told him: "Everybody serves the good wine first, and the inferior wine after the guests have become drunk. But you have kept the good wine until now."

11 This miracle at Cana in Galilee was the first one which Jesus performed and through which he manifested his glory. Then his Disciples believed in him. 12 After this incident, he went to Capernaum with his Mother, his brethren, and his Disciples. They remained there for a few days.

CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

13 Then, as the Jewish Passover was drawing near, Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 14 In the temple he found the merchants selling oxen, sheep, and pigeons, and the money-changers busy with their trade. 15 So he made a whip of cords, and drove them all out of the temple with their sheep and oxen. He scattered the coins of the money-changers and overturned their tables. 16 He said to the pigeon-sellers: "Take these birds away. Do not turn my Father's house into a market." 17 Then his Disciples remembered the Scriptural passage: "I am consumed by zeal for your house, O Lord."

18 Thereupon, the Jews approached him and asked him: "What evidence of authority can you show us for your acts?" 19 Jesus answered them: "Tear down this temple, and in three days I will rebuild it."

20 The Jews replied: "It took forty-six years to build this temple, and you are going to rebuild it in three days?" 21 But what he was speaking of was the temple of his body. 22 Therefore, when he had risen from the dead, his Disciples recalled

what he had said, and believed the Scriptures and the prophecy Jesus had made.

23 While he was in Jerusalem at the Passover Festival, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles he had performed. 24 But Jesus did not trust them. He knew all men, 25 and did not need any information about them. He could guess their thoughts.

CHAPTER 3

NICODEMUS

1 There was a man named Nicodemus, a Pharisee, and a leader of the Jews. 2 This man came to Jesus at night, and said to him: "Master, we know that you have been sent by God to teach us. For without divine power you could not perform the miracles you do."

3 Jesus answered him: "Well, well, I tell you, no man can see the Kingdom of God unless he is reborn from above."

4 Nicodemus asked him: "How can a man be reborn when he is old? He cannot enter his mother's womb and be born over again."

5 Jesus replied: "Well, well, I tell you, no man can enter the Kingdom of God unless he is reborn through water and through the Holy Spirit. 6 Whoever is born of the flesh is physical, and whoever is born of the Holy Spirit is spiritual.

7 "Do not be surprised when I tell you that you must be reborn. 8 The Holy Spirit blows like the wind wherever it chooses. You hear its sound. But you do not know where it comes from or where it goes. So it is with every man who is born of the Holy Spirit."

9 Nicodemus asked him: "How can such a rebirth take place?" 10 Jesus answered him: "You are a teacher of Israel and you should be able to understand it. 11 Well, well, I tell you, I speak of what I know, and I proclaim what I have seen. But you do not accept my testimony. 12 If you do not believe me when I speak to you about earthly trifles, how can you believe me when I speak to you about heavenly doctrines?

13 "The Messiah, who descended from heaven, is the only one who ascended into heaven, where he is dwelling. 14 Now, as Moses lifted up the serpent in the desert, so must the Messiah be lifted up also. 15 Then whoever believes in him will not perish, but will find everlasting life.

16 "God loved men so much that he gave up his only-

begotten Son for them. For whoever believes in him will not perish, but will find eternal life. 17 God did not send his Son to mankind to condemn them, but to save them through him. 18 Whoever believes in him is not condemned. Whoever does not believe in him, has already been condemned. Because he has not believed in the name of the only-begotten Son of God.

19 "The reason of the condemnation is that the Light has come into the world, and men preferred darkness to Light. Because their deeds were evil. 20 For anyone who does evil hates Light and will not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. 21 But whoever acts righteously comes to the Light, so that his deeds may be seen clearly. For he has acted according to the commandments of God."

JOHN AND JESUS

22 After this incident Jesus, accompanied by his Disciples, went to the land of Judea where he stayed with them and baptized. 23 John also was baptizing in Enon near Salim. There was plenty of water there. So people came to him and were baptized. 24 For John had not yet been imprisoned.

25 Then a dispute arose between some of John's Disciples and a Jew about purification. 26 So they came to John and told him: "Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side of the Jordan, and to whom you bore testimony, is now baptizing, and everybody is going to him."

27 John answered them: "No one can receive any authority unless it has been given to him from heaven. 28 You yourselves are my witnesses. I have told you that I am not the Messiah, but only his forerunner. 29 Whoever has the bride is the bridegroom. The bridegroom's friend, who stays by him and listens to him, is filled with joy at the bridegroom's voice. Now this joy of mine is complete. 30 He must go up, and I must go down.

31 "He who comes from above is above all others. He who springs from earth belongs to earth and speaks the language of earth. But he who comes from heaven is above all those springing from earth. 32 He bears testimony to what he has seen and heard. Yet no one accepts his testimony. 33 But whoever accepts his testimony, has declared that the Gospel is true.

34 "For the Messiah who has been sent by God proclaims the divine doctrines, and distributes the rich gifts of the Holy Spirit. 35 The Father loves the Son and has given everything

into his hand. 36 Whoever believes in the Son possesses everlasting life. But whoever disobeys the Son will never inherit life, because the retribution of God hangs over him continually."

CHAPTER 4

THE SAMARITAN WOMAN

1 The Lord knew that the Pharisees were alarmed. They had been told that Jesus was making and baptizing more converts than John. 2 As a matter of fact, it was not Jesus himself, but his Disciples who baptized them. 3 So he left Judea and returned again to Galilee.

4 He was obliged to go through Samaria. 5 So he came to a city of Samaria called Sychar, near the tract of land which Jacob gave to his son Joseph. 6 Now Jacob's well was there. So Jesus, tired after his journey, sat down at the spring. It was then about noon.

7 A woman from Samaria came to draw water. Jesus said to her: "Give me a drink." 8 For his Disciples had gone to the city to buy food.

9 The Samaritan woman asked him: "How can you, a Jew, ask me, a Samaritan, to give you a drink?" For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans.

10 Jesus answered her: "If you knew the gift of God and the man who has told you, 'Give me a drink,' you would have asked him, and he would have given you living water."

11 The woman said: "My Lord, you have no bucket, and the well is deep. Where do you get that living water? 12 Are you greater than our Father Jacob, who gave us this well, and drank from it himself as well as his sons and his cattle?"

13 Jesus answered her: "Anyone who drinks this water will be thirsty again. But whoever drinks the water I give him, will never be thirsty any more. 14 The water I give him will be a fountain of water leaping up to eternal life." 15 The woman said to him: "My Lord, give me that water so that I may never be thirsty, nor come all the way here to draw water."

16 Jesus said to her: "Go home, call your husband, and come back here." 17 The woman answered him: "I have no husband." Jesus said to her: "You are right in saying, 'I have no husband.' 18 You have had five husbands, and the one you have now is not your husband. You have told me the truth."

19 The woman replied: "My Lord, I see that you are a prophet. 20 Now our ancestors have worshipped on this

mountain. But you say that the proper place for worship is Jerusalem."

21 Jesus said to her: "Woman, believe me, the hour is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem. 22 You worship something you do not know. We worship what we do know, for salvation comes from the Jews. 23 But the hour is coming, and it has come already, when the true worshippers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for these are the worshippers that the Father wants. 24 God is a spirit, and his worshippers must worship him in spirit and truth."

25 The woman replied: "I know that the Messiah, namely Christ, is coming. When he comes, he will tell us everything." 26 Jesus said to her: "I who speak to you am the Messiah."

27 Thereupon, his Disciples returned, and were surprised that he was talking to a woman. Yet no one asked: "What is it?" or "Why are you talking with her?"

28 Then the woman left her water-jar, went off to the city, and said to the people: 29 "Come and see a man who told me everything I have ever done. He may be the Messiah." 30 So they left the city and went to find him.

31 In the meantime, his Disciples were urging him: "Rabbi, eat something." 32 Jesus answered them: "I have food to eat of which you know nothing." 33 The Disciples said to one another: "Somebody may have brought him food."

34 Jesus replied: "My food is to do the will of the Father who sent me, and to accomplish his work. 35 You say: 'After four months comes the harvest.' But I tell you, lift up your eyes, look, the fields are already white for harvesting. 36 The reaper is receiving his wages and is gathering fruit for eternal life. Then sower and reaper rejoice together. 37 Here the proverb holds true: One sows, and another reaps. 38 I sent you to reap a crop for which you did not labor. Others have labored and you reap the harvest of their labor."

39 Many Samaritans of that town believed in him on account of the woman who testified: "He told me everything I have ever done." 40 So after the Samaritans came to him, they asked him to stay with them.

41 He stayed there for two days, and many more believed on account of what he told them. 42 Then they said to the woman: "We no longer believe on account of your report. For we have heard him ourselves, and we know that he is really the Messiah, the Savior of mankind."

RETURN TO GALILEE

43 After two days Jesus departed from Samaria and proceeded to Galilee. 44 He himself had declared that a prophet is not respected in his own country. 45 Nevertheless, when he returned to Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him. For they had seen the mighty deeds he had performed in Jerusalem during the festival which they had attended.

THE OFFICIAL'S SON

46 So Jesus came back to Cana of Galilee where he had changed the water into wine. Now there was a royal official whose son was ill at Capernaum. 47 Having learned that Jesus had come from Judea to Galilee, he went to him and asked him to come down and heal his son who was dying.

48 Jesus said to him: "Unless you see miracles and wonders, you will not believe." 49 The official asked him again: "My Lord, come down, before my child is dead." 50 Jesus answered him: "Go, your son is alive and well." The man believed what Jesus had told him and went away.

51 As he was on his way home, his servants met him and told him that his son was alive and well. 52 He asked them at what time he began to improve. They replied: "Yesterday at one o'clock the fever left him."

53 Then the father realized that this was the very time when Jesus had told him: "Your son is alive and well." Then he and all his household believed. 54 This was the second miracle which Jesus performed after coming from Judea to Galilee.

CHAPTER 5

THE PARALYTIC

1 After this incident there was a Jewish festival. So Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 2 Now there is in Jerusalem by the Sheep Gate a pool, called in Hebrew Bethesda, with five porches. 3 In these lay a crowd of invalids, blind, lame, paralyzed, waiting for the disturbance of the water.

4 For an Angel of the Lord came down from time to time into the pool and disturbed the water. Thereupon the first man who went down into the pool after the agitation of the water recovered from whatever disease he had been afflicted with.

5 Now there was a man there who had been ill for thirty-
eight years. 6 Jesus saw him and knew that he had been lying
there for a long time. So he said to him: "Do you want to
become well?"

7 The sick man answered him: "My Lord, I have no one
to put me into the pool when the water is disturbed. For while
I am on my way, someone else steps down before me." 8 Jesus
said to him: "Rise, take up your bed, and walk." 9 At once,
the man was healed. He took up his bed and went away. Now
that was the Sabbath day.

10 Therefore the Jews told the man who was cured: "It is
the Sabbath day. It is not lawful for you to carry your bed."
11 He answered them: "The man who healed me told me to
take up my bed and walk."

12 They asked him: "Who is the man who told you to
take up your bed and walk?" 13 But the man who had been
cured did not know who it was. For Jesus had slipped away,
as there was a crowd in that place.

14 Afterward, Jesus came across him in the temple, and
said to him: "Look, now you are well. Do not sin any more.
Otherwise, something worse will happen to you." 15 Then the
man went off and reported to the Jews that it was Jesus who
had healed him.

THE SON OF GOD

16 The Jews persecuted Jesus and tried to kill him, because
he did not observe the Sabbath day. 17 But he answered them:
"My Father has been working until now, and I also work."
18 Therefore the Jews wanted all the more to put him to death.
For he not only broke the Sabbath day, but also called God
his Father, and made himself equal to God.

19 So Jesus answered them: "Well, well, I tell you, the
Son can do nothing of himself. He can do only what he sees
his Father doing. Whatever the Father does, the Son also does.
20 The Father loves the Son and shows him everything he
himself does. He will show him still greater deeds, which will
amaze you. 21 For as the Father raises the dead and revives
them, so the Son also revives whomsoever he pleases.

22 "Likewise, the Father does not judge anyone. He has
left all judgment to the Son. 23 Thus all men will honor the
Son as they honor the Father. Whoever does not honor the
Son, does not honor the Father who sent him."

RESURRECTION OF THE DEAD

24 "Well, well, I tell you that whoever listens to my Gospel
and believes in the Father who sent me, inherits everlasting
life. He does not come to judgment. For he has already passed
from death to life.

25 "Well, well, I tell you that the hour is coming, and it
has come already, when the dead will hear the voice of the
Son of God, and those who hear it will rise from the dead.

26 "For as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted
the Son also to have life in himself. 27 Moreover, he gave him
authority to execute judgment, for he is the Messiah.

28 "Do not wonder at this. For the hour is coming when
all those who are in the tombs will hear his voice. 29 Then they
will all rise, those who have done good to a resurrection of life,
and those who have done evil to a resurrection of judgment.
30 I can do nothing of myself. As I hear I judge, and my
judgment is just. Because I do not seek my own will, but the
will of the Father who sent me."

THE TESTIMONY OF THE FATHER

31 "If I testify about myself, my testimony is not valid.
32 There is another who testifies about me, and I know well
that the testimony which he gives about me is true. 33 You
yourselves have sent to John, and he testified to the truth.
34 I do not depend on human testimony, but I mention it for
your salvation. 35 He was the burning and shining lamp, and
you were ready for a while to enjoy his light.

36 "But the testimony I have is greater than that of John.
For the works which the Father has given me to accomplish,
these very works which I am performing, testify that the Father
has sent me.

37 "Moreover, the Father who sent me has himself testified
about me. You have never listened to his voice. You have never
seen his face. 38 You have never kept his message with you.
That is why you do not believe in him whom the Father has
sent. 39 You search the Scriptures, because you think you will
find eternal life in them. They also testify about me. 40 Yet
you are not willing to come to me and find life.

41 "I do not accept glory from men. 42 I know that
you have not the love of God in you. 43 I have come in
the name of my Father, and you do not receive me. If someone
else comes in his own name, you will receive him. 44 How can

you believe? You accept glory from one another, and do not seek the glory which comes from the only God.

45 "Do not imagine that I will accuse you before my Father. Your accuser will be Moses, the very man on whom you set your hope. 46 If you believed Moses, you would believe me. For he wrote about me. 47 But if you do not believe his writings, how will you ever believe my Gospel?"

CHAPTER 6

THE FIVE THOUSAND

1 After this incident, Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee, or Tiberias. 2 A large crowd followed him, because they had seen the miracles which he had performed over the sick. 3 Then Jesus went up to a mountain where he sat with his Disciples. 4 The Jewish festival of the Passover was drawing near.

5 When Jesus raised his eyes, he saw a large crowd coming toward him, and said to Philip: "Where can we buy food for these people to eat?" 6 He made this remark to test him, because he himself knew what he was going to do.

7 Philip answered him: "Two hundred silver pieces worth of bread would not be enough for each one of them to get even a little." 8 One of his Disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, observed to him: 9 "There is a boy here who has five barley loaves and a couple of fish. But what is that among so many people?"

10 Jesus said to them: "Have the people sit down." Now there was plenty of grass in the place. So they sat down, about five thousand in number. 11 Jesus took the loaves. gave thanks, and handed them to his Disciples. They distributed them to the people who were resting on the ground. Likewise, they distributed the fish, giving them as much as they wanted.

12 When they had eaten their fill, he said to his Disciples: "Gather up the pieces left over, so that nothing may be wasted." 13 Accordingly, they collected them and filled twelve baskets with pieces of the five barley loaves, which were left over after the people had eaten. 14 When the people saw the miracle Jesus had performed, they exclaimed: "This is indeed the Prophet who was to come into the world." 15 Therefore Jesus, knowing that they meant to carry him off and proclaim him their King, withdrew again to the mountain alone.

WALKING ON THE SEA

16 When evening came his Disciples went down to the
shore, 17 boarded a ship, and started across the Sea for
Capernaum. But darkness had already fallen, and Jesus had
not reached them yet. 18 Meanwhile, a strong wind was blowing,
and the Sea was growing rough. 19 After rowing for three or
four miles, they saw Jesus walking on the Sea and approaching
their ship. They were terrified. 20 But he told them: "It is I.
Do not be afraid." 21 So they were glad to take him aboard.
Then the ship instantly reached the shore they were making
for.

THE BREAD OF LIFE

22 On the following day, the crowd which had stayed on
the other side of the Sea noticed that there was only one boat
there, that the Disciples had left by themselves, and that Jesus
had not gone aboard with them.

23 Other boats from Tiberias, however, were coming in
near the spot where they had eaten bread after the Lord's
thanksgiving. 24 When the crowd saw that neither Jesus nor
his Disciples were there, they got into the boats and went to
Capernaum in search of Jesus.

25 When they found him on the other side of the Sea, they
asked him: "Rabbi, when did you get here?" 26 Jesus answered
them: "Indeed, I know, you are looking for me, not because you
have seen my miracles, but because you have eaten the loaves
and had your fill. 27 Do not labor for the food which perishes,
but for the food which endures to everlasting life, and which
the Messiah will give you. For he has been ordained for this
ministry by God the Father."

28 They asked him: "How can we serve God?" 29 Jesus
answered: "You can serve God by believing in the Son he has
sent." 30 They asked him again: "What miracle can you
perform? We must see it before we believe you. What can you
show us? 31 Our forefathers ate the manna in the desert, as
it is written in the Scriptures: 'He gave them bread from
heaven to eat.'"

32 Jesus replied: "Well, well, I tell you, the bread from
heaven was not what Moses gave you. The real bread from
heaven is given only by my Father. 33 For the bread of God
is that which comes down from heaven and gives life to

mankind." 34 They said to him: "Lord, give us always this bread."

35 Jesus answered: "I am the bread of life. Whoever comes to me will never be hungry. And whoever believes in me will never be thirsty. 36 But, as I told you, though you have seen me, yet you do not believe. 37 All those whom the Father gives me will come to me. And those who come to me I will never cast out. 38 For I have come down from heaven, not to do my own will, but the will of the Father who sent me. 39 Now, the will of the Father who sent me is that I must lose none of those he has given me. On the contrary, I must raise them all up on the last day.

40 "The will of the Father who sent me is that all those who see the Son and believe in him will have eternal life, and I will raise them up on the last day."

41 Now the Jews grumbled at him, because he said: "I am the bread which came down from heaven." 42 They asked: "This is Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know. How can he now claim that he came down from heaven?"

43 Jesus answered them: "Do not grumble among yourselves. 44 No one can come to me unless he is drawn by the Father who sent me, and I will raise him up on the last day.

45 "It is written in the Prophets: 'They all will be taught about God.' Everyone who has listened to the Father and has understood him, comes to me. 46 Of course, no one has seen the Father except the one who comes from God.

47 "Well, well, I tell you, whoever believes in me inherits everlasting life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your forefathers ate the manna in the desert and they died. 50 But those who eat the bread which comes down from heaven will never die. 51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven. Those who eat this bread will live forever. And this bread is my flesh which I will give for the life of mankind."

52 Then the Jews wrangled with one another, and asked: "How can he give us his flesh to eat?" 53 Jesus answered them: "Well, well, I tell you, unless you partake of the flesh and the blood of the Messiah, you have no life in you. 54 Whoever partakes of my flesh and my blood inherits everlasting life, and I will raise him up on the last day.

55 "My flesh is the true food, and my blood is the true drink. 56 Whoever partakes of my flesh and my blood abides in me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father sent me, and I live

because of the Father, likewise whoever partakes of me will also live because of me. 58 This is the bread which came down from heaven. Your forefathers ate the manna and died none the less. But whoever eats this bread will live forever."

59 Jesus preached this sermon in the synagogue at Capernaum. 60 Many of his Disciples, on hearing it, said: "This doctrine is strange. Who can accept it?"

61 Jesus knew that his Disciples were complaining about it, and said to them: "Does this doctrine upset you? 62 What will you do when you see the Messiah ascending to the place where he was dwelling before?

63 "It is the Spirit which gives life. The flesh cannot help at all. The words I am speaking to you are spirit and life. 64 But there are some of you who do not believe." For Jesus knew from the beginning who the unbelievers were and who his future betrayer was. 65 Then he added: "For this reason I have told you that no one can come to me unless he is allowed by my Father."

66 Consequently, many of his Disciples went away and did not associate with him any longer. 67 Then Jesus asked the twelve Apostles: "Do you want to go away also?"

68 Simon Peter answered him: "My Lord, to whom should we go? You preach eternal life. 69 We believe and we know that you are the Messiah, the Son of the living God."

70 Jesus said to them: "I have chosen all of you twelve. But one of you is a devil." 71 He meant Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. For he was one of the Twelve who was going to betray him.

CHAPTER 7

JESUS IN JERUSALEM

1 After this incident Jesus went about in Galilee. He would not stay in Judea, because the Jews were seeking to kill him. 2 Now the Jewish festival of Tabernacles was near.

3 Therefore his brethren told him: "Leave this place, go to Judea, and let your Disciples witness the miracles you are performing. 4 Nobody acts in secret who is looking for public recognition. If you are able to achieve these deeds, manifest yourself to the world." 5 For even his brethren did not believe in him.

6 Jesus answered them: "My time has not come yet. But your time is always at hand. 7 Men have no reason to hate

you, but they hate me, because I denounce their evil deeds. 8 Go up to the festival yourselves. I am not going to this festival, because my time has not come yet." 9 Acting on his words, he stayed behind in Galilee.

10 But after his brethren had left, he went up to the festival also, not publicly, but as it were privately. 11 Consequently, the Jews were looking for him at the festival and kept asking: "Where is he?"

12 There was a great deal of whispering about him among the crowds. Some said: "He is a good man." But others said: "No, he is misleading the people." 13 No one, however, spoke openly about him for fear of the Jews.

14 About the middle of the festival of Tabernacles, Jesus went up to the temple and began to preach. 15 The Jews were astonished, and asked: "This man has never studied in a school. How can he read the Scriptures?"

16 Jesus answered them: "My doctrine is not mine, but that of the Father who sent me. 17 Anyone who desires to do his will can tell whether my doctrine comes from God, or whether I am teaching it on my own authority. 18 The man who speaks on his own authority is seeking his own glory. But whoever seeks the glory of the Father who sent him is sincere and honest.

19 "It was Moses who gave the Law. Yet none of you observes the Law. Why do you want to kill me?" 20 The crowd answered him: "You are mad. Who wants to kill you?"

21 Jesus said to them: "I have performed only one deed, and you are all surprised at it. 22 Moses gave you the ritual of circumcision. It did not originate with Moses, but with the Patriarchs. Well, you perform this ritual on a Sabbath day.

23 "Now if it is lawful for a man to receive circumcision on a Sabbath day, according to the Law of Moses, why are you angry at me because I healed a man on a Sabbath day? 24 Do not judge me superficially, but judge me righteously."

25 Thereupon some of the people of Jerusalem remarked: "Is not this the man they want to kill? 26 Yet there he is preaching in public, and they have nothing to say to him. Have the authorities really made up their minds that this man is indeed the Messiah? 27 However, we know where this man comes from. But when the Messiah does come, no one will know where he comes from."

28 Then Jesus cried aloud as he went on preaching in the temple: "You know me and you know where I come from. I

have not come of myself. I have been sent by the supreme authority. You do not know him. 29 But I know him, because I come from him, and I was sent by him." 30 Therefore they sought to arrest him. But no one laid hands on him, because his hour had not yet come.

31 In the meantime, many of the people believed in him. They said: "Even the Messiah, when he comes, is not expected to perform more miracles than this man has done."

32 The Pharisees heard these whispers of the people about him. Therefore the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to arrest him.

33 Then Jesus said: "I will stay with you a little longer. Then I will go back to the Father who sent me. 34 You will seek me. But you will not find me. For you cannot come where I am going."

35 The Jews asked one another: "Where is he going that we cannot find him? Is he going to the Greek-speaking Jews of the Dispersion and preach to them? 36 What does he mean by saying that we will seek him, but will not find him, and that we cannot come where he is going?"

37 On the last and greatest day of the festival, Jesus stood up and exclaimed: "Whoever is thirsty, let him come to me and drink. 38 As the Scripture says, streams of living water will flow from the heart of the man who believes in me." 39 He made this remark about the Spirit which those who believed in him were to receive. Now the Holy Spirit had not yet come, because Jesus had not yet been glorified.

40 Some of the people who heard these words said: "This is certainly the Prophet." 41 Some said: "This is the Messiah." Others said: "What! Does the Messiah come from Galilee? 42 No. For the Scripture says that he comes from the house of David, and from Bethlehem where David lived." 43 So a dissension arose among the crowd about him. 44 Some of them wanted to arrest him. But no one laid hands on him.

45 Then the officers went back to the high priests and Pharisees, who asked them: "Why did you not bring him?" 46 The officers replied: "No man ever preached like this man."

47 The Pharisees retorted: "Are you also led astray? 48 Has any one of the leaders or of the Pharisees believed in him? 49 But these common people who do not know the Law are cursed."

50 Nicodemus, who came to Jesus by night and was one of his followers, asked them: 51 "Does our Law condemn a

man without giving him a hearing and finding out what he has done?" 52 They answered him: "Are you also from Galilee? Study the Scriptures and you will find that no prophet has ever arisen from Galilee." 53 Then every one of them went home.

CHAPTER 8

THE ADULTERESS

1 Then Jesus went up to the Mount of Olives. 2 Early in the morning he returned to the temple. All the people came to him. He sat down and preached to them.

3 Thereupon the Scribes and the Pharisees brought in a woman caught in adultery. They placed her in the center, 4 and said to him: "Master, this woman has been caught in the very act of adultery. 5 Moses commanded us in the Law to stone such women. Now what do you say?"

6 They asked him this question to test him so that they could have an accusation to bring against him. Jesus stooped down and wrote upon the ground with his finger.

7 But as they persisted in asking him, he looked up and said to them: "Whoever is without a sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her." 8 And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground.

9 When they heard him, they crept out one by one, beginning with the oldest. So Jesus was left alone with the woman standing in the center.

10 When Jesus looked up and saw none but the woman, he asked her: "Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Did no one stone you?"

11 She answered: "No one, my Lord." Jesus said to her: "Well, I am not going to stone you either. Go, and do not sin any more."

THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

12 Then Jesus preached to the people and said: "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will not walk in darkness, but will have the light of life."

13 Then the Pharisees told him: "You are testifying about yourself. Therefore your testimony is not valid." 14 Jesus answered them: "Though I am testifying on my own behalf, my testimony is valid. I know where I came from and where I am going. But you do not know where I came from and where I am going.

15 "You judge after your worldly fashion. I judge no one.
16 But even if I judge, my judgment will be righteous, because
I am not alone. The Father who sent me is with me.
17 Moreover, in your Law it is written that the testimony of
two witnesses is valid. 18 Well, I am one, testifying about
myself, and the Father who sent me is another, testifying
about me."

19 Then they asked him: "Where is your Father?" He
answered them: "You know neither me nor my Father. If you
knew me, you would know my Father also." 20 Jesus spoke
thus in the treasury, as he was teaching in the temple.
Nevertheless no one arrested him, because his hour had not
come yet.

THE SON OF GOD

21 Then Jesus added: "I am going away, and you will
search for me. But you will die in your sin. Where I am going
you cannot come." 22 Therefore the Jews began to ask: "Is he
going to kill himself? For he says: 'Where I am going you
cannot come.' "

23 Jesus answered them: "You are from below, I am from
above. You are of this world. I am not of this world. 24 That
is why I told you before and I am telling you now: You will die
in your sins unless you believe that I am the one you are
looking for."

25 Then they asked him: "Who are you?" Jesus answered
them: "I am what I told you from the beginning. 26 I have
much to say about you and condemn you. Certainly the Father
who sent me is true. So I tell mankind what I have learned
from him."

27 They could not understand why he called God his Father.
28 Therefore Jesus said: "When you have lifted up the Messiah,
then you will know that I am the one you are waiting for. I do
nothing of myself, and I am speaking as the Father taught me.
29 Now the Father who sent me is with me. He has not left
me alone. For I am doing what is pleasing to him." 30 After he
made this statement, many believed in him.

THE DESCENDANTS OF ABRAHAM

31 Jesus said to the Jews who had believed in him:
"If you abide in my Gospel, you are really my Disciples. 32 You
will know the truth. And the truth will make you free." 33 They

answered him: "We are descendants of Abraham, and we have never been in slavery to anyone. What do you mean by saying that we will become free?"

34 Jesus replied: "Every one who sins is a slave of sin. 35 Now the slave does not remain in the house permanently. But the Son remains forever. 36 Therefore, if the Son sets you free, you will be really free.

37 "I know that you are descendants of Abraham. Yet you want to kill me, because my message has no place in you. 38 I preach what I have heard from my Father. You do what you have heard from your father."

39 They answered him: "Our father is Abraham." Jesus replied: "If you were the children of Abraham, you would act as Abraham did. 40 But you want to kill me, because I tell you the truth which I heard from God. This is not what Abraham would do. 41 You act as your real father does." They replied: "We are no bastard children. We have only one Father, God."

42 Jesus said to them: "If God were your Father, you would love me, because I have proceeded and I have come from God. I have not come of myself. I was sent by him. 43 You do not understand my language. You are unable to listen to my Gospel. 44 You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the very beginning. He has never stood for truth, because there is no truth in him. When he lies, he expresses his own nature. Because he is a liar and the father of falsehood.

45 "You do not believe me, because I tell you the truth. 46 Who among you can convict me of sin? 47 Whoever belongs to God listens to the words of God. For this reason you do not listen to them. Because you do not belong to God."

JESUS AND ABRAHAM

48 The Jews answered him: "We are certainly right in saying that you are a Samaritan and that you are mad." 49 Jesus replied: "I am not mad. But I honor the Father, and you dishonor me. 50 I do not seek my own glory. It is the Father who seeks it, and he will be the judge. 51 Well, well, I tell you, whoever keeps my commandments will never see death."

52 The Jews replied: "Now we know that you are mad. Abraham and the prophets are dead, and you declare that whoever keeps your commandments will never see death. 53 Are

you greater than our father Abraham, and the prophets who are dead? Who do you claim to be?"

54 Jesus answered them: "If I should glorify myself, my glory would be nothing. It is my Father who glorifies me. You say he is your Father. 55 But you have not known him. I know him. If I were to say that I do not know him, I should be a liar like you. But I know him, and I keep his commandments. 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced that he was to see my day. He saw it, and was glad."

57 Then the Jews told him: "You are not yet fifty years old, and you have seen Abraham?" 58 Jesus answered them: "Well, well, I tell you, I existed before Abraham was born." 59 Thereupon, they picked up stones to throw at him. But Jesus disappeared, passed through them unseen, and went out of the temple.

CHAPTER 9

THE BLIND MAN

1 As Jesus was passing along, he saw a man blind from his birth. 2 His Disciples asked him: "Master, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?"

3 Jesus replied: "Neither this man nor his parents sinned. But he will provide an opportunity for the manifestation of the miracles of God. 4 I must work in the service of the Father who sent me while it is day. Because the night is coming, when no one can work. 5 While I am in the world, I am the light of the world."

6 After this remark he spat on the ground, made clay with the saliva, anointed the blind man's eyes with it, 7 and said to him: "Go, wash in the pool of Siloam," which means Sent. So he went, washed his eyes, and came back with his eyesight restored.

8 The neighbors and those who had seen him blind before began to ask: "Is this not the man who used to sit and beg?" 9 Some said: "This is the man." Others said: "No, he resembles him." But he himself said: "I am the man."

10 Therefore they asked him: "How is it that your eyes were opened?" 11 He replied: "A man called Jesus made clay, anointed my eyes, and told me to go to the pool of Siloam and wash them. So I went, I washed them, and I recovered my eyesight." 12 They asked him: "Where is he?" He answered: "I do not know."

13 They brought the man who had been blind to the
Pharisees. 14 It was the Sabbath day when Jesus made the clay
and opened his eyes. 15 So the Pharisees again asked the man
how he had recovered his eyesight. He answered them: "He
put clay on my eyes, then I washed them, and now I can see."

16 Some of the Pharisees remarked: "This man does not
come from God, because he does not observe the Sabbath day."
But others said: "How can a sinner perform such miracles?"
Thus there was a division of opinion among them. 17 Then they
asked the blind man again: "What do you think about the man
who opened your eyes?" He replied: "He is a prophet."

18 But the Jews did not believe that he had been blind and
had recovered his eyesight. Therefore they called his parents,
19 and questioned them: "Is this your son who was born blind?
How is it that he can see now?"

20 His parents answered them: "We know that this is our
son, and that he was born blind. 21 But we do not know how
he can see now, and we do not know who opened his eyes.
Ask him, he is of age, let him speak for himself."

22 His parents gave this reply because they were afraid
of the Jews, who had already agreed to expel from the synagogue
anyone who acknowledged Jesus as the Messiah. 23 For this
reason his parents replied: "He is of age, ask the man himself."

24 For the second time, they called the man who had been
blind, and said to him: "Give glory to God. We know that this
man is a sinner." 25 He replied: "I do not know whether he
is a sinner or not. All I know is that I was blind and now I
can see."

26 Then they asked him again: "What did he do to you?
How did he open your eyes?" 27 He answered them: "I have
already told you, but you do not listen to me. Why do you want
to hear it over again? Do you want to become his disciples?"

28 They reviled him, and said to him: "You are his disciple.
We are disciples of Moses. 29 We know that God has spoken
to Moses. But we do not know where that man comes from."

30 The man replied: "Well, this is astonishing. You do
not know where he comes from. Yet he has opened my eyes.
31 We know that God does not answer the prayers of sinners.
He answers only the prayers of devout men who obey his will.
32 Since the world began, it has never been heard that anyone
opened the eyes of a man born blind. 33 Now, if this man did
not come from God, he could do nothing."

34 They answered him: "You were born in utter sin, and

you presume to give us lessons?" And they cast him out.

35 When Jesus heard that they had cast him out, he went to find him, and asked him: "Do you believe in the Son of God?" 36 He answered: "My Lord, I believe in him, but where is he?" 37 Jesus replied: "You have seen him already. He is now talking with you." 38 Then he said: "My Lord, I believe." And he worshipped him.

39 Then Jesus said to the people: "I came into this world with this mission: to make the blind see, and to prove that the seeing are blind."

40 Some Pharisees who were present, heard this remark, and asked him: "Are we blind also?" 41 Jesus answered them: "If you were blind, you would not be guilty of sin. But since you claim to have eyesight, your sin remains."

CHAPTER 10

THE GOOD SHEPHERD

1 "Well, well, I tell you, whoever does not enter the sheepfold by the gate, but climbs in another way, is a thief and a bandit. 2 But whoever enters by the gate is the shepherd of the flock. 3 The watchman opens the gate for him. The sheep obey his voice. He calls them by name, and leads them out.

4 "When he has brought out all his sheep, he goes in front of them. The sheep follow him because they know his voice. 5 They will not follow a stranger. On the contrary, they will run away from him, because they do not know the voice of a stranger."

6 Jesus told them this allegory, but they did not understand what he meant. 7 So Jesus said to them again: "Well, well, I tell you, I am the gate of the sheep. 8 All those who came before me have been thieves and bandits. So the sheep did not obey them. 9 I am the gate. Whoever enters through me will be saved. He will go in and out, and he will find pasture. 10 The thief comes only to steal, to kill, and to destroy. I have come to give life, and to give life in abundance.

11 "I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd lays down his life for his sheep. 12 But the hireling who is not the shepherd and does not own the sheep, when he sees a wolf coming, he leaves the sheep and flees. So the wolf snatches them and scatters them. 13 He flees because he is a hireling, and does not care about the sheep.

14 "I am the good shepherd. I know my sheep. My sheep
know me. 15 The Father knows me. I know the Father. And
I lay down my life for my sheep.

16 "I have other sheep also which do not belong to this
fold. I must bring them in also, and they will hear my voice.
Then they will all become one flock with one shepherd.

17 "The Father loves me, because I lay down my life. But
I will regain it afterwards. 18 No one can take my life. On the
contrary, I lay it down of my own accord, because I am free
to lay it down, and I am free to regain it. These are the orders
my Father has given me."

19 Dissension broke out again among the Jews because of
these remarks. 20 Many of them said: "He is possessed and
mad. Why do you listen to him?" 21 Others said: "These are
not the words of a man who is possessed. Can a madman open
the eyes of blind men?"

THE DEDICATION FESTIVAL

22 At that time, the festival of the Dedication was taking
place at Jerusalem. It was winter. 23 Jesus was walking in the
temple, in Solomon's porch. 24 The Jews surrounded him and
asked him: "How long are you going to keep us in suspense?
If you are the Messiah, tell us openly."

25 Jesus answered them: "I have already told you. But
you do not believe me. The miracles I am performing in my
Father's name testify about me.

26 "But you do not believe me, because you do not belong
to my flock, as I have told you before. 27 My sheep obey my
voice. I know them. They follow me. 28 And I give them ever-
lasting life. They will never be lost, and no one will snatch
them out of my hand. 29 My Father who gave them to me
is greater than all. No one is able to tear them away from my
Father's hand, 30 and I and the Father are one."

31 Thereupon, the Jews took up stones again in order to
stone him. 32 Jesus replied: "My Father has enabled me to
perform many deeds of mercy in your presence. For which one
of these deeds will you stone me?" 33 The Jews answered him:
"We are not stoning you for any good deed, but for blasphemy.
Because you, a mere man, claim to be God."

34 Jesus answered them: "It is written in your Scriptures,
'I say you are gods.' 35 Now the Scripture gave the title of
gods to those who received the Lord's message. The Scripture

cannot be overruled. 36 So you cannot accuse me of being a blasphemer, because I have told you I am the Son of God. For the Father has consecrated me and sent me to mankind.

37 "If I do not perform the miracles of my Father, then do not believe me. 38 But if I perform them, even if you do not believe me, believe the miracles. They will help you to understand and believe that the Father is in me, and I am in the Father."

39 Therefore the Jews tried to arrest Jesus. But he escaped from their hands. 40 Then he went again across the Jordan to the place where John used to baptize at first and he remained there.

41 Many came to him and said: "John performed no miracle. But everything he said about this man was true." 42 Therefore many believed in him there.

CHAPTER 11

LAZARUS

1 Now a man called Lazarus was sick. He lived in Bethany, in the town of Mary and her sister Martha. 2 This Mary, whose brother had now fallen sick, was the woman who anointed the Lord with perfume and wiped his feet with her hair. 3 Therefore the sisters sent word to Jesus, saying: "Lord, your friend is sick."

4 When Jesus heard it, he said: "This illness is not going to end in death. It is for the glory of God. For the Son of God will be glorified through it." 5 Jesus loved Martha, her sister, and Lazarus. 6 Therefore, when he heard that he was sick, he stayed two days longer in the place where he was.

7 Afterward, he said to his Disciples: "Let us go back to Judea." 8 His Disciples replied: "Rabbi, the Jews were lately trying to stone you, and you are going there again?" 9 Jesus answered them: "The day is twelve hours long. Whoever walks in the day will not stumble, because he sees the light of this world. 10 But whoever walks in the night will stumble, because he has no light."

11 After these words he said to them: "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep. But I am going there to wake him from sleep." 12 His Disciples replied: "If he has fallen asleep, he will recover." 13 Jesus had referred to his death. But they supposed that he meant taking rest in sleep.

14 Then Jesus told them plainly: "Lazarus is dead. 15 For

your sake I am glad that I was not there. For now you will believe. So let us go to him." 16 Then Thomas, called the Twin, said to his fellow Disciples: "Let us go and die with him also."

17 When Jesus arrived, he found that Lazarus had already been buried for four days. 18 Now Bethany is only about two miles from Jerusalem. 19 Therefore many Jews had come from that city to console Martha and Mary about their brother.

20 When Martha heard that Jesus was coming, she went out to meet him, while Mary remained at home. 21 Martha said to Jesus: "My Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died. 22 But even now I know that God will give you whatever you ask him."

23 Jesus said to her: "Your brother will rise again." 24 Martha answered him: "I know that he will rise at the resurrection on the last day."

25 Jesus said to her: "I am the resurrection and the life. Whoever believes in me will live, even if he dies. 26 And whoever lives and believes in me will never die. Do you believe these doctrines?" 27 She answered him: "Yes, my Lord, I believe that you are the Messiah, the Son of God who was to come into the world."

28 After these words she returned and called her sister Mary, whispering to her: "The Master is here and is calling for you." 29 When she heard it, she got up quickly and went to him. 30 For Jesus had not yet entered the village, but was still at the place where Martha had met him.

31 The Jews who were sitting in the house and consoling her noticed that Mary got up quickly and went out. They followed her. For they thought that she had gone to the tomb to weep there.

32 When Mary reached the place where Jesus was and saw him, she fell at his feet and said: "My Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died." 33 When Jesus saw her and the Jews who had accompanied her weeping, he was deeply moved and troubled in spirit.

34 Then he asked: "Where have you laid him?" They answered him: "Lord, come and see." 35 Thereupon, Jesus burst into tears. 36 Therefore the Jews said: "See how much he loved him!" 37 But some of them said: "Since he opened the eyes of the blind man, he could have prevented this man from dying."

38 Jesus, deeply moved again, came to the tomb. It was a cave with a stone laid upon it. 39 Jesus said: "Take away the stone!" Martha, the sister of the dead man, said to him: "My

Lord, the odor must be offensive by now, for he is four days dead."

40 Jesus replied: "I have told you that, if you believe, you will see the glory of God." 41 Thereupon, they removed the stone from the cave where the dead man was laid. Jesus lifted up his eyes and said: "Father, I thank you that you have heard me. 42 I know that you always hear me. But I made this remark for the sake of the people standing around. Now they will believe that you have sent me."

43 After these words, he cried aloud: "Lazarus, come out!" 44 The dead man came out bound hand and foot with bandages, and his face was wrapped up in a napkin. Jesus said to them: "Unbind him and let him move."

45 Many of the Jews, who had come to visit Mary and had seen the miracle he performed, believed in him. 46 But some of them went to the Pharisees and reported to them the miracle Jesus had performed.

CAIAPHAS

47 Therefore the chief priests and the Pharisees convoked the council, and asked them: "What are we going to do? For this man is performing many miracles. 48 If we let him go on like this, everybody will believe in him. Then the Romans will come and destroy both our temple and our nation."

49 But Caiaphas, one of them who was high priest that year, said to them: "You know nothing about it. 50 You do not understand that it is in your interest that one man should die for the people and not let the whole nation perish."

51 He did not make this remark of his own accord. As he was high priest for that year, he prophesied that Jesus was to die for the nation, 52 and to unite all the scattered children of God.

53 So from that day they plotted to put him to death.

IN EPHRAIM

54 Therefore Jesus did not appear in public among the Jews any longer. He left the city and went to a town called Ephraim, in the district near the desert where he stayed with his Disciples.

55 Now the Jewish Passover was approaching. Therefore many pilgrims went up to Jerusalem from the country to purify themselves before the Passover. 56 As they stood in the temple,

they were looking for Jesus and were asking one another: "Do you think that he will come to the Festival?"

57 They knew that the Pharisees wanted to arrest him. So they had given orders that everyone who knew his whereabouts should report to them immediately.

CHAPTER 12

THE ANOINTMENT

1 Six days before the Passover, Jesus came to Bethany, where Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead, was living. 2 They gave him a dinner there. Martha was waiting on them, while Lazarus sat at the table with him.

3 Then Mary took a pound of costly perfume of pure nard, anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped them with her hair. The house was filled with the fragrance of the perfume.

4 But Judas Iscariot, son of Simon, one of his Disciples who was going to betray him, said: 5 "This perfume could have been sold for ten pounds and distributed to the poor." 6 He made this remark, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief and he kept the purse with the money as the treasurer.

7 Jesus answered: "Let her alone! She has kept it for the day of my burial. 8 You always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me."

9 When the great crowd of Jews learned that he was there, they came to see not only Jesus, but also Lazarus whom he had raised from the dead. 10 So the high priests plotted to murder Lazarus also, 11 because on account of him many of the Jews were seceding and believing in Jesus.

THE MESSIANIC ENTRY

12 On the following day, a great crowd who had come to the festival, heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem. 13 So they took branches of palm trees, went out to meet him, and shouted: "Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel who comes in the name of the Lord!"

14 Jesus had found a young donkey and was seated upon it, as it is written in the Scriptures: 15 "Do not be afraid, daughter of Zion! Look, your king is coming seated on a donkey's colt."

16 The Disciples did not understand these events at first.

But when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that they occurred as they had been prophesied in the Scriptures. 17 Moreover, the crowd which had been with him, when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead, testified as eye-witnesses. 18 For this reason the crowd went out to meet him, because they heard that he had performed this miracle. 19 So the Pharisees said to one another: "You see that you can do nothing about it. Look, the people are all following him."

THE GENTILES

20 Now, among those who had come up to worship at the festival there were some Gentiles, 21 who applied to Philip from Bethsaida in Galilee, and appealed to him, saying: "Sir, we wish to see Jesus." 22 Philip went and told Andrew. Then Andrew and Philip went and told Jesus.

23 Jesus answered them: "The hour has come for the Messiah to be glorified. 24 Well, well, I tell you, unless the grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains a single grain. But if it dies, it bears rich fruit.

25 "Whoever loves his life will lose it. And whoever hates his life will save it for life eternal. 26 Whoever serves me, let him follow me. Then where I am, my servant will be also. My Father will honor everyone who serves me."

THE GLORIFICATION

27 "Now my soul is troubled. But I cannot say: 'Father, save me from this hour.' No, I have come to this hour to say: 28 'Father, glorify your name.' " A voice out of heaven replied: "I have glorified it, and I will glorify it again." 29 The crowd who stood by and heard it, said that it had thundered. Others said: "An Angel has spoken to him."

30 Jesus said: "This voice has not come for me, but for you. 31 Now the judgment of this world is taking place. Now the tyrant of this world will be cast out. 32 Now I am going to be lifted up from the earth, and I will attract all men to myself."

33 He made this remark to show the kind of death he was going to suffer. 34 Then the crowd replied: "We have learned from the Scriptures that the Messiah will remain here forever. So how can you say that the Messiah will be lifted up? Who is this Messiah?"

35 Jesus answered them: "The light will be with you only
a little while longer. Walk while you have the light. Then
darkness will not overtake you. Because whoever walks in the
dark does not know where he is going. 36 While you have the
light, believe in the light. Then you will become sons of light."
After these words Jesus went away and concealed himself from
them.

UNBELIEF

37 But although he had performed so many miracles before
them, they did not believe in him. 38 Thus the prophecy of
Isaiah was fulfilled: "Lord, who has believed what he heard
from us? And to whom has the power of the Lord been revealed?"
39 For this reason they could not believe. Moreover, Isaiah
elsewhere said: 40 "Their eyes are blinded, and their minds are
dulled. Consequently they cannot see, they cannot understand,
they cannot return to me and be healed." 41 Isaiah made this
prophecy concerning him because he had foreseen his glory.

42 Nevertheless, even some of the leaders believed in him.
But they did not acknowledge it, because they were afraid that
the Pharisees would expel them from the synagogue. 43 They
preferred the glory of men to the glory of God.

44 Then Jesus exclaimed: "Whoever believes in me, believes
in the Father who has sent me. 45 And whoever sees me, sees
the Father who has sent me. 46 I have come to mankind as a
light. So whoever believes in me will not remain in darkness.

47 "Moreover, I am not going to judge anyone who hears
my message and disregards it. For I have not come to judge,
but to save mankind. 48 Whoever rejects me and does not
receive my Gospel has a judge. The Gospel I have proclaimed
will be his judge on the last day.

49 "For I have not spoken on my account. The Father who
sent me has himself commanded me what to say and what to
preach. 50 And I know that his commandment is eternal life.
What I say, therefore, I say as the Father has ordered me."

CHAPTER 13

THE WASHING OF THE FEET

1 It was the eve of the Passover Festival. Jesus realized
that the time had come for him to depart from this world and
return to his Father. He wanted to give a final evidence of his

love to his own Disciples who had to stay in the world after he had gone. 2 The Last Supper was over. Satan had already put it into the mind of Judas, son of Simon, the Iscariot, to betray him.

3 Jesus knew that the Father had given all authority into his hands. For he had come from God and was going back to God. 4 So he rose from the table, took off his coat, and girded himself with a towel. 5 He poured water into a basin and began to wash the feet of his Disciples. Then he wiped them off with the towel with which he was girded.

6 When he came to Simon Peter, he said to Jesus: "My Lord, are you going to wash my feet?" 7 Jesus answered him: "You cannot understand now what I am doing. But you will understand it later on."

8 Peter retorted: "I will never let you wash my feet." Jesus said to him: "You will have no part with me unless I wash you." 9 Then Simon Peter yielded: "My Lord, wash not only my feet, but also my hands and my head."

10 Jesus said to him: "Whoever has bathed, needs only to wash his feet. Then indeed he is entirely clean. Now you are already clean, though not all of you." 11 For he knew who was going to betray him. That was why he said: "You are not all of you clean."

12 When Jesus had washed the feet of his Disciples, he put on his coat, resumed his place, and said to them: "Do you know what I have done to you? 13 You call me your Lord and Master. You are right, for so I am. 14 Now if I, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, you also must wash one another's feet. 15 For I have given you an example in order that you may do as I have done to you.

16 "Well, well, I tell you, no servant is superior to his master, and no apostle is greater than he who sends him. 17 Now that you have this knowledge, you will be blessed if you act upon it.

18 "I do not mean all of you. For I know whom I have chosen. Thus the prophecy of the Scriptures will be fulfilled: 'My companion who is sharing my bread has raised his arm against me.'

19 "I am foretelling this betrayal to you now. So when it actually happens you will believe that I am the Messiah. 20 Well, well, I tell you, whoever welcomes any of my messengers, welcomes me. And whoever welcomes me, welcomes the Father who sent me."

THE BETRAYER

21 After these words Jesus was deeply moved, and declared solemnly: "Well, well, I tell you, one of you will betray me."

22 The Disciples looked at one another and wondered which one of them he meant. 23 One of his Disciples, whom Jesus loved, was sitting next to him on his right side at the table. 24 So Simon Peter nodded to him and asked him: "Tell us whom he means."

25 The beloved Disciple on the right side turned to Jesus and asked him: "My Lord, who is it?"

26 Jesus answered: "It is the one to whom I will give this piece of bread when I have dipped it in the dish." Then he dipped the morsel in the dish and gave it to Judas, the son of Simon, the Iscariot.

27 Judas received the bread, and Satan took possession of his heart. Then Jesus said to Judas: "Do it quickly."

28 No one at the table understood what Jesus meant by these words. 29 Some Disciples thought that, since Judas was the treasurer, Jesus told him to buy food for the festival, or to distribute money to the poor. 30 So, after receiving the morsel, Judas went out immediately. It was already night.

THE NEW COMMANDMENT

31 When Judas was gone, Jesus said: "Now is the Messiah glorified, and God is glorified in him. 32 If God is glorified in him, God will also glorify him in himself, and he will glorify him at once.

33 "My children, yet a little while I am with you. You will seek me, but as I said to the Jews, so now I say to you: 'You cannot come where I am going.'

34 "I give you a new commandment: Love one another. Just as I have loved you, you must love one another also. 35 Remember that all men will know that you are my Disciples by your love for one another."

DENIALS PREDICTED

36 Simon Peter asked him: "My Lord, where are you going?" Jesus answered him: "You cannot follow me now where I am going. But you will follow me afterwards."

37 Peter asked him again. "Why can I not follow you now? I will lay down my life for you." 38 Jesus replied: "You will

lay down your life for me? Well, well, I tell you, before the cock crows you will deny me three times."

CHAPTER 14

THE HEAVENLY MANSIONS

1 "Let not your hearts be troubled. Believe in God and believe in me. 2 In my Father's house there are many mansions. If it were not so, I would have told you. For I am going to prepare a place for you. 3 After preparing a place for you, I will come again and take you with me. Then you will be where I am. 4 Of course, you know where I am going, and you know the way."

5 Thomas said to him: "My Lord, we do not know where you are going. How can we know the way?" 6 Jesus answered him: "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one can come to the Father except through me. 7 If you know me, you know the Father also. From now on you know him, and you have seen him."

THE COMFORTER

8 Philip said to him: "My Lord, show us the Father. That is all we want." 9 Jesus answered him: "I have been so long with you, Philip. Yet you do not know me. Whoever has seen me, has seen my Father. So how can you tell me to show you my Father? 10 You know that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me. I am not speaking to you of myself. The Father who dwells in me speaks my words and performs my miracles. 11 Therefore believe that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me. Or else believe me on account of the miracles themselves.

12 "Well, well, I tell you, whoever believes in me will perform the miracles I do, and even greater miracles. For I am going to my Father, 13 and I will grant whatever you ask in my name. Then the Father will be glorified in the Son. 14 Yes, I will grant whatever request you make in my name.

15 "If you love me, keep my commandments. 16 Then I will ask the Father to give you another Comforter, who will remain with you forever. 17 He is the Spirit of Truth, whom other men cannot receive, because they do not see him and do not know him. But you know him because he dwells in you and lives within you.

18 "I will not leave you unprotected. I am coming back
to you. 19 In a little while the world will not see me any more.
But you will still see me, because I live on, and you will live
on also. 20 In that day you will know that I am in the Father,
that you are in me, and that I am in you. 21 Whoever loves
me must observe the commandments he has received from me.
Whoever loves me will be loved by the Father. I will love him
also and I will manifest myself in him."

22 Judas (not the Iscariot) said to him: "My Lord, how
is it that you will manifest yourself to us, and not to other
men?"

23 Jesus answered him: "Whoever loves me, will obey my
commandments. My Father will love him. We will come to him
and abide with him. 24 Whoever does not love me does not
obey my commandments. Now, the commandments which you
hear are not mine, but the Father's who sent me.

25 "I am giving you these instructions while I am still
with you. 26 But the Comforter, the Holy Spirit, whom the
Father will send in my name, will teach you everything and
remind you of everything that I have told you."

PEACE

27 "I leave peace with you. I give you my peace. I do not
give you the peace of the unbelievers. Let not your heart be
troubled or dismayed.

28 "You have heard me tell you that I am going away and
coming back to you. If you loved me, you would have been
glad that I am going to my Father, because my Father is
greater than I.

29 "I have told you of this mission before it takes place.
So when it takes place, you will believe in me. 30 I will not
talk much longer with you, because the tyrant of this world
is coming. He has no power over me. But I do as the Father
has commanded me. 31 Thus the world will know that I love
the Father. Come, let us go away from here."

CHAPTER 15

UNION WITH CHRIST

1 "I am the true vine, and my Father is the cultivator.
2 He removes every branch which does not bear fruit in me.
He prunes every branch which bears fruit to make it bear

more. 3 You are pruned already through the Gospel I have preached to you.

4 "Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it remains on the vine, so neither can you unless you remain in me. 5 I am the vine, you are the branches. Whoever abides in me, and I in him, will bear much fruit. But apart from me you can produce nothing.

6 "Whoever does not abide in me is cast off like the branch and withers up. Then they gather them, throw them on the fire, and burn them up. 7 If you abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask for whatever you please, and you will have it.

8 "My Father will be glorified when you bear plenty of fruit and show yourselves to be Disciples of mine. 9 I have loved you as my Father has loved me. Abide in my love. 10 If you obey my commandments, you will abide in my love, as I have obeyed the commandments of my Father and abide in his love. 11 Now that I have given you all these instructions, you will have the joy that I have had, and your joy will be complete.

12 "This is my commandment: Love one another. 13 The greatest love a man can show is to lay down his life for his friends. 14 You are my friends if you do what I command you. 15 I do not call you servants any longer. For the servant does not know what his master is doing. I have called you friends. For I have made known to you everything I have heard from my Father.

16 "You did not choose me. But I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit which will endure. Then every request you make of my Father in my name will be granted to you. 17 This is my commandment: Love one another.

18 "If the unbelievers hate you, remember that they hated me first. 19 If you belonged to them, then they would love their own men. But because you do not belong to them, and because I chose you from them, therefore they hate you.

20 "Remember what I said to you: 'No servant is greater than his master.' If they persecuted me, they will persecute you also. If they obeyed my commandments, they will obey yours also. 21 Consequently, they will treat you thus for my name's sake, because they do not know the Father who sent me.

22 "If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have been guilty of sin. But now they have no excuse for their sin. 23 Whoever hates me, hates my Father also. 24 If I had not performed among them miracles which no one else did,

they would not have been guilty of sin. But now they have seen and hated both me and my Father.

25 "Thus the passage of their Scripture has been fulfilled: 'They hated me without cause.' 26 But when the Comforter comes, whom I will send you from the Father, the Spirit of Truth, who proceeds from the Father, he will testify about me. 27 You must testify about me also, because you have been with me from the beginning."

CHAPTER 16

PERSECUTIONS

1 "I am giving you all these details to keep you from faltering. 2 They will expel you from their synagogues. Moreover, the hour is coming when anyone who murders you will think he is rendering a service to God. 3 They will act in that fashion, because they do not know the Father nor me.

4 "I have told you about all these persecutions, so that when the hour comes you will remember that I told you of them. I did not tell you of them from the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I am going back to the Father who has sent me. Yet no one of you asks me where I am going, 6 because your heart is full of sorrow at what I have told you. 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is better for you that I should go away. For if I do not go, the Comforter will not come to you. But if I go, I will send him to you.

8 "Now when he comes, he will challenge the world about sin, righteousness, and judgment. 9 About sin, because they do not believe in me. 10 About righteousness, because I am going to my Father, and you will see me no longer. 11 About judgment, because the tyrant of this world is being judged. 12 I have still many things to tell you, but you cannot bear them now.

13 "When the Spirit of Truth comes, he will guide you to all the truth. For he will not speak for himself. He will tell you what he has been instructed. He will announce to you the coming events. 14 He will glorify me. For he will take what is mine and declare it to you. 15 Everything the Father has, is mine. Therefore I said that he will take what is mine and declare it to you.

16 "In a little while you will see me no longer. But in a little while you will see me again, because I am going back to my Father."

17 Some of his Disciples asked one another: "What does
he mean when he tells us that in a little while we will see
him no longer, but in a little while we will see him again, and
that he is going back to the Father?" 18 So they kept asking:
"What does he mean, when he says in a little while? We do
not understand what he is talking about."

ASSURANCES

19 Jesus knew that they wanted to question him and told
them: "Are you asking one another what I mean when I say
that in a little while you will see me no longer, but in a little
while you will see me again? 20 Well, well, I tell you that you
will weep and lament while the unbelievers will rejoice. You
will grieve. But your sorrow will be turned into joy.

21 "A woman in childbirth is suffering, because her hour
has come. But when she has borne her child, she forgets her
pain in her joy that a human being has been brought into the
world. 22 So you also are sorrowful for the present. But I will
see you again, your heart will rejoice, and no one can take that
joy from you.

23 "In that day you will not need to ask anything of me.
Well, well, I tell you, whatever you ask the Father in my name,
he will grant it to you. 24 Hitherto you have asked nothing
in my name. Ask, and you will receive. Thus your joy will be
complete.

25 "I have told you this story figuratively. But the hour
is coming, when I will not do so any longer. Then I will speak
to you about the Father plainly. 26 In that day you will ask
the Father in my name, and I will not need to intercede with
the Father for you. 27 For the Father himself loves you,
because you have loved me and you have believed that I have
come from God. 28 I have come from the Father and I have
entered the world. Now I am leaving the world, and I am going
back to my Father."

29 Then his Disciples said: "Why, now you are speaking
plainly and not figuratively at all. 30 Now we are sure that
you know everything, and we do not need to ask you about it.
For this reason, we believe that you have come from God."

31 Jesus answered them: "Do you believe it now? 32 Well,
the hour is coming, and it has already come, when you will all
be scattered to your homes, and you will leave me alone. But
I am not alone, because the Father is with me. 33 I am giving

you all these assurances, so that you may have peace in me. You will have tribulation in the world. But take courage, I have conquered the world."

CHAPTER 17

UNITY

1 After these words Jesus lifted up his eyes to heaven and said: "Father, the hour has come. Glorify your Son that your Son may glorify you. 2 For you have given him authority over all mankind, and empowered him to grant everlasting life to those you have entrusted to him.

3 "Everlasting life means to acknowledge you as the only true God, and to acknowledge Jesus Christ as your messenger. 4 I have glorified you on earth. I have accomplished the task you have given me to do. 5 Now, Father, glorify me in your presence with that glory which I had with you before the world was created.

6 "I have manifested your name to the men you gave me from the world. They were yours. You have given them to me. And they obeyed your commandments. 7 Now they know that all my gifts come from you. 8 For I gave them your Gospel. They have received it, because they know that I have come from you, and they believe that you have sent me.

9 "I have a request to make for them. I do not make this request for strangers, but for those you have entrusted to me. For they are yours. 10 Now all that is mine is yours, and what is yours is mine, and I am glorified in them. 11 I will not remain in this world any longer. But they remain in this world, while I am coming to you. Holy Father, keep in your name those you have entrusted to me. Then they will be united also, as we are.

12 "As long as I was with them in this world, I kept and protected in your name those whom you entrusted to me. None of them was lost except the son of perdition, in fulfillment of the Scriptures. 13 But now I am coming to you. Therefore I make these requests, while I am still in this world. So they will have the full measure of my joy in themselves.

14 "I have given them your Gospel. The unbelievers have hated them, because they do not belong to them, even as I do not. 15 I do not ask you to take them away from the world, but to keep them from evil. 16 They do not belong to the world of unbelievers, even as I do not belong to them. 17 Sanctify them in your truth. Your Gospel is the truth. 18 As you have

sent me to mankind, so I send them to mankind also. 19 For their sake, I dedicate myself. So they also will be dedicated by truth.

20 "I do not make this request for them only, but also for those who will believe in me through their message. 21 Let them all be united with us, Father, as you are united with me, and I with you. Then all men will believe that you have sent me.

22 "I have given them the glory which you have granted to me. So they will be perfectly united as we are, 23 I with them, and you with me. Then all men will know that you have sent me and that you have loved them as you have loved me.

24 "Father, I wish that all those whom you have entrusted to me may be also with me where I am. Then they will see the glory which you have granted to me. For you have loved me before the foundation of the world.

25 "Righteous Father, men have not known you. But I have known you, and these men have known that you have sent me. 26 For I have revealed and I will reveal your name to them. So the love with which you have loved me will be in them, and I in them."

CHAPTER 18

THE ARREST

1 After this sermon Jesus went with his Disciples across the Ravine of the Cedars, where there was a garden which he and his Disciples entered. 2 Judas who betrayed him knew the place also. For Jesus often met his Disciples there. 3 So Judas, leading a detachment of guards from the chief priests and Pharisees, went there with lanterns, torches, and weapons.

4 Jesus, as he knew everything that was going to happen to him, came forward and asked them: "Whom are you looking for?" 5 They answered him: "Jesus of Nazareth." Jesus said to them: "I am the man." Judas, who betrayed him, was standing with them. 6 When he said to them: "I am the man," they drew back and fell to the ground. 7 He asked them again: "Whom are you looking for?" They answered him: "Jesus of Nazareth."

8 Jesus said to them: "I told you that I am the man. So if you are looking for me, let these men go." 9 This was in fulfillment of what he had said: "I have not lost one of those whom you have given me."

10 Then Simon Peter, who had a sword with him, drew
it and struck the servant of the high priest and cut off his
right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. 11 Jesus said to
Peter: "Put your sword back into its sheath. For I have to
drink the cup which the Father has ordered me."

BEFORE ANNAS AND CAIAPHAS

12 Then the detachment of guards, their captain, and the
servants of the Jews arrested Jesus, bound him, 13 and took
him first to Annas. He was the father-in-law of Caiaphas who
was high priest that year. 14 It was Caiaphas who advised the
Jews that it was expedient that one man should die for the
people.

15 Simon Peter and another Disciple followed Jesus. This
other Disciple was an acquaintance of the high priest, and
entered the courtyard of the high priest along with Jesus.
16 But Peter stood outside at the door. So this other Disciple,
who was an acquaintance of the high priest, went out, spoke
to the maid at the door, and brought Peter in.

17 The maid at the door asked Peter: "Are you also one
of this man's Disciples?" He answered: "I am not." 18 As it
was cold, the servants and attendants had made a charcoal fire,
and stood around it warming themselves. Peter also stood with
them and warmed himself.

19 The high priest questioned Jesus about his Disciples
and his sermons. 20 Jesus answered him: "I have preached
openly to the people. I have always preached in the synagogues
and in the temple, where all the Jews meet together. I have
said nothing in secret. 21 Why do you ask me? Ask those who
have heard me preach. They know what I preached."

22 Thereupon, one of the attendants who stood near struck
him and said: "Is that the way you answer the high priest?"
23 Jesus replied: "If I have spoken wrongly, prove it. But if
I have spoken rightly, why do you strike me?" 24 Then Annas
sent him bound to Caiaphas the high priest.

THE DENIAL

25 In the meantime, Peter was standing and warming
himself. Some bystanders asked him: "Are you also one of his
Disciples?" He denied it and said: "I am not."

26 One of the servants of the high priest, a relative of the man whose ear Peter had cut off, said: "I saw you in the garden with him." 27 Peter again denied it. At that moment the cock crowed.

28 Then they led Jesus from the house of Caiaphas to the praetorium. It was early. They themselves did not enter the praetorium in order to avoid defilement and to eat the Passover Supper.

BEFORE PILATE

29 So Pilate went out and asked them: "What accusation do you make against this man?" 30 They answered him: "If he were not an evildoer, we would not have turned him over to you." 31 Pilate said to them: "Take him yourselves and try him according to your Law." The Jews said to him: "We have no authority to put anyone to death." 32 This was in fulfillment of what Jesus said when he declared how he was to die.

33 Pilate went back into the praetorium, called Jesus, and asked him: "Are you the King of the Jews?" 34 Jesus answered: "Do you ask this question of yourself, or did others say it to you about me?" 35 Pilate said: "Am I a Jew? Your own nation and your chief priests have handed you over to me. What have you done?"

36 Jesus answered: "My kingdom is not of this world. If my kingdom were of this world, my soldiers would have fought to keep me from being handed over to the Jews. But my kingdom is not of this world."

37 Pilate asked him: "Then you are a King?" Jesus answered him: "Yes, as you say yourself, I am a King. I was born and I have come to the world to give testimony for the truth. Whoever believes in the truth listens to my voice." 38 Pilate asked him: "What is truth?"

BARABBAS

With these words Pilate went out, and said to the Jews: "I do not find him guilty at all. 39 But it is your custom to have me release one man for you at the Passover. Do you want me to release for you the King of the Jews?" 40 They shouted back: "Not this man, but Barabbas!" Now Barabbas was a bandit.

CHAPTER 19

THE CROWN OF THORNS

1 Then Pilate gave orders to have Jesus flogged. 2 Afterwards, the soldiers plaited a crown of thorns, placed it on his head, put on him a purple robe, 3 and saluted him: "Hail, King of the Jews!" Then they slapped him.

4 Pilate went out again and said to them: "Look! I bring him out to you to show you that I do not find him guilty at all." 5 So Jesus came out, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe. Pilate said to them: "Look! Here is the man."

6 When the chief priests and their attendants saw him, they shouted: "Crucify him, crucify him!" Pilate answered: "Take him and crucify him yourselves. For I do not find him guilty." 7 The Jews retorted: "We have a Law, and according to our Law he must die, because he claimed to be the Son of God."

8 When Pilate heard this statement, he was more frightened than before. 9 So he went back into the praetorium, and asked Jesus: "Where do you come from?" But Jesus made no answer. 10 Then Pilate said to him: "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do you not know that I have authority to crucify you and authority to release you?" 11 Jesus answered him: "The authority you have over me has not been given you from above. Therefore the man who delivered me to you is guilty of a greater sin."

12 From that moment Pilate tried to release him. But the Jews shouted: "If you release this man, you are not Caesar's friend. Whoever calls himself a king is Caesar's rival."

13 Thereupon, Pilate brought Jesus out and sat down on the judgment seat at a place called the Pavement, and in Hebrew Gabbatha. 14 Now it was the day of Preparation for the Passover. It was about the sixth hour. Then he said to the Jews: "Look! Here is your King!"

15 But they shouted: "Away with him, away with him, crucify him!" Pilate asked them: "Shall I crucify your King?" The chief priests answered: "We have no king but Caesar!" 16 Then Pilate handed him over to the soldiers to be crucified. So they took Jesus and led him away.

THE CRUCIFIXION

17 Jesus went forth, carrying his Cross to the Place of the Skull, which is called in Hebrew Golgotha. 18 There they

crucified him with two others, one on each side and Jesus in the middle.

19 Pilate wrote an inscription also, and placed it upon the Cross. It was written thus: "Jesus the Nazarene, King of the Jews." 20 Many Jews read this inscription, because the place where Jesus was crucified was close to the city. It had been written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin.

21 The chief priests asked Pilate to change the inscription on the Cross from "King of the Jews" to "Self-appointed King of the Jews." 22 But Pilate answered: "I am through with that inscription."

23 When the soldiers had crucified Jesus, they took his garments and divided them into four shares, one for each soldier. But his tunic was seamless, woven in one piece from top to bottom. So they said to one another: "Let us not tear it. Let us cast lots to decide who will get it."

24 Thus the prophecy of the Scripture was fulfilled: "They divided my garments among them, and they cast lots for my tunic."

MOTHER AND SON

25 By the Cross of Jesus were standing his Mother, his Mother's sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. 26 When Jesus saw his Mother and the Disciple whom he loved standing by, he said to his Mother: "Here is your son." 27 Then he said to his Disciple: "Here is your Mother." From that hour the Disciple took her into his own home.

DEATH

28 Thereupon Jesus, knowing that everything was now accomplished, in fulfillment of the Scriptures, said: "I am thirsty."

29 A bowl full of vinegar was standing there. The bystanders filled a sponge with vinegar, placed it on a hyssop-stalk, and held it to his mouth. 30 When Jesus had received the vinegar, he said: "It is finished." Then he bowed his head and expired.

31 As it was the day of the Preparation for the Passover, the Jews did not want the bodies to remain on the Cross on that Sabbath day. For it was a great festival. Therefore they requested Pilate to have the men's legs broken and the bodies

removed. 32 So the soldiers went and broke the legs of the first man and the other who had been crucified with him.

33 When they came to Jesus and saw that he was already dead, they did not break his legs. 34 But one of the soldiers pierced his side with a spear. Immediately blood and water flowed out.

35 The man who saw it testifies to it. His testimony is true. He knows that he tells the truth to enable you also to believe. 36 For these events occurred in fulfillment of the Scriptures: "Not one of his bones will be broken." 37 Again another Scriptural passage tells us: "They will see who is the man they have pierced."

38 Then Joseph of Arimathea came. He was a secret disciple of Jesus because of his fear of the Jews. So he requested Pilate to let him remove the body of Jesus. Pilate gave him permission. So he came and took the body of Jesus down.

39 Nicodemus, who had at first met Jesus by night, came also bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes weighing about a hundred pounds. 40 They took the body of Jesus and wrapped it up in linen cloths with the perfumes according to the burial custom of the Jews.

41 Now in the place where Jesus was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new tomb where no one had ever been laid. 42 So, as that tomb was close at hand, they buried Jesus there because of the Jewish day of Preparation.

CHAPTER 20

MARY MAGDALENE

1 Early in the morning of the first day of the week, Mary Magdalene went to the tomb while it was still dark. She noticed that the stone had been rolled away from the tomb.

2 Therefore she ran to Simon Peter and the other Disciple, whom Jesus loved, and told them: "They have taken away the Lord from the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid him."

3 Therefore Peter and the other Disciple set out for the tomb. 4 The two were running together. But the other Disciple outran Peter and arrived first at the tomb. 5 He stooped down and saw the linen bandages lying on the ground. But he did not go inside.

6 Then Simon Peter came after him and saw the linen bandages lying on the ground also. 7 Furthermore he noticed

that the napkin, which had been wrapped around the Lord's head, was not to be found with the other bandages. It was folded up in a separate place by itself.

8 Thereupon, the other Disciple, who had arrived first at the tomb, went inside too. He saw for himself and believed. 9 For as yet they did not know that according to the Scriptures he should rise from the dead. 10 Then the Disciples returned home.

11 But Mary Magdalene stood weeping outside the tomb. As she wept, she stooped down, 12 and saw two Angels in white sitting, one at the head and the other at the foot of the place where the body of Jesus had lain.

13 They asked her: "Woman, why are you weeping?" She answered them: "Because they have taken away my Lord, and I do not know where they have laid him."

14 Thereupon, she turned back and saw Jesus standing, but she did not recognize him. 15 Jesus asked her: "Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you looking for?" Supposing he was the gardener, she answered: "Sir, if you have taken him away, tell me where you have laid him, and I will carry him off." 16 Jesus said: "Mary!" She turned and exclaimed: "Rabbouni!" which is a Hebrew word meaning Master.

17 Jesus said to her: "Do not detain me. For I have not yet ascended to my Father. But go to my brethren and tell them that I am going up to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God."

18 So Mary Magdalene went and announced to his Disciples: "I have seen the Lord!" Then she reported to them what Jesus had told her.

THOMAS

19 It was the evening of that first day of the week. The doors where the Disciples were assembled had been locked for fear of the Jews. Suddenly, Jesus came in, stood in their midst, and said to them: "Peace unto you." 20 After these words he showed them his hands and his side. The Disciples rejoiced when they saw the Lord.

21 Then Jesus said to them again: "Peace unto you. As the Father has sent me, so I send you also." 22 Thereupon, he breathed on them, and said: "Receive the Holy Spirit. 23 Whatever sins you forgive they are forgiven. Whatever sins you retain they are retained."

24 Thomas, one of the twelve Apostles, who was called the Twin, was not with them when Jesus came. 25 Therefore the other Disciples told him: "We have seen the Lord." But he answered them: "Unless I see the mark of the nails in his hands, put my finger into the mark of the nails, and place my hand into his side, I will not believe."

26 Eight days later, the Disciples were indoors again. Thomas was with them this time. Though the doors were locked, Jesus came in again, stood in their midst, and said to them: "Peace unto you."

27 Then he said to Thomas: "Put your finger here and look at my hands. Place your hand into my side, and do not doubt, but believe." 28 Thomas answered: "My Lord and my God!" 29 Jesus said to him: "You believe now, because you have seen me. Blessed are those who have not seen me and yet believe."

30 Many other miracles, performed by Jesus in the presence of his Disciples, are not to be found in this Book. 31 But these few miracles have been recorded, because they will help you to believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God. This belief will enable you to inherit everlasting life in his name.

CHAPTER 21

MANIFESTATION IN GALILEE

1 After this incident Jesus manifested himself to his Disciples at the Sea of Tiberias. He did it in this way. 2 Simon Peter, Thomas called the Twin, Nathaniel from Cana in Galilee, the sons of Zebedee, and two others of his Disciples were all together.

3 Simon Peter said to them: "I am going fishing." They replied: "We are going with you also." They went out and boarded the ship. That night they caught nothing.

4 When day was breaking, Jesus stood on the beach. But the Disciples did not recognize him. 5 Jesus asked them: "Young men, have you caught any fish?" They answered: "No." 6 He told them: "Throw your net on the right side of the ship and you will get some." They did so, and they could not haul it in because of the great quantity of fish. 7 Then the Disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: "It is the Lord." Simon Peter, when he heard that it was the Lord, put on his jacket, as he was stripped for work, and jumped into the Sea.

8 The other Disciples followed with the ship dragging the

net full of fish. For they were not far from the shore, but only about a hundred yards away. 9 When they landed, they saw a charcoal fire burning, fish cooking on it, and some bread. 10 Jesus said to them: "Bring some of the fish you have just caught."

11 Simon Peter went aboard and hauled the net ashore. It was full of one hundred and fifty-three large fishes. Yet, though there were so many of them, the net was not torn.

12 Jesus said to them: "Come and have breakfast." None of the Disciples dared to ask him who he was. They knew well that it was the Lord. 13 Then Jesus came, took the bread, gave it to them, and the fish likewise. 14 This was the third time that Jesus had manifested himself to his Disciples after his Resurrection.

PETER AND JOHN

15 After the breakfast, Jesus asked Simon Peter: "Simon, son of John, do you love me more than these others do?" He answered: "Yes, my Lord, you know well that I love you." Jesus said to him: "Then feed my lambs."

16 Again he asked him for the second time: "Simon, son of John, do you love me?" He answered him: "Yes, my Lord, you know well that I love you." Jesus said: "Then tend my sheep."

17 For the third time, Jesus asked him: "Simon, son of John, do you love me?" Peter was hurt, because Jesus asked him for the third time. So he answered him: "My Lord, you know everything. You know well that I love you." Jesus said to him: "Then tend my sheep. 18 Well, well, I tell you, when you were young, you put on your girdle and went wherever you wanted. But when you grow old, you will stretch out your hands and another will gird you and carry you where you do not wish to go." 19 Thus he indicated the kind of death by which Peter would glorify God. Then he added: "Follow me."

20 Peter turned around and saw the Disciple whom Jesus loved following them. He was the one who leaned close to his breast at the Last Supper and asked him: "My Lord, who is the man who will betray you?" 21 Peter, when he saw him, asked Jesus: "My Lord, what about this man?"

22 Jesus answered him: "If I want him to remain until I return, what does it matter to you? You follow me." 23 This remark started the rumor among the brethren that this Disciple

was not to die. But Jesus did not tell him that he was not to die. He said merely: "If I want him to remain until I return, what does that matter to you?"

24 This is the Disciple who bears testimony to these facts and who wrote them down. As we know, his testimony is true. 25 There is much else besides that Jesus did. If all of it were recorded in detail, I do not think the world itself could contain the books which would be written. Amen.

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

CHAPTER 1

THE ASCENSION

1 In my first book, O Theophilus, I gave you a full account of what Jesus did and taught from the beginning of his mission 2 until the day he ascended into heaven. Before his Ascension he gave his final instructions about the Holy Spirit to the Apostles he had chosen. 3 For after his Passion he had appeared to them alive beyond any doubt. He had revealed himself to them repeatedly during a period of forty days. He had preached to them about the Kingdom of God.

4 While he was staying with them, he ordered them, saying: "Do not leave Jerusalem. But wait for the fulfillment of the promise of the Father about which I have spoken to you. 5 For John baptized with water, but in a few days you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit."

6 Then those who were assembled asked him: "Lord, will you now restore the kingdom of Israel?" 7 He answered them: "It is impossible for you to know the times and the periods of events which the Father has kept within his own providence. 8 But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit descends upon you. Then you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, in all Judea, in Samaria, and to the end of the earth."

9 With these words, while they were looking on, he was lifted up, and a cloud took him out of their sight. 10 While they were gazing after him into the sky, two men in white robes suddenly appeared beside them, 11 and said: "Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into heaven? This Jesus, who ascended into heaven, will come down in the same way as you saw him go up."

MATTHIAS

12 Then the Apostles returned to Jerusalem from the mountain called Olivet, which is a Sabbath day's journey from that city. 13 They entered the house where they were staying, and went up to an upper room. Among those present were

Peter, James, John, Andrew, Philip, Thomas, Bartholomew, Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the brother of James. 14 They were all united in prayer and supplication with the women, with Mary the Mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 Thereupon, Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples gathered together, who were about one hundred and twenty persons, and said: 16 "Brethren, the Scriptures had to be fulfilled according to the prediction of the Holy Spirit through the mouth of David concerning Judas. He acted as guide to those who arrested Jesus, 17 although he was one of our number and shared our ministry.

18 "Now this man bought a field with the price of his betrayal. But he fell headlong, he burst in the middle, and all his bowels gushed out. 19 This fact is well known to all the residents of Jerusalem. Therefore that field is called in their language Akeldama, that is to say, The Field of Blood. 20 For it is written in the Book of Psalms: 'His habitation will be desolate. No man will dwell therein. And another man will take his office.'

21 "Therefore another man must replace him as a witness to the Resurrection of our Lord Jesus. This person must be one of the disciples who has been associated with our company all the time our Lord Jesus dwelt among us, 22 from his Baptism by John to the day of his Ascension."

23 So they proposed two men, Joseph called Barsabbas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. 24 Then they prayed, and said: "O Lord, you who know all hearts, show us which one of these two men you have chosen 25 to assume the burden of this ministry and apostleship from which Judas has fallen away and gone to his own doom."

26 Subsequently, they cast lots between them. The lot fell to Matthias. So he took his place with the eleven Apostles.

CHAPTER 2

PENTECOST

1 When the day of Pentecost had arrived, all the Apostles gathered together in unity of mind. 2 Suddenly, there came from heaven a sound like the blast of a mighty wind, which filled the whole house where they were assembled. 3 Thereupon, they saw tongues of fire which were distributed and settled on each one of them. 4 Then they were all filled with the Holy

Spirit and began to speak in foreign languages, as the Spirit inspired them to express themselves.

5 At that time there were devout Jews from every part of the world living in Jerusalem. 6 When they heard this sound, they all gathered in great excitement, because each one heard them speaking in his own language.

7 They were perfectly amazed and said in their astonishment: "All these who speak are Galileans. 8 Yet each one of us hears them speaking in his own native tongue: 9 Parthians, Medians, Elamites; residents of Mesopotamia, Judea, Cappadocia, Pontus, Asia, 10 Phrygia, Pamphylia, Africa, and Cyrene; visitors from Rome, Jews, Proselytes, 11 Cretans, and Arabs — we all hear them tell in our native languages the mighty deeds of God."

12 They were perplexed and puzzled. They asked one another: "How do you explain this miracle?" 13 Others derisively said: "They are drunk with new wine."

PETER'S FIRST SERMON

14 Then Peter, standing with the eleven, raised his voice and said to them: "Men of Judea, and all inhabitants of Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and pay attention to my words. 15 These men are not drunk as you imagine. For it is only nine o'clock in the morning.

16 "On the contrary, this was predicted by the prophet Joel: 17 'In the last days, God declares, I will pour out my Spirit upon all mankind. Then your sons and daughters will prophesy. Your young men will see visions, and your old men will see dreams. 18 Yes, I will pour out my Spirit on my servants and my handmaids, and they will prophesy also. 19 I will show portents in the heaven above and miracles in the earth below, blood, fire, and clouds of smoke. 20 The sun will turn to darkness, and the moon to blood, before that great and splendid day of the Lord comes. 21 Then, everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.'

22 "Men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth was a man whom God has revealed to you by means of miracles, wonders, and mighty deeds, which he performed in your midst as you yourselves know. 23 This man was betrayed to you according to the predetermined design and foreknowledge of God. You murdered him by crucifying him through the hands of sinful men.

24 "But God raised him up and released him from the pangs of death, because death could not overpower him. 25 For David says concerning him: 'I saw the Lord always before me. He stands at my right hand and strengthens me. 26 Therefore my heart has rejoiced, my tongue has exulted, and my flesh will rest in hope. 27 For you will not abandon my soul to Hades, and you will not allow your faithful servant to suffer death. 28 You have shown me the way of life, and you will fill me with joy in your presence.'

29 "Brethren, I assure you that the patriarch David died and was buried. His tomb is known to us to this day. 30 He was a prophet, and knew that God had sworn to him with an oath that Christ, one of his descendants, would be raised from the dead and sit upon his throne. 31 So, as he foresaw the Resurrection of Christ, he said that he was not abandoned to Hades, and that his flesh was not allowed to suffer death.

32 "This Jesus was raised up by God, of which we all are witnesses. 33 He has been exalted at the right hand of God. He has received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, which he poured out as you see and hear. 34 For David did not ascend into heaven. But he says: 'The Lord said to my Master: Sit at my right hand 35 until I make your enemies a stool for your feet.' 36 Therefore, let all the house of Israel know most certainly that God made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Messiah."

REPENTANCE

37 When they heard this statement, they were deeply moved, and asked Peter and the other Apostles: "Brethren, what must we do?" 38 Peter answered: "Repent and be baptized, everyone of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you will receive the grace of the Holy Spirit. 39 For this promise has been made to you, to your children, and to the inhabitants of distant countries whom the Lord our God will invite." 40 And with many other sermons he urged them and exhorted them, saying: "Save yourselves from this perverse generation."

41 Then those who gladly received his message were baptized. On that day about three thousand souls joined them. 42 They all persevered in the teachings of the Apostles, their fellowship, their common meals, and their prayer meetings.

43 Every soul was struck with awe by the many miracles and wonders which the Apostles had performed.

LOVE FEASTS

44 All the believers held together and shared everything in common. 45 They sold their property and distributed the proceeds to their brethren according to their special needs. 46 Day by day they worshipped regularly in the temple. They broke their bread together in their homes. They enjoyed their food with gladness and simplicity of heart. 47 They praised God constantly. They won the favor of all the people continually. The Lord multiplied every day the number of those who were saved.

CHAPTER 3

THE LAME BEGGAR

1 One day Peter and John were going up to the temple at the ninth hour of prayer. 2 Now, a certain man, lame from his birth, was carried and placed daily at the entrance of the temple, which is called the Beautiful Gate, to beg alms from those who entered the sanctuary. 3 When he saw Peter and John on their way into the temple he asked for alms.

4 Peter fastened his eyes on him, as John did also, and said: "Look at us." 5 He looked at them attentively, hoping that they would give him something. 6 But Peter told him: "I have no silver and gold. But I will give you what I have. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk."

7 Then he seized him by the right hand and lifted him up. At once his feet and ankles were strengthened. 8 He sprang up and began to walk. Then he entered the temple with them walking, leaping, and praising God.

9 All the people saw him walking and praising God. 10 They recognized him as the man who used to sit and beg at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple. They were all astonished and amazed at the miracle which healed him.

PETER'S SECOND SERMON

11 The healed man clung to Peter and John. All the crowd gathered around them in what is called Solomon's Porch in utter amazement. 12 When Peter saw them, he said to the people: "Men of Israel, why do you wonder at this miracle?

And why do you stare at us as if we had enabled him to walk by our own power or piety?

13 "The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus. You betrayed him and denied him in the presence of Pilate when he decided to release him. 14 You disavowed the holy and righteous man. You demanded the pardon of a murderer. 15 And you killed the author of life. But God has raised him up from the dead. We are witnesses of his Resurrection. 16 His name and faith in him have healed this man whom you see and know. Yes, faith in him has given this man perfect health in the presence of you all.

17 "Now, brethren, I know that you and your rulers acted in ignorance. 18 Thus God has fulfilled the predictions of all the Prophets about the Passion of his Messiah.

19 "Therefore repent and turn to God. Then your sins will be forgiven. Happier days will come from the presence of the Lord, 20 and he will send back Jesus the Messiah, who was appointed for you. 21 For the time being, he must remain in heaven until the time of the universal restoration, of which God spoke through the mouth of the holy Prophets of old.

22 "For Moses said to our fathers: 'The Lord your God will raise up a Prophet from your brethren as he raised me up. You must listen to everything that he tells you. 23 Whoever does not listen to that Prophet will be exterminated from among the people.'

24 "All the Prophets who have spoken from Samuel down have foretold these days. 25 You are the sons of the Prophets and the heirs of the covenant which God made with your fathers when he said to Abraham: 'Through your descendants all the races of the earth will be blessed.' 26 Therefore, God raised up his servant Jesus and sent him to you first to bless you and turn away everyone of you from your wickedness."

CHAPTER 4

PETER AND JOHN

1 As the Apostles were preaching to the people, the priests, the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came to them 2 greatly disturbed, because they were teaching the people and proclaiming the resurrection from the dead through Jesus.

3 So they arrested them and put them in jail until the following day. For it was already evening. 4 But many of those

who had heard their message believed. Their number grew to about five thousand.

5 On the following day the Jewish leaders, elders, and scribes met in Jerusalem 6 with Annas the high priest, Caiaphas, John, Alexander, and the members of the high priest's family. 7 They placed the Apostles in the midst and asked them: "By what power and in what name have you done this healing?"

8 Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, answered them: "Leaders of the people and elders of Israel, 9 we are under investigation today concerning a benefit done to a cripple, and the means by which he was healed. 10 Let me tell you all and all the people of Israel that this man is standing restored before you in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified and whom God raised from the dead. 11 He is the Scriptural stone which was rejected by your builders, and which has now become the cornerstone. 12 No one else can give you salvation. His name is the only means under heaven by which we men can be saved."

13 The Jews were astonished, when they saw the intrepidity of Peter and John. They noticed that they were uneducated and plain men. They recognized them as Disciples of Jesus. 14 But they had nothing to say against the man who had been healed and was standing with them.

15 So they ordered them out of the council-chamber and conferred among themselves, 16 saying: "What shall we do with these men? We cannot deny that they performed a notable miracle. That is manifest to all the inhabitants of Jerusalem. 17 But this report must not be spread any further among the people. Therefore we must warn them with threats to preach no more to anyone in this name."

18 Thereupon, they called them in and ordered them not to speak or preach at all in the name of Jesus. 19 But Peter and John answered them: "Judge for yourselves whether it would be right for us in the sight of the Lord to obey you rather than God. 20 For we cannot help telling what we have seen and heard."

21 But after further threats they released them. They could find no way to punish them on account of the people. All of them were glorifying God for what had happened. 22 For the man who had been miraculously healed was more than forty years old.

23 When the Apostles were released, they returned to their companions and reported what the chief priests and the elders

had said to them. 24 When they heard their report, they raised their voices together to God and said: "Master, creator of heaven, earth, sea, and everything in them, 25 you have said through the mouth of our father David, your servant, who was inspired by the Holy Spirit: 'Why did the Gentiles rage and the nations plot in vain? 26 The kings of the earth rose up, and the rulers conspired together against the Lord and against his anointed.'

27 "Indeed, in this very city, Herod, Pontius Pilate, the Gentiles, and the people of Israel have conspired against Jesus, your holy servant, whom you have anointed, 28 to carry out what your hand and your will had predetermined. 29 Now, O Lord, observe their threats, and grant to your servants the power to proclaim your message fearlessly, 30 to heal the sick through your outstretched hand, and to perform miracles and wonders in the name of your servant Jesus."

31 After their prayer, the place in which they were assembled was shaken. Then they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and fearlessly proclaimed the message of God.

COMMON LIFE

32 All the company of the believers had one heart and soul. No one of them claimed anything as his own property. They shared everything in common. 33 The Apostles proclaimed the Resurrection of the Lord Jesus with the divine power and grace they possessed. No one among them was needy. 34 For all the owners sold their lands and their houses. 35 They put the proceeds at the disposal of the Apostles, who distributed them to the brethren according to their special needs. 36 One of them was Joseph, surnamed by the Apostles Barnabas, that is to say Son of Consolation, a Levite and a native of Cyprus. 37 He sold the land he owned and put the proceeds at the disposal of the Apostles.

CHAPTER 5

ANANIAS AND SAPPHIRA

1 Now a man named Ananias with his wife Sapphira sold a piece of property. 2 With his wife's connivance he appropriated a part of the price received. Then he brought the other part and laid it at the feet of the Apostles.

3 But Peter said to him: "Ananias, Satan tempted you

to lie to the Holy Spirit, and to appropriate a part of the price of the lot. 4 As long as it was unsold, it was yours. And after it was sold, the money was under your control. How could you think of committing such a sin? You have not lied to men, but to God."

5 When Ananias heard these words, he fell down and expired. Those who witnessed the event were appalled. 6 Then the young men rose, wrapped him up, carried him out, and buried him.

7 About three hours later, his wife, ignorant of what had happened, came in. 8 Peter asked her: "Tell me whether you sold the lot for such and such a price?" She answered: "Yes, that was the price." 9 Peter said to her: "Then, how is it that you conspired together to defy the Holy Spirit? Look, there at the door are the footsteps of those who buried your husband. They will carry you out also."

10 She fell down at his feet immediately and expired also. When the young men entered, they found her dead. So they carried her out and buried her beside her husband. 11 All the members of the church and all those who heard this story were terrified.

12 The Apostles performed many wonders and miracles among the people. They usually met together in Solomon's Colonnade. 13 None of the leaders dared to associate with them. But the common people held them in high honor. 14 Men and women in increasing numbers believed in the Lord and joined them. 15 They carried out the sick into the streets. They laid them on beds and mats, hoping that Peter's shadow would fall on some of them as he went by. 16 Crowds flocked together to Jerusalem from the neighboring towns bringing the sick and those afflicted by unclean demons. All of them were healed.

ARREST OF THE APOSTLES

17 The high priest and his supporters, who belonged to the party of the Sadducees, were aroused and filled with jealousy. 18 So they arrested the Apostles and put them in the public jail. 19 But an Angel of the Lord opened the jail doors in the night, let them out, and said to them: 20 "Go, stand in the temple, and proclaim all the doctrines of the Gospel to the people."

21 Thereupon, they entered the temple and began to preach. In the meantime, the high priest and his assistants came in and called together the council and the whole senate of the

sons of Israel. Then they sent the officers to the jail to have the Apostles brought in.

22 But when the officers came, they did not find them in the prison. So they returned, 23 and reported: "We found the prison securely locked and the sentries standing at the doors. But when we went in, we found no one inside."

24 When the high priest, the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard this report, they wondered what had become of them. 25 Thereupon, someone came in and told them: "The men whom you put in prison are standing right here in the temple preaching to the people."

26 Then the captain and his men went out and brought them in, but without using violence. For they were afraid of being stoned by the people. 27 When they brought them before the council, the high priest 28 said to them: "We strictly forbade you to preach in his name. Yet, here you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching, and accuse us as responsible for this man's death."

29 Peter and the Apostles answered: "We must obey God rather than men. 30 The God of our forefathers raised up Jesus whom you murdered by crucifying him. 31 God has exalted him with his right hand as our leader and Savior, in order to give repentance and remission of sins to Israel. 32 We and the Holy Spirit, whom God gave to those who obey him, are witnesses of his Gospel." 33 When they heard this statement, they were furious, and wanted to put them to death.

GAMALIEL

34 But a Pharisee and a doctor of the Law named Gamaliel, who was highly respected by the people, stood up before the council and asked them to send the Apostles out for a short time.

35 Then he said to them: "Men of Israel, think well before you take any action against these men. 36 Remember that some time ago Theudas arose, and claimed to be a divine messenger. A group of about four hundred followers joined him. He was slain. All his followers were scattered, and their movement was suppressed.

37 "After him, during the days of the census, Judas the Galilean arose and persuaded the people to revolt under his leadership. He perished also, and all his followers were dispersed.

38 "So in the present case I advise you to let these men
alone. For if their movement is of human origin, it will be
wrecked inevitably. 39 If it is of divine origin, you cannot put
it down. And you do not want to fight God by any means."

40 The chief priests were persuaded by his arguments. So
they called the Apostles, flogged them, ordered them not to
preach the Gospel of Jesus, and released them. 41 The Apostles
left the council chamber, rejoicing that they had suffered
indignity for the sake of Jesus. 42 Therefore they kept on
preaching every day in the temple and at home and proclaiming
Jesus as the Messiah.

CHAPTER 6

THE DEACONS

1 In those days, while the disciples were increasing in
number, the Greek-speaking Jews complained against the native
Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily
distribution of food.

2 So the twelve Apostles convoked the whole body of the
disciples and said to them: "It is not desirable that we should
give up preaching the message of God to serve tables. 3 There-
fore, brethren, pick out from your number seven men of good
standing, full of wisdom and of the Holy Spirit. We will put
them in charge of this service, 4 while we devote ourselves to
prayer and to preaching."

5 This recommendation met with the approval of the whole
body. So they selected Stephen, a man full of faith and of the
Holy Spirit, Philip, Prochor, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and
Nicholas, a convert from Antioch. 6 They brought them before
the Apostles who prayed for them and laid their hands on them.

7 In the meantime, the message of God continued to spread.
The number of the disciples in Jerusalem increased rapidly, and
a great number of priests accepted the faith.

STEPHEN'S ARREST

8 Now Stephen, full of faith and power, performed great
miracles and wonders among the people. 9 Then some members
of the synagogue known as the Freedmen, the Cyrenians, the
Alexandrians, the Cilicians, and the Asians arose and disputed
with Stephen. 10 But they could not meet the wisdom and the
inspiration with which he spoke.

11 So they instigated some men to say: "We have heard
him utter blasphemous statements against Moses and against
God." 12 Thus they stirred up the people, the elders, and the
scribes against him, set upon him, arrested him, and brought
him before the council.

13 Then they put forward false witnesses, who said: "This
man is constantly uttering blasphemous statements against this
holy temple and against the Law. 14 For we have heard him
say that Jesus of Nazareth will tear this sanctuary down and
change the customs which have been handed down to us by
Moses."

15 All those who sat at the council gazed at him, and saw
that his face was like that of an angel.

CHAPTER 7

THE PATRIARCHS

1 Then the high priest asked him: "Is this accusation true?"
2 Stephen answered: "Brothers and fathers, listen. The God
of glory appeared to our forefather Abraham in Mesopotamia,
before he settled in Harran, 3 and said to him: 'Leave your
country and your relatives, and come to the country I am
going to show you.'

4 "So he left the country of the Chaldeans and went to
live in Harran. After his father's death, God made him emigrate
from there into this land in which you are now dwelling. 5 He
gave him no property in it, not even a foot of space. But he
promised to give it as a possession to him and to his descendants,
though as yet he had no son.

6 "God said to Abraham: 'Your descendants will be
strangers, living in a foreign land. They will be enslaved and
ill-treated for four hundred years. 7 But I will punish the nation
that has enslaved them. Then they will be liberated and worship
me in this place.' 8 Later on, God gave Abraham the covenant of
circumcision. Abraham begot Isaac and circumcized him on the
eighth day. Isaac begot Jacob, and Jacob begot the twelve
patriarchs."

JOSEPH

9 "The patriarchs, envious of Joseph, sold him as a slave
to the Egyptians. 10 But God helped him and rescued him from
all his afflictions. He enabled him to win favor and show his

wisdom before Pharaoh, king of Egypt, who appointed him governor over Egypt and over all his household.

11 "Then a famine and great distress came over all Egypt and Canaan. Our forefathers could not find any food. 12 But Jacob heard that there was food in Egypt. So he sent our forefathers there on their first journey. 13 On their second journey Joseph made himself known to them, and Pharaoh learned about Joseph's family. 14 Then Joseph sent for his father Jacob and all his relatives, seventy-five souls in all. 15 So Jacob went into Egypt, where he and our forefathers died. 16 Afterwards, they were removed to Shechem, and were buried in the tomb which Abraham had bought for a sum of money from the sons of Hamor in Shechem."

MOSES

17 "The time approached for the fulfillment of the promise God had made to Abraham. Our people in Egypt increased and multiplied. 18 Another king, who knew nothing of Joseph, became ruler of Egypt. 19 He oppressed our people and outraged our forefathers. He compelled them to expose their infants and let them die.

20 "At this period Moses was born. He found favor in the presence of God. For three months he was nursed in his father's house. 21 When he was exposed, he was rescued by Pharaoh's daughter who brought him up as her own son. 22 So Moses was educated in all the Egyptian culture. He was mighty in speech and in action.

23 "When he was forty years old, it occurred to him to visit his brethren, the children of Israel. 24 When he saw one of them maltreated, he defended him and avenged him by killing his Egyptian oppressor. 25 He supposed that his brethren would understand that he was foreordained by God to liberate them. But his brethren failed to understand his mission.

26 "On the following day, he came across two of them quarreling and tried to reconcile them, saying: 'Men, you are brethren. Why do you injure one another?' 27 But the aggressor thrust him aside, saying: 'Who appointed you our ruler and arbiter? 28 Do you mean to murder me as you murdered the Egyptian yesterday?'

29 "At these words Moses fled, and lived in the land of Midian in exile where two sons were born to him. 30 Forty years later, an Angel appeared to him in the desert of Mount

Sinai, in the flame of a burning bush. 31 Moses wondered at the spectacle. As he approached to examine it, he heard the voice of the Lord, 32 who said to him: 'I am the God of your forefathers, the God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob.' Moses was terrified and turned away his face. 33 Then the Lord said to him: 'Take off your shoes, for the spot upon which you are standing is holy ground. 34 I have seen the oppression of my people in Egypt. I have heard their groans. And I have come down to deliver them. So get ready! I am going to send you to Egypt as my messenger.'

35 "So this Moses, who was rejected by his own people, was appointed by God as their leader and their redeemer through the Angel who appeared to him in the bush. 36 This man led them out through wonders and miracles in the land of Egypt at the Red Sea and in the desert for forty years. 37 This was the Moses who said to the sons of Israel: 'God will raise for you a Prophet like me from among your brethren.'

38 "This was the Moses who took part in the assembly of our forefathers in the desert, who heard the message of the Angel on Mount Sinai, who received the eternal commandments and delivered them to us. 39 But our forefathers refused to obey him. On the contrary, they repudiated him. Their hearts turned back to Egypt. 40 For they said to Aaron: 'Give us gods to lead us. For we do not know what has become of Moses who brought us out of the land of Egypt.'

41 "In those days, they fashioned a calf, they offered sacrifice to this idol, and they celebrated a holiday in honor of their own handiwork. 42 So God turned his back on them and abandoned them to worship the demons of the sky, as the Book of the Prophets tells us: 'You did not offer me victims and sacrifices in the desert for forty years, O sons of Israel. 43 On the contrary, you carried about the tabernacle of Moloch, the star of your god Rempham, and you worshipped the statues you fashioned yourselves. Therefore I will deport you beyond Babylon.' "

THE TEMPLE

44 "Our forefathers had the tabernacle in the desert as the Lord had directed Moses to build it according to the pattern he had seen. 45 When the Gentiles had been dispossessed by God, our forefathers under Joshua brought the tabernacle as an heirloom into the land they conquered. So it was until the days

of David. 46 Then David, who found favor in the sight of God, endeavored to find a dwelling-place for the God of Jacob.

47 "Solomon built a house for him. 48 But God does not live in temples made by human hands. As the prophet says: 49 'Heaven is my throne and the earth is my footstool. What house can you build for me? says the Lord. Or what is the place where I can rest? 50 For my hand created all the universe.' "

DENUNCIATION

51 "Stubborn people with pagan hearts and ears! You are always opposing the Holy Spirit, just as your forefathers did. 52 Your forefathers persecuted all the Prophets. They killed the men who foretold the coming of the Righteous One, whom you have recently betrayed and murdered. 53 You have received the Law and its commandments from the Angels, but you did not obey them."

MARTYRDOM

54 When they heard these accusations, they were furious and ground their teeth at him. 55 But he gazed into heaven, full of the Holy Spirit, saw the glory of God and Jesus standing at his right hand, 56 and said: "Look, I see the heavens opened, and the Messiah standing at the right hand of God."

57 They screamed loudly, stopped their ears, rushed together upon him, 58 cast him out of the city, and stoned him. The witnesses laid down their garments at the feet of a young man named Saul.

59 As they were stoning him, Stephen prayed: "Lord Jesus Christ, receive my spirit." 60 Then he knelt down, and exclaimed: "O Lord, do not count this sin against them." With these words he fell asleep. Saul approved his murder.

CHAPTER 8

PERSECUTION

1 In those days, a severe persecution broke out against the Church in Jerusalem. With the exception of the Apostles, all the believers were dispersed throughout the districts of Judea and Samaria.

2 Some pious men buried Stephen and made a loud lamentation over him. But Saul harassed the members of the

Church. 3 He searched house after house, dragged out men and women, and put them in prison. 4 Now those who were dispersed proclaimed the Gospel as they wandered from place to place.

5 Then Philip went down to a city of Samaria and proclaimed Christ to them. 6 When the people heard and saw the miracles he performed, they listened attentively and unanimously to what he told them. 7 Unclean spirits, crying aloud, came out of many who were possessed, and many who were paralyzed or lame were healed. 8 So there was great rejoicing in that city.

SIMON

9 Now there was a man named Simon, who had amazed the people of that city by practicing magic. He pretended to be a great man. 10 They all respected him, from the least to the greatest, and said: "This man possesses the great power of God." 11 They respected him because for a long time he had amazed them with his magic.

12 When Philip preached the Gospel about the Kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, men and women believed him and were baptized. 13 Even Simon himself believed, was baptized, and followed Philip. He was astonished by the great miracles and wonders he saw him perform.

14 When the Apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the Gospel, they sent Peter and John to them. 15 They came down and prayed that they might receive the Holy Spirit. 16 He had not descended on any of them, because they had only been baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. 17 So they laid their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

18 When Simon saw that the Holy Spirit was given through the imposition of the Apostles' hands, he offered them money, 19 saying: "Give me also this power, so that anyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit."

20 But Peter answered him: "May your money perish with you. For you have thought that the gift of God can be obtained with money. 21 You have no share or part in our mission. For your heart is not honest before God. 22 Therefore repent of this wickedness of yours, and pray to God that, if possible, this sinful purpose of your heart may be forgiven you. 23 For I see that you are a bitter poison and a bundle of iniquity."

24 Simon said to Peter: "Pray for me to the Lord that

nothing of what you have said may happen to me."

25 Then, when they had testified and preached the message and the Gospel of the Lord to many towns of Samaria, they returned to Jerusalem.

THE ETHIOPIAN

26 Then an Angel of the Lord said to Philip: "Rise and go toward the south to the road which goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza. It is a road running through the desert."

27 So he rose and went. There he found an Ethiopian eunuch, a minister and chief treasurer of Candace, the queen of Ethiopia. He had come to Jerusalem to worship, 28 and was on his way home. He was sitting on his chariot and was reading the book of the Prophet Isaiah.

29 Then the Spirit said to Philip: "Go up and stay near that chariot." 30 Philip ran up and heard him reading Isaiah the Prophet. Then he asked him: "Do you understand what you are reading?" 31 He answered: "How can I, if nobody explains it to me?" Then he invited Philip to come up and sit with him.

32 Now, the passage of the Scripture he was reading was the following: "He was led as a sheep to the slaughter. Like a lamb, dumb before its shearer, he did not open his mouth. 33 He was humiliated and unjustly condemned. Who will tell the story of his generation? For his life has perished from the earth."

34 The eunuch asked Philip: "Tell me, of whom is the Prophet speaking, of himself, or of someone else?" 35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and beginning with this passage of the Scripture, he preached to him the Gospel of Jesus.

36 As they went along the road, they came to some water, and the eunuch said: "Look, here is some water! What hinders me from being baptized?" 37 Philip answered him: "If you believe with all your heart, you may be baptized immediately." The eunuch said: "I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God."

38 Thereupon, he ordered the chariot to stop. Then Philip and the eunuch stepped down into the water and Philip baptized him. 39 When they came out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord snatched Philip away and the eunuch saw him no more. Then the eunuch proceeded on his way joyfully.

40 On the other hand, Philip found himself at Azotus. He passed through that region and preached in all the cities until he came to Caesarea.

CHAPTER 9

PAUL'S CONVERSION

1 In the meantime, Saul, still uttering murderous threats
against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest, 2 and
asked him to give him letters to the synagogues of Damascus.
He wanted to find all the men and women who belonged to the
new way of life, and bring them in chains to Jerusalem.

3 In the course of his journey, as he was approaching
Damascus, suddenly a light flashed from heaven around him
like lightning. 4 He fell upon the ground and heard a voice
saying to him: "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?" 5 He
asked: "My Lord, who are you?" He answered: "I am Jesus,
whom you are persecuting. You hurt yourself when you kick
against the pricks."

6 Trembling and dazzled, Saul asked: "My Lord, what do
you want me to do?" He answered: "Rise, go into the city, and
you will be told what to do."

7 His fellow-travelers stood bewildered. For they heard the
voice, but they could not see anyone. 8 Saul arose from the
ground and opened his eyes. But he could see nothing. So they
led him by the hand and brought him into Damascus. 9 For
three days he could not see and neither ate nor drank.

PAUL'S BAPTISM

10 Now there was in Damascus a disciple named Ananias.
The Lord called him in a vision: "Ananias!" He answered:
"My Lord, here I am."

11 Then the Lord said to him: "Rise up, go to the Straight
Street, and inquire at the house of Judah for a man named
Saul of Tarsus. He is now praying. 12 For he has seen in a
vision a man named Ananias, who entered and laid his hands
upon him to help him recover his eyesight."

13 Ananias replied: "My Lord, I have heard from many
people about this man. He has done a good deal of harm to
your saints in Jerusalem. 14 Now he is here with authority
from the chief priests to put in chains all those who invoke
your name."

15 But the Lord said to him: "Go, for he will now become
my chosen missionary. He will proclaim my Gospel to the
Gentiles, to the kings, and to the sons of Israel. 16 Moreover,

as I will show him, he will suffer martyrdom for my name."

17 So Ananias departed, entered the house, laid his hands on him, and said: "Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who appeared to you on the road by which you came, has sent me to help you recover your sight and receive the Holy Spirit."

18 Immediately, something like scales dropped from his eyes, and he regained his eyesight. Thereupon, he rose and was baptized. 19 Then he took some food and recovered his strength. He remained with the Disciples for a few days.

PAUL PREACHING THE GOSPEL

20 Immediately, he began to preach in the synagogues that Jesus is the Son of God. 21 All those who heard him were amazed, and said: "Is not this the man who persecuted in Jerusalem those who invoked this name, and who came here for the express purpose of bringing them in chains to the chief priests?"

22 But Saul grew more and more energetic, and confounded the Jews who lived in Damascus by proving that Jesus was the Messiah. 23 After several days, they formed a conspiracy to kill him. 24 But their plot became known to Saul. They watched the gates day and night to murder him. 25 But the disciples took him by night and let him down over the wall in a basket.

26 When he came to Jerusalem, he attempted to associate with the disciples. But they were all afraid of him. For they did not believe that he was really converted. 27 Barnabas, however, took him in charge and introduced him to the Apostles. He told them how on his journey Saul had seen the Lord in a vision, how the Lord had spoken to him, and how he had boldly preached in the name of Jesus at Damascus.

28 Subsequently, he associated freely with the Apostles in Jerusalem. 29 He preached fearlessly in the name of the Lord. He also spoke and debated with the Greek-speaking Jews. But they endeavored to murder him. 30 When, however, the brethren became aware of it, they brought him down to Caesarea, and sent him off to Tarsus.

31 So the churches throughout all Judea, Galilee, and Samaria enjoyed peace, were built up, and increased in numbers, walking in the fear of the Lord and in the consolation of the Holy Spirit.

THE PARALYTIC

32 As Peter was traveling about among them all, he happened to visit also the saints who resided at Lydda. 33 There he found a man named Aeneas, a paralytic, who had been bedridden for eight years. 34 Peter said to him: "Aeneas, Jesus Christ has healed you. Rise, and make your bed." He rose immediately. 35 All the residents of Lydda and Sharon saw him, and they turned to the Lord.

TABITHA

36 Now there was at Joppa a disciple named Tabitha, which means Dorcas, that is, Gazelle. She was entirely occupied in good works and acts of charity. 37 But it happened at that time that she fell sick and died. So they washed her and laid her in an upper room.

38 Lydda was near Joppa. The disciples had learned that Peter was there. They sent two men to him with the entreaty to come over without delay. 39 Peter arose and went with them. On his arrival they took him to the upper room. All the widows stood around him weeping and showing him the shirts and garments which Dorcas had made while she was still with them.

40 But Peter put them all away, knelt down and prayed. Then, turning to her, he said: "Tabitha, rise." Thereupon, she opened her eyes, saw Peter, and sat up. 41 He gave her his hand and lifted her up. Then, calling the saints and the widows, he presented her alive to them. 42 This miracle became known through all Joppa, and many believed in the Lord. 43 Peter remained in Joppa for many days at the house of a tanner named Simon.

CHAPTER 10

THE VISIONS

1 There was at Caesarea a man named Cornelius, a centurion of what was known as the Italian regiment. 2 He and all the members of his household were devout and pious people. He gave a great deal in alms to the poor, and prayed always to God.

3 In a vision, at about three o'clock in the afternoon, he saw clearly an Angel of God, who came in and called him: "Cornelius!" 4 He gazed at him terrified and asked him: "What

is it, my Lord?" The Angel answered him: "Your prayers and your alms have been remembered by God. 5 So, now send men to Joppa to fetch Simon surnamed Peter, 6 who is lodging at the house of Simon the tanner by the seaside. He will tell you what you must do."

7 When the Angel who spoke to him had departed, Cornelius called two of his servants and a devout soldier, who was one of his personal attendants, 8 told them the whole story, and sent them to Joppa.

9 On the following day, while they were traveling and approaching the town, Peter went up to the housetop at about noon to pray. 10 Then he felt very hungry and wanted something to eat. While they were preparing it, he fell into an ecstasy.

11 He saw the heaven open and a bundle like a great sheet coming down, lowered by the four corners to the earth. 12 It contained all kinds of animals, reptiles, and birds of the sky. 13 Then a voice said to him: "Rise, Peter, kill, and eat."

14 But Peter answered: "No, Lord, for I have never eaten anything profane and unclean." 15 The voice said to him for the second time: "You must not call profane what God has cleansed." 16 This happened three times. Then the bundle was immediately taken up to heaven.

17 Peter was wondering what his vision meant. In the meantime, the men sent by Cornelius inquired their way to Simon's house and stopped at the door. 18 They called and asked whether Simon surnamed Peter was lodging there. 19 While Peter was pondering over his vision, the Holy Spirit said to him: "Listen! Three men are looking for you. 20 Rise, go down, and accompany them without hesitation."

21 Peter went down to the men whom Cornelius had sent to him, and said to them: "I am the man you are looking for. What is the reason for your coming?"

22 They answered him: "Cornelius the centurion, a righteous and God-fearing man, who is well attested by the entire Jewish nation, was instructed by a holy Angel to invite you to his house and hear your advice."

23 So he invited them in and entertained them as his guests. On the following day, Peter started off with them, accompanied by some brethren from Joppa. 24 The day after, they entered Caesarea. Cornelius was waiting for them with his relatives and his close friends whom he had invited.

25 When Peter came in, Cornelius welcomed him, fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. 26 But Peter lifted him up, and said: "Stand up, I am also a man."

27 As he talked with him, he went in, found many persons gathered, 28 and said to them: "You know that it is unlawful for a Jew to associate with, or visit, a Gentile. But God has taught me that I should call no man profane or unclean. 29 So I came without hesitation when you invited me. May I ask you now for what reason you have sent for me?"

30 Cornelius answered him: "Four days ago from this hour, I was fasting and keeping the ninth hour of prayer in my house. Suddenly, a man stood before me in dazzling garments, 31 and said to me: 'Cornelius, your prayer has been heard and your alms have been remembered by God. 32 Therefore send men to Joppa and invite Simon surnamed Peter, who is lodging in the house of Simon the tanner by the seaside. He will come and speak to you.'

33 "At once I sent men to you, and you have been kind enough to come. Now we are all here in the presence of God to hear everything that the Lord has commanded you to tell us."

34 Peter answered: "I see clearly that God makes no distinction between persons. 35 On the contrary, he welcomes every man from every nat ion who fears him and does what is right. 36 He sent his message to the sons of Israel, he preached the Gospel through Jesus Christ who is the Lord of the universe.

37 "You know the story which was proclaimed throughout all Judea, beginning from Galilee after the baptism preached by John. 38 I mean the story of Jesus of Nazareth, whom God has anointed with the Holy Spirit and with power. He went about doing good, healing those who were tortured by the devil. For God was with him.

39 "We are witnesses of all his deeds in the country of the Jews and in Jerusalem. Yet they killed him by hanging him on the Cross. 40 But God raised him up on the third day and revealed him, 41 not to the people at large, but to us, the witnesses whom God had foreordained. We ate and drank with him after his Resurrection.

42 "He commanded us to preach to the people and to testify that God has appointed him judge of the living and the dead. 43 All the Prophets testify that everyone who believes in him will obtain remission of sins through his name."

CONVERSION OF GENTILES

44 While Peter was speaking these words, the Holy Spirit
descended on all those who were listening to his message.
45 The Jewish believers who accompanied Peter were amazed.
The gift of the Holy Spirit had been showered even upon the
Gentiles. 46 For they heard them speaking in foreign languages
and proclaiming the greatness of God. Then Peter declared:
47 "No one can refuse water for baptizing these people who
have received the Holy Spirit just as we have." 48 So he
commanded his companions to baptize them in the name of the
Lord. Then they asked him to remain for some days with them.

CHAPTER 11

APPROVAL

1 The Apostles and the brethren in Judea heard that the
Gentiles also had received the Gospel. 2 So, when Peter went
up to Jerusalem, the advocates of circumcision criticized him,
3 saying: "You have visited uncircumcized men and eaten with
them."

4 Thereupon, Peter told them the story point by point from
the beginning: 5 "I was in the city of Joppa praying, when I
fell into a trance and saw a vision. A bundle, like a great sheet,
lowered down from heaven by four corners, came down to me.
6 Looking at it closely, I observed animals of the earth, reptiles,
and birds of the sky. 7 Then I heard a voice saying to me:
'Rise, Peter, kill and eat.'

8 "I answered: 'No, my Lord. For nothing profane or
unclean has ever crossed my lips.' 9 Then the voice from heaven
told me for the second time: 'You must not call profane what
God has cleansed.' 10 This happened three times. Then all was
drawn up again into heaven.

11 "At that very moment, three men, sent to me by
Cornelius from Caesarea, arrived at the house in which we were
lodging. 12 The Holy Spirit advised me to go with them without
hesitation. Accompanied by these six brethren, we went to the
house of Cornelius. 13 This man related to us that an Angel
had appeared in his house and said to him: 'Send to Joppa and
fetch Simon surnamed Peter. 14 For he will give you a message
which will bring salvation to you and to all your family.'

15 "As I began to speak to them, the Holy Spirit descended

upon them, just as he did upon us at the beginning of our mission. 16 Then I remembered that the Lord said to us: 'John baptized with water, but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit.' 17 Now, if God gave them the same gift which he gave us when we believed in our Lord Jesus Christ, then of course I had no power to stay the hand of God."

18 When the Apostles and the brethren heard this statement, they were persuaded, and glorified God, saying: "Then surely God has granted life-giving repentance to the Gentiles also."

THE FIRST CHRISTIANS

19 In the meantime, the Apostles were scattered because of the persecution which arose over Stephen, and traveled as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch. But they preached the Gospel only to the Jews. 20 Yet some of them, men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who had come to Antioch, preached the Gospel of the Lord Jesus to the Gentiles also. 21 The hand of God was with them. So a great number of men believed and turned to the Lord.

22 The news about them reached the ears of the Church in Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch. 23 When he came and saw the grace of God, he was glad, and exhorted them all to remain steadfast and faithful to the Lord. 24 For he was a good man, full of the Holy Spirit and of faith. So a considerable number of people were converted to the Lord.

25 Then Barnabas proceeded to Tarsus to look for Saul. 26 He found him and brought him to Antioch. They met for a whole year in that church and preached to large numbers of people. Now it was in Antioch that for the first time the disciples were called Christians.

27 About that time prophets from Jerusalem came down to Antioch. 28 One of them named Agabus stood up and foretold through the Holy Spirit that a great famine was going to occur all over the world. This famine took place in the days of Claudius. 29 Therefore the disciples, each according to his ability, decided to send relief to the brethren who lived in Judea. 30 They did so, and sent it to the elders through the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAPTER 12

PETER IN PRISON

1 At that time, Herod the king persecuted violently some members of the Church, 2 and beheaded James, the brother of John. 3 When he saw that the Jews were pleased, he proceeded to arrest Peter also during the festival of the Unleavened Bread. 4 After arresting him, he put him in prison and committed him to the custody of four squads of soldiers, as he intended to bring him out to the people after the Passover. 5 Peter was kept in jail, but fervent prayer was made to God by the Church in his behalf.

DELIVERANCE

6 The very night Herod was going to bring him out, Peter, bound with two chains, was sleeping between two soldiers while sentinels before the door were guarding the prison.

7 Suddenly an Angel of the Lord stood at his side, and light illumined the cell. He struck Peter on the side, woke him, and said: "Rise up quickly." Thereupon, his chains fell from his hands. 8 Then the Angel said to him: "Put on your belt and your sandals." Peter did so. Then he said to him: "Now put on your mantle and follow me."

9 Peter went out following him. But he did not realize that what was done by the Angel had really occurred. He supposed that he was seeing a vision. 10 When they had passed the first and second guard, they came to the iron gate leading into the city which opened to them of its own accord. Then they went out and passed along one street, when suddenly the Angel disappeared.

11 Then Peter came to himself, and said: "Now I am certain that the Lord has sent his Angel and rescued me from the power of Herod and from the persecution of the Jewish people."

12 When Peter realized his situation, he went to the house of Mary, the mother of John, surnamed Mark, where many disciples were gathered together and were praying.

13 When he knocked at the door of the gateway, a maid named Rhoda came to answer. 14 She recognized Peter's voice. She was so overjoyed that she did not stop to open the door. She ran in and announced to the disciples that Peter was standing at the gate.

15 They told her: "You are mad." But she insisted that it was so. Then they said: "It may be his angel."

16 In the meantime, Peter kept on knocking. When they opened the door and saw him, they were amazed. 17 But he motioned to them with his hand to be silent, and related to them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. He added: "Report this news to James and to the brethren." Then he left and went to another place.

THE PUNISHMENT

18 When day came, the soldiers were greatly disturbed over Peter's disappearance. Herod searched for him, but failed to find him. 19 He cross-examined the sentries and ordered them to be put to death. Then he left Judea and went down to Caesarea, where he remained for a short while.

20 At that time Herod was very angry with the Tyrians and the Sidonians. But they approached him in a body and sued for peace through Blastus, the king's chamberlain whom they had won over. For their cities depended upon the king's dominions for their food supplies. 21 A day was fixed for an audience. Herod, arrayed in royal robes and sitting on the throne, received their delegates and delivered an oration to them. 22 They all applauded and shouted: "You speak to us like a god, and not like a man."

23 Thereupon, the Angel of the Lord struck him down, because he did not give the honor to God, but to himself. He died immediately and was eaten by worms.

24 In the meantime, the disciples of the divine Gospel increased and multiplied. 25 When Barnabas and Saul had fulfilled their mission, they returned from Jerusalem to Antioch, and brought with them John surnamed Mark.

CHAPTER 13

PAUL IN ANTIOCH

1 The Church of Antioch had as its prophets and teachers Barnabas, Simeon surnamed Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen, a member of the court of Herod the tetrarch, and Saul. 2 While they were fasting and worshipping the Lord, the Holy Spirit told them: "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them." 3 So, after fasting and praying, they laid their hands on them and sent them off.

IN CYPRUS

4 Thus, designated by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia, and from there they sailed for Cyprus. 5 When they arrived at Salamis, they preached the divine Gospel in the synagogues of the Jews. They were assisted by John.

6 When they had gone through the whole island as far as Paphos, they found a certain magician and false prophet, a Jew, named Bar-Jesus. 7 He was with the proconsul Sergius Paulus, a man of intelligence who had sent for Barnabas and Saul as he desired to hear the divine Gospel.

8 Elymas the magician, for that was what his name meant, opposed them, and sought to turn away the proconsul from the faith. 9 But Saul, who is also called Paul, inspired by the Holy Spirit, fastened his eyes on him, 10 and said: "Son of the devil, enemy of all righteousness, full of all deceit and trickery, stop perverting the straight paths of the Lord. 11 For the hand of the Lord is upon you. Now you will be blind and unable to see the sun for a time." Immediately, a mist and darkness fell upon him. So he went about seeking people to lead him by the hand. 12 When the proconsul saw what had occurred, he believed and was overcome with awe at the Gospel of the Lord.

IN ANTIOCH OF PISIDIA

13 Paul and his company set sail from Paphos and came to Perga of Pamphylia. Thereupon, John left them and returned to Jerusalem. 14 But they passed on from Perga and came to Antioch of Pisidia. On the Sabbath day, they went to the synagogue and sat down. 15 After the lesson from the Law and the Prophets, the leaders of the synagogue sent a message to them, saying: "Brothers, if you want to make any exhortation to the people, proceed."

PAUL'S FIRST SERMON

16 Then Paul stood up, waved his hand for silence, and said: "Men of Israel and God-fearing brothers, listen. 17 The God of this people of Israel chose our forefathers, uplifted our people during their residence in the land of Egypt, and led them out of that country with upraised arm. 18 He took care of them in the desert for about forty years.

19 "He destroyed seven nations in Canaan, and gave them their land as an inheritance for about four hundred and fifty

years. 20 Afterwards, he gave them judges until the time of Samuel the Prophet. 21 Then they demanded a king, and God gave them Saul, the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin who reigned for forty years.

22 "When God had removed him, he raised up David to be their king, and testified about him, saying. 'I have found David, the son of Jesse, a man after my own heart who will fulfill all my desires.' 23 From his descendants, as he had promised, God has brought to Israel a Savior, Jesus. 24 John had prepared the way for his coming by proclaiming a baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 "As John reached the end of his career, he said: 'Who do you suppose I am? I am not the Messiah as you think. But certainly he is coming after me. He is so superior to me that I am not worthy to untie the lace of his sandals.'

26 "Brethren, sons of Abraham and God-fearing men, this message of salvation was sent to you. 27 But the inhabitants of Jerusalem and their leaders did not recognize him. They did not understand the predictions of the Prophets which are read every Sabbath day. But they fulfilled them by condemning him. 28 Although they could not find him guilty of a capital crime, they asked Pilate to have him executed.

29 "When they had carried out all the Scriptural prophecies dealing with him, they took him down from the Cross and laid him in a tomb. 30 But God raised him from the dead. 31 He was seen for many days by those who had come with him from Galilee to Jerusalem. Now these men are his witnesses before the people. 32 We also proclaim to you that God has fulfilled for us the promises which he made to our forefathers. 33 He raised Jesus from the dead, as it is written in the second Psalm: 'You are my Son. I have begotten you today.'

34 "Moreover, he confirmed his Resurrection and his immortality by saying: 'I will grant you the blessings I promised to David.' 35 In another Psalm he says: 'You will not allow your holy servant to undergo decay.'

36 "Now David, after serving his divine mission in his own generation, fell asleep in the Lord, was laid among his forefathers, and did undergo decay. 37 But our Lord whom God raised from the dead did not undergo decay at all.

38 "Therefore, brethren, you must understand that forgiveness of sins has been proclaimed to you through Jesus. 39 Moreover, every believer is liberated by Jesus from all the obligations of the Law of Moses. 40 Therefore be careful, and

do not incur the reproach of the Prophet who says: 41 'Listen, you scoffers, you will be amazed and confounded. For I am doing in your times a deed which you will never believe when it is related to you.' "

42 As Paul and his companions left, they were implored by the people to preach the same message on the next Sabbath day. 43 When the meeting of the synagogue broke up, many devout Jews and converts to Judaism followed Paul and Barnabas. They preached to them again and urged them to persevere in the grace of God.

JEWS AND GENTILES

44 On the following Sabbath day, almost all the inhabitants of the city had assembled to hear the Gospel. 45 When the Jews saw the crowd they were jealous, and contradicted the statements of Paul with blasphemies. 46 Thereupon, Paul and Barnabas spoke out boldly and said: "We were bound to preach the Gospel to you first. But since you reject it and declare yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, we now turn to the Gentiles. 47 For this is the commandment the Lord has given us: 'I have appointed you to enlighten the Gentiles and to bring salvation to the ends of the earth.' "

48 The Gentiles were delighted by this statement, and glorified the Gospel of the Lord. Many of them who were foreordained to everlasting life joined the company of believers. 49 So the Gospel of the Lord was disseminated all over that region.

50 But the Jews stirred up the pious ladies of high standing and the leading men of the city, started a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them from their district. 51 The Apostles shook off the dust from their feet in protest and went to Iconium. 52 They were filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER 14

ICONIUM

1 At Iconium the disciples went to the Jewish synagogue together and preached the Gospel to the people. A great number of Jews and Gentiles joined the company of believers. 2 But the unbelieving Jews poisoned the minds of the Gentiles and embittered them against the brethren. 3 The Apostles remained

there for a long time. They preached fearlessly the Gospel of the Lord, who confirmed their gracious message by enabling them to perform wonders and miracles.

4 The inhabitants of the city were divided. Some sided with the Jews, and some with the Apostles. 5 Soon both the Gentiles and the Jews, in concert with their rulers, conspired to abuse them and stone them. 6 But the Apostles became aware of it, and fled to Lystra, Derbe, and the neighboring cities of Lycaonia, 7 where they continued to preach the Gospel.

8 At Lystra there was a man sitting who could not use his feet. He had been lame from his birth and had never walked. 9 He was listening to Paul's sermon. Paul looked at him, saw that he had faith in his salvation, 10 and said to him loudly: "Stand upright on your feet." Thereupon, he sprang up and began to walk.

11 When the people saw Paul's miracle, they raised their voices and said in Lycaonian: "The gods have come down to us in human form." 12 They called Barnabas Jupiter, and Paul Mercury, because he was the chief spokesman.

13 The priest of Jupiter, whose temple stood at the entrance of the town, brought bulls and wreaths to the gates to offer them sacrifice with the people.

14 When the Apostles Barnabas and Paul heard of it, they tore their garments, ran out among the people, 15 and shouted: "Men, why are you making all this fuss? We also are mortal men like yourselves. We are preaching the Gospel to you so that you may turn from these superstitions to the living God, who created the heaven, the earth, the sea, and everything in them.

16 "In past generations he allowed the Gentiles to follow their own ways. 17 But he has not left us without some proof of what he is. He helped us with his bounties. He sent us rain from heaven and fruitful seasons. He filled our hearts with food and gladness." 18 Even with these words they could hardly restrain the people from offering sacrifices to them.

PAUL STONED

19 But some Jews came there from Antioch and Iconium. They won over the people to their side, stoned Paul, and dragged him out of the city where they left him for dead. 20 But while the Apostles were standing around him, he rose up and entered the city.

DERBE

On the following day, Paul went on to Derbe with Barnabas.
21 They preached the Gospel to that city and made many
disciples. Then they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch.
22 They fortified the souls of the disciples, exhorted them to
persevere in the faith, and reminded them that we have to
enter the Kingdom of God through many sufferings. 23 With
fasting and prayer they ordained priests in every Church. Then
they commended them to the Lord in whom they had believed.

24 Passing through Pisidia and Pamphylia, 25 they preached
the Gospel in Perga, and went down to Attalia. 26 From there
they sailed to Antioch, where they had first received the divine
grace for the mission which they had accomplished.

27 On their arrival they called a meeting of the Church,
and told them the story of all the work that God had achieved
through them by opening the door of the faith to the Gentiles.
28 They stayed there a considerable time with the disciples.

CHAPTER 15

FOR CIRCUMCISION

1 In the meantime, some persons who had come from Judea,
began to tell the brethren: "Unless you are circumcised in
accordance with the Mosaic doctrine you cannot be saved."
2 Paul and Barnabas had a great argument and controversy
with them. So it was resolved that Paul, Barnabas, and some
of their opponents should go up to consult the Apostles and
Presbyters at Jerusalem about this question.

3 The members of the local Church saw them off on their
journey. As they travelled through Phoenicia and Samaria, they
reported the conversion of the pagans, and caused great rejoicing
to all the brethren. 4 When they arrived at Jerusalem, they
were welcomed by the members of the Mother Church, the
Apostles, and the Presbyters. They told them how God had
helped them in their mission.

5 But some believers who belonged to the sect of the
Pharisees rose up and said: "The converts must be circumcised
and they must be ordered to observe the Law of Moses."

AGAINST CIRCUMCISION

6 The Apostles and the Presbyters held a meeting to
consider the matter. 7 After a long discussion, Peter rose and

said to them: "Brethren, you know that from the early days God has chosen me as the Apostle through whose lips the Gentiles should hear the message of the Gospel and believe.

8 "Moreover, God who knows the hearts of men testified in their behalf by granting the Holy Spirit to them, just as he did to us. 9 He made no distinction between us and them. He cleansed their hearts by faith. 10 So we cannot call into question this act of God by placing upon the neck of the converts a yoke which neither our forefathers nor we were able to bear. 11 On the contrary, we believe that we shall be saved through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, just as they will."

12 All those who attended the meeting were silent, and listened to Barnabas and Paul who told them what miracles and wonders God had performed through them among the Gentiles.

JAMES

13 After they had finished their reports, James replied to them: "Brethren, listen to me. 14 Peter has told us that God himself was the first one who tried to convert the Gentiles to the worship of his name. 15 The Prophets agree with him. For the Lord tells through them: 16 'Then I will return and raise up the fallen tabernacle of David. I will rebuild its ruins and set it up again. 17 Then all mankind will seek the Lord, and all the Gentiles will worship my name. 18 So says the Lord, who made these predictions in the days of old.'

19 "Therefore, in my opinion, we should not overburden the Gentiles who are converted to God. 20 We should only write them to abstain from sacrifices of idols, from fornication, from meat of strangled animals, and from blood-meat. 21 These prescriptions of the Law of Moses have been preached from ancient times in every city, and are being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day."

THE DECISION

22 Then the Apostles, the Presbyters, and the members of the Mother Church of Jerusalem resolved to select representatives and send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. So they sent Judas called Barsabbas, and Silas, both of them leading men among the brethren. 23 They were the bearers of the following letter: "The brethren, Apostles, and Presbyters

of Jerusalem send greetings to the Gentile brethren of Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia.

24 "We have learned that some persons from our city without our authorization have disturbed you and have confused your minds with their teachings. 25 Therefore we have unanimously resolved to select representatives and dispatch them to you with our beloved brethren Barnabas and Paul. 26 These men, as you well know, have risked their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. 27 So we have sent Judas and Silas who will confirm our message by word of mouth. 28 The Holy Spirit and we have decided to lay upon you only the following indispensable burdens: 29 You must abstain from sacrifices of idols, from blood-meat, from meat of strangled animals, and from fornication. If you observe these rules, you will have done your part. Farewell."

30 So they took their leave and went to Antioch. 31 Then they called a meeting and delivered the letter. When the brethren of Antioch read the letter, they rejoiced at this encouragement. 32 Judas and Silas, who were inspired preachers, exhorted the brethren and strengthened their faith. 33 After remaining there for some time, they were allowed to depart in peace from the brethren of Antioch to the Apostles of Jerusalem who had sent them. 34 Silas, however, preferred to stay in Antioch. So Judas set out for Jerusalem alone. 35 Paul and Barnabas remained in Antioch, teaching and preaching the Gospel of the Lord with many other missionaries.

PASTORAL VISITS

36 After some days, Paul said to Barnabas: "Let us go back now and visit the brethren in every city in which we have preached the Gospel of the Lord to see how they are doing."

37 Barnabas wanted to take with them John surnamed Mark. 38 Paul, however, thought it was not advisable to take him along. For he had deserted them at Pamphylia and had not accompanied them in their mission. 39 So sharp was their disagreement that they separated from each other. Barnabas took Mark with him and sailed for Cyprus.

40 Paul selected Silas for his companion and went on his journey. All the brethren commended him to the grace of the Lord. 41 He traveled through Syria and Cilicia where he confirmed the Churches in the faith.

CHAPTER 16

TIMOTHY

1 Then Paul visited Derbe and Lystra. Here he met a disciple named Timothy, son of a believing Jewish mother and a Gentile father. 2 He was highly esteemed by the brethren in Lystra and Iconium. 3 Paul decided to take him as a companion on his mission. So he had him circumcized on account of the Jews who lived in that region. For they all knew that his father was a Gentile. 4 As they traveled through the cities, they urged the brethren to observe the decisions which had been reached by the Apostles and the Presbyters in Jerusalem. 5 So the Churches were confirmed in the faith, and they increased in numbers daily.

THE MACEDONIAN VISION

6 Thus they crossed Phrygia and Galatia. But the Holy Spirit prevented them from preaching the Gospel in Asia. 7 When they reached Mysia, they attempted to proceed to Bithynia. But the Spirit of Jesus did not allow them to do it. 8 So they crossed Mysia and went down to Troas.

9 During the night Paul had a vision. A Macedonian appeared to him and implored him: "Come over to Macedonia and help us." 10 Immediately, after this vision we endeavored to set out for Macedonia. For we were persuaded that God had summoned us to preach the Gospel in that country.

PHILIPPI

11 So we sailed from Troas and went directly to Samothrace. On the following day we reached Neapolis. 12 From there we proceeded to Philippi, a capital city of that district in Macedonia, where a Roman garrison was stationed. We remained in this city for some days.

13 On the Sabbath day, we went out beyond the city gates where we understood that there was a house of worship, and we preached to the assembled women. 14 One of our listeners was a woman named Lydia, a dealer in purple from the city of Thyatira and a worshiper of the true God. The Lord enlightened her mind, and enabled her to understand the sermon of Paul. 15 So she and all the members of her family were baptized. Then she appealed to us and said: "If you are persuaded that I believe in the Lord, come and stay at my house." As she insisted, we had to accept her hospitality.

THE POSSESSED GIRL

16 While we were on our way to the house of worship, we
met a slave-girl possessing a spirit of divination, who brought
her masters a large profit by fortune-telling. 17 Following after
Paul and us, she kept screaming: "These men are servants of
God. They are proclaiming to us the way of salvation."

18 She repeated her screams for several days. Paul was
annoyed, turned back, and said to her spirit: "I command you
to come out of her in the name of Jesus Christ." At that very
moment the spirit came out of her.

ARREST OF PAUL

19 Her masters, who saw that all their hopes of profit had
vanished, seized Paul and Silas, dragged them off to the tribunal
in the market place, 20 and said to the magistrates: "These
men are Jews and they are making a great disturbance in our
city. 21 They are preaching doctrines which it is not lawful
for us Romans to accept or practice."

22 The crowd supported the accusation against them. Then
the magistrates gave orders to tear their clothes off and
flog them. 23 After beating them severely, they put them in
jail, and commanded the jailer to keep close watch over them.
24 Accordingly the jailer confined them to the inner dungeon
and fastened their feet in the stocks.

25 About midnight, Paul and Silas were praying and
chanting psalms to God while the prisoners listened to them.
26 Suddenly, there was an earthquake so violent that the
foundations of the prison were shaken. All the doors flew open,
and everybody's chains were unfastened.

27 The jailer woke up and saw that the prison doors were
open. He drew his sword and was going to kill himself. For
he supposed that the prisoners had escaped.

28 But Paul shouted loudly: "Do not harm yourself. For
we are all here." 29 The jailer called for lights, rushed in, and
trembling fell at the feet of Paul and Silas. 30 Then he led
them out of the jail and asked them: "Gentlemen, what must
I do to be saved?" 31 They answered him: "Believe in the
Lord Jesus Christ. Then you and your household will be saved."
32 Thereupon, they preached the Gospel of the Lord to him
and to his household.

33 Immediately, he took them aside at that hour of the
night, washed their wounds, and without delay he and all his

household were baptized. 34 Then he took them up to his house and spread a table for them. So he rejoiced with all his household, because he had believed in God.

DELIVERANCE

35 When day came, the magistrates sent policemen with instructions to release the prisoners. 36 The jailer reported this message to Paul, saying: "The magistrates have ordered me to release you. So come out now, and go in peace." 37 But Paul replied: "They have flogged us in public without a trial, although we are Roman citizens. They have thrown us into prison. Now they want to dismiss us secretly. No! Let them come themselves and release us."

38 The policemen reported this message to the magistrates, who were alarmed when they heard that they were Roman citizens. 39 So the magistrates came themselves, apologized to them, released them, and advised them to depart from their city. 40 Thereupon, Paul and Silas left the prison. They went to Lydia's house, where they saw the brethren and gave them encouragement. Then they set out on their journey.

CHAPTER 17

SALONICA

1 The Apostles, passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, came to Salonica where there was a Jewish synagogue.

2 Paul, according to his custom, went in and for three Sabbath days he discussed the Scriptures with them. 3 He explained them and showed them that the Messiah had to suffer and to rise from the dead. Then he added: "This Jesus whom I preach to you is the Messiah."

4 Some of them were persuaded, and joined Paul and Silas along with a great many devout Gentiles and several leading women. 5 But the dissident Jews were jealous. So they gathered some wicked loafers, formed a mob, and set the city in an uproar. Then they attacked the house of Jason, and tried to seize them and bring them out to justice. 6 As they could not find them, they dragged Jason and some of the brethren before the city magistrates, shouting: "These men, who have turned the world upside down, have come here also. 7 Jason has received them as his guests. They all disobey the decrees of Caesar, and claim that another man called Jesus is their king."

8 The people and the city magistrates were disturbed when
they heard this accusation. 9 They released them only after
they had taken bail from Jason and his companions. Then they
let them go.

BEROEA

10 The brethren sent Paul and Silas away to Beroea
immediately, during the night. 11 On their arrival, they went
to the Jewish synagogue. The Jews of Beroea were more open-
minded than those of Salonica. They received their message
with great eagerness and studied the Scriptures every day to
verify their doctrines. 12 Many of them joined the company of
believers with quite a few Gentile ladies of rank as well as men.

13 But the Jews of Salonica found out that Paul was
preaching the Gospel at Beroea. So they came there also, and
stirred up the people against him. 14 Thereupon, the brethren
sent Paul away to the coast while Silas and Timothy stayed
behind. 15 The men who accompanied Paul conducted him all
the way to Athens. Then they returned with instructions for
Silas and Timothy to rejoin him as soon as possible.

ATHENS

16 While Paul was waiting at Athens, he was exasperated
when he saw how idolatrous that city was. 17 He had discussions
with the Jews, with the worshipers at the synagogue, and with
anyone he happened to meet every day in the public square.

18 Some of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers debated
with him. Some of them asked: "What is this babbler talking
about?" Others said: "He seems to be preaching some foreign
divinities." For he was proclaiming the Gospel of Jesus and his
Resurrection.

19 So they seized him, led him to the Council of the
Areopagus and asked him: "Will you tell us what is that new
teaching of yours? 20 For you are preaching strange doctrines,
and we should like to know what you mean." 21 Now the
Athenians and all the foreigners who lived in Athens, spent
all their time in telling or listening to something exotic.

PAUL'S SECOND SERMON

22 So Paul stood up before the Council of the Areopagus,
and said: "Men of Athens, I see that from every point of view
you are very religious. 23 For as I was passing along and

looking at your shrines, I found also an altar with this inscription: 'To an Unknown God.' I proclaim to you this Unknown God whom you are worshiping.

24 "God, who created the world and everything in it, does not reside in temples built by men. For he is Lord of heaven and earth. 25 He is not served by human hands as if he were in need of anything. He himself gives life, breath, and everything to all creatures.

26 "From one common forefather he has created every nation of mankind, and made them dwell all over the face of the earth. He fixed their predetermined periods and the boundaries of their countries.

27 "He enabled them to search for God, to grope for him, and to find him, though he is never far from each one of us. 28 For in him we live, we move, and we exist. As some of your poets have said: 'We are indeed his descendants.'

29 "But since we are descendants of God, we must not think that the Supreme Being can be represented in gold, or silver, or stone, carved by human art and imagination.

30 "God overlooked our ignorance in the past. But now he commands all men everywhere to repent. 31 For he has fixed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness. He has appointed a magistrate to whom he assigned this task. God has revealed this magistrate to all men when he raised him from the dead."

32 When they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some of them sneered while others said: "We want to hear you again on this matter." 33 So Paul went away from them. 34 Some persons, however, joined him and believed. Among them were Dionysius, a member of the Council of the Areopagus, a lady named Damaris, and some others.

CHAPTER 18

CORINTH

1 Then Paul left Athens and went to Corinth. 2 There he found a Jew named Aquila, a native of Pontus, who had arrived recently from Italy with his wife Priscilla, because Claudius had issued a decree ordering all Jews to leave Rome. 3 Paul went to visit them. He stayed with them, because they practiced the same trade. They worked together, for both of them were tent-makers.

4 Paul preached every Sabbath day in the synagogue and
tried to convert both Jews and Gentiles. 5 When Silas and
Timothy arrived from Macedonia, Paul was preaching the
Gospel and proclaiming to the Jews that Jesus was the Messiah.
6 As they contradicted him with blasphemies, he shook the dust
out of his garments in protest and said to them: "You have
to bear the full responsibility for your unbelief. I am clear of it.
From now on, I will go to the Gentiles."

7 So he left them and went to the house of a man named
Titus Justus, a worshiper of God, who lived in a house adjoining
the synagogue. 8 Crispus, the leader of the synagogue,
believed in the Lord with all his family. Moreover, many
Corinthians who heard Paul believed and were baptized.

9 One night, the Lord said to Paul in a vision: "Do not
be afraid. Go on preaching. Do not give up the Gospel. 10 I am
with you. No one can harm you. For I have many followers
in the city." 11 So Paul remained there for eighteen months
and preached the Gospel of the Lord among them.

GALLIO

12 But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia, the Jews
made a concerted attack upon Paul and brought him before the
tribunal. 13 They said: "This man is teaching the people to
worship God in a manner contrary to the Law of Moses."

14 Before Paul could answer, Gallio said to the Jews: "If
it were a criminal violation of common law, I would listen to
you Jews with patience. 15 But since it is a controversy about
sermons, divinities, and rules of your own religious Law, you
have to settle it yourselves. It is none of my business to pass
judgment on such a case."

16 So he drove them out of the tribunal. 17 Then the people
seized Sosthenes, the leader of the synagogue, and beat him in
front of the courthouse. But Gallio paid no attention to this
incident.

RETURN TO ANTIOCH

18 After several days, Paul took leave of the brethren and
sailed for Syria. Priscilla and Aquila accompanied him. He
shaved his head at Cenchreae in accordance with a vow he had
made. 19 When they arrived at Ephesus, he left them there.
Then he went into the synagogue and preached to the Jewish
congregation. 20 They asked him to stay a little longer, but

he refused. 21 He took leave of them, saying: "I will return to you, if God is willing." 22 Then he sailed from Ephesus and landed at Caesarea. From there he went up to Jerusalem and visited the leaders of the Mother Church. Then he went down to Antioch.

APOLLOS

23 After spending some time there, he departed and proceeded successively through the Galatian and Phrygian countries where he confirmed all the disciples in the faith.

24 Now a Jew named Apollos, a native of Alexandria, came to Ephesus. He was an eloquent man, and well versed in the Scriptures. 25 He had been instructed in the doctrine of the Lord, and was fervent in spirit. He spoke and taught ardently about Jesus, though he was acquainted only with the baptism of John. 26 He began to preach boldly in the synagogue. When Aquila and Priscilla heard him, they took him home and explained to him the divine doctrine more correctly.

27 As he wished to cross to Achaia, the brethren encouraged him and wrote to the disciples to welcome him. When he arrived there, he helped greatly those who through divine grace had become believers. 28 For he vigorously refuted the Jews in public, and showed from the Scriptures that Jesus was the Messiah.

CHAPTER 19

BACK TO EPHESUS

1 While Apollos was in Corinth, Paul passed through the upper country and came to Ephesus. There he found some disciples, 2 and asked them: "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?" They answered: "No, we never even heard that there is a Holy Spirit." 3 Paul asked them again: "Then how were you baptized?" They answered: "With John's baptism." 4 Paul said to them: "John baptized with the baptism of repentance, and told the people to believe in the Messiah who was to come after him, that is to say, in Jesus Christ."

5 When they heard this statement, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. 6 Then Paul laid his hands upon them. The Holy Spirit came upon them. They spoke in oracular languages and with prophetic inspiration. 7 There were in all

about twelve men. 8 Then he went to the synagogue there and for three months preached fearlessly, arguing and trying to persuade them about the Kingdom of God.

9 But some of them obstinately refused to believe in the Gospel and criticized it blasphemously before the congregation. So Paul withdrew his disciples and preached every day in the hall of Tyrannus. 10 He continued these sermons for two years. Thus all the inhabitants of Asia, both Jews and Gentiles, were acquainted with the Gospel of the Lord.

11 Moreover, God performed extraordinary miracles through the hands of Paul. 12 The people used his handkerchiefs or his garments to heal the sick of their diseases and to expel the evil spirits by which they were afflicted.

THE EXORCISTS

13 Some traveling Jewish exorcists attempted to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those possessed by evil spirits with these words: "I command you in the name of Jesus whom Paul preaches." 14 Seven sons of a Jewish high priest named Skeva pronounced this formula over a sick man. 15 But the evil spirit answered them: "I know Jesus and Paul, but I do not know you." 16 Thereupon, the man possessed by the evil spirit sprang upon them, overpowered them all, and compelled them to rush out of the house badly bruised and stripped of their garments.

THE NAME OF JESUS

17 When this incident became known, all the Jews and Gentiles of Ephesus were struck by terror and awe. Now all of them held the name of the Lord Jesus in high honor. 18 Many believers came forward and openly confessed their evil deeds. 19 Some who practiced magic collected their books and burned them in public. Their value was estimated at about fifty thousand shillings. 20 So the Gospel of the Lord continued to grow in power and influence.

MISSIONARY PLANS

21 After these events, Paul, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, resolved to proceed to Macedonia, to Greece, and then to Jerusalem, remarking: "After these journeys, I must visit Rome also." 22 So he sent two of his assistants, Timothy

and Erastus, to Macedonia while he himself stayed on in Asia for a while.

ARTEMIS OF EPHESUS

23 About this time, a great commotion arose concerning the Gospel. 24 A silversmith named Demetrius, who manufactured silver shrines of Artemis, was employing a great number of artisans. 25 He assembled these workers and those in similar trades, and said to them: "My friends, you know that our prosperity depends on this trade. 26 But, as you see and hear, not only in Ephesus, but all over Asia, this man Paul has converted a great number of people by preaching that gods fashioned by human hands are not gods at all. 27 We are in danger. Our trade will be discredited. The temple of the great goddess Artemis will be neglected. The glory of Artemis, who is worshiped by all Asia and by all the world, will be a thing of the past!"

28 When the workers heard this speech, they were furious and shouted: "Glory to Artemis of Ephesus!"

29 The commotion spread all over the city. The people rushed together into the theater, dragging with them Gaius and Aristarchus, two Macedonians who were Paul's traveling companions. 30 Paul wanted to speak to the people himself. But the disciples would not allow him to do so. 31 Some officials also, who were friendly to Paul, sent him a message and implored him not to risk his life in the theater.

32 In the meantime, the people were shouting, some one thing and some another. The meeting was all in confusion. Most of the people did not know why they were gathered together. 33 Some of the crowd called upon Alexander whom the Jews had pushed to the front. He motioned with his hand for silence and tried to make a speech to the people. 34 But when they recognized that he was a Jew, all of them with one voice kept shouting for about two hours: "Glory to Artemis of Ephesus!"

35 At length, the city clerk succeeded in quieting the crowd and said: "Men of Ephesus! Everybody knows that the city of the Ephesians is the temple-guardian of the great Artemis and of her statue which fell down from heaven. 36 Now, since these facts are undeniable, you must preserve order and do nothing rash. 37 For these men, whom you have brought here, are neither plunderers of our temple nor blasphemers of our goddess.

38 If Demetrius and the artisans have a complaint, the courts
are open, and the proconsuls are there. Let them take legal
action. 39 Any other demand must be settled in the regular
assembly. 40 Remember that we run the risk of being accused
of rioting. There is no justification for all this commotion."
41 With these words he dismissed the meeting.

CHAPTER 20

MACEDONIA AND GREECE

1 When the commotion was over, Paul summoned the
disciples and gave them instructions. Thereupon, he took leave
of them and departed for Macedonia. 2 He traveled through
all that region and encouraged the brethren greatly with his
sermons. 3 Then he went to Greece where he stayed for three
months. As he was going to sail for Syria, he learned that the
Jews had laid a plot against him and decided to return through
Macedonia. 4 He was accompanied by Sopater of Beroea, the
son of Pyrrhus, Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica,
Gaius from Derbe, Timothy, Tychicus, and Trophimus from Asia.
5 The latter proceeded to Troas and waited for us there. 6 But
we sailed from Philippi after the festival of Unleavened Bread.
Five days later, we joined them at Troas where we remained
seven days.

TROAS

7 While the Apostles were assembled to break bread, Paul
was preaching to them, as he was going away the next morning.
He continued speaking until midnight. 8 There were many lamps
in the upper room where they were assembled.

9 In the meantime, a young man named Eutychus who
was sitting at the window became very drowsy. As Paul still
went on preaching, the lad was overcome by sleep, fell down
from the third floor, and was picked up dead.

10 Paul went downstairs, bent over him, put his arms
around him, and said: "Do not worry, he is still alive." 11 Then
he went upstairs again, broke bread, and ate. After a long
conversation, which lasted until daylight, he went away. 12 They
took the boy home alive, and were greatly relieved.

13 So we got into the ship and sailed for Assos, where
we expected to take Paul on board. 14 That was the arrangement
he had made, as he intended to go there by land. 15 When he

met us at Assos, we took him on board and went to Mitylene. From there we sailed and arrived off Chios on the following day. The day after, we made Samos and the next day we reached Miletus. 16 Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, as he did not want to be delayed in the province of Anatolia. For he was hastening to be in Jerusalem, if possible, on the day of Pentecost.

SERMON AT MILETUS

17 From Miletus he summoned the Presbyters of the Church of Ephesus. 18 When they were assembled, he said to them: "You know how I have lived with you since the first day I came to the province of Anatolia. 19 I served the Lord with humility, with tears, and in trials which befell me because of the Jewish plots. 20 I have never shrunk from declaring to you anything that was profitable.

21 I have preached both to Jews and to Gentiles repentance before God and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 "Now, compelled by the Spirit, I am going to Jerusalem. I do not know what will happen to me there. 23 The Holy Spirit warns me that imprisonment and persecution are awaiting me in every city I visit. 24 But I do not attach any importance to my life. I want only to complete the race I am running, to fulfill the mission I have received from the Lord Jesus, and to proclaim the Gospel of the divine grace.

25 "Now I am perfectly sure that none of you, to whom I have proclaimed the Kingdom of God, will ever see my face again. 26 Therefore, I call you to witness today that I have no man's blood on my hands. 27 I have never shrunk from revealing to you the entire dispensation of God.

28 "Take care of yourselves and of all the flock of which the Holy Spirit has made you Bishops. Guard the Church of God which Christ has won for himself with his own blood. 29 I know that after my departure ferocious wolves will enter among you and they will not spare the flock. 30 Even from among yourselves men will arise and teach perverse doctrines in order to draw away the disciples after themselves.

31 "Therefore, watch and remember that for three years, day and night, I never ceased to advise everyone of you with tears. 32 Now I commend you to God and to his gracious Son who can build you up and give you the inheritance among all the saints.

33 "I have never coveted anyone's gold, or silver, or clothes.

34 You know well enough that these hands of mine have provided
for my needs and my companions. 35 I have always given you
an example that by such hard work we must help our weak
brethren. Remember the words of our Lord Jesus Christ who
said: 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.' "

36 With these words he knelt down and prayed with them
all. 37 They all wept abundantly. They threw their arms around
Paul's neck and kissed him repeatedly. 38 They were especially
upset by his assertion that they would never see his face again.
Then they escorted him to the ship.

CHAPTER 21

IN JERUSALEM

1 We tore ourselves from them and set sail at last. We
went directly to Cos. On the following day, we reached Rhodes
and from there we proceeded to Patara. 2 There we found a
ship crossing over to Phoenicia. We went aboard that vessel
and put out to sea. 3 We sighted Cyprus on our left and sailed
for Syria. At last we put in at Tyre where the ship had to
unload her cargo.

4 There we found some disciples and stayed for seven days
with them. Warned by the Holy Spirit, these disciples advised
Paul not to go up to Jerusalem. 5 But when the seven days
were over, we departed and continued our journey. All of them
escorted us out of town with their wives and children. Then
we knelt down and prayed on the beach. 6 After the prayer
we took leave of them. We went aboard the vessel, and they
returned home.

7 From Tyre we arrived at Ptolemais where we visited
the brethren and stayed for one day with them.

8 On the following day, we departed from Ptolemais and
came to Caesarea. We entered the house of Philip the Evangelist,
who was one of the seven deacons, and stayed with him. 9 He
had four virgin daughters who were endowed with the gift of
prophecy. We remained there for several days.

10 In the meantime, a prophet named Agabus came down
from Judea and visited us. 11 He took Paul's belt, bound his
own hands and feet, and told us: "The Holy Spirit says: 'The
Jews at Jerusalem will thus bind the man who owns this belt,
and will hand him over to the Gentiles.' "

12 When we heard this prophecy, both we and our native
friends begged Paul not to go up to Jerusalem. 13 But Paul

answered: "What are you doing? Why do you weep and break my heart? I am ready, not only to go to jail, but even to die at Jerusalem for the name of Jesus."

14 When we realized that Paul would not change his mind, we yielded and said: "The Lord's will be done."

15 After this incident, we made our preparations and started for Jerusalem. 16 Some of the brethren from Caesarea accompanied us and took us to the house of Mnason, one of the early disciples from Cyprus, with whom we spent the night.

17 When we arrived at Jerusalem, our brethren gave us a hearty welcome. 18 On the following day, we went with Paul to visit James and all the Presbyters assembled at his house. 19 After greeting them, Paul gave them a detailed account of the missionary successes God had enabled him to achieve among the Gentiles.

20 The brethren gave thanks to God for these successes and said to him: "As you well know, brother, we have many thousands of Jewish believers who are zealous upholders of the Law of Moses. 21 These men have been told that you teach all Jews who live among the Gentiles to turn away from Moses, from circumcision, and from all the observances of the Law. 22 We have to do something about them. For they will certainly hear that you have come.

23 "Now this is what we advise you to do: We have four men here who are under a vow. 24 Take them along, and purify yourself along with them. Have them shave their heads and pay the expenses for the prescribed sacrifices. Then everybody will be persuaded that the accusations against you are not true. For you observe the ritual of purification according to the Law of Moses.

25 "So far as the Gentile believers are concerned, you know that we have sent them a letter with the following decision: They must abstain from pagan sacrificial meat, from blood-meat, from meat of strangled animals, and from sexual sins."

26 So Paul took the four men, purified himself with them on the following day, entered the temple, and notified them that the days of their purification would be completed with a sacrifice which would be offered for each one of them.

PAUL'S ARREST

27 But when the seven days were almost at an end, some Jews from Asia saw him in the temple, stirred up all the crowd,

and seized him, 28 shouting: "Men of Israel, help! This is the man who has been preaching doctrines against our people, against the Law, and against this temple to everybody everywhere. Moreover, he has brought Gentiles into the temple and desecrated this Holy sanctuary."

29 For they had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian with him in the city and they supposed that Paul had brought him into the temple. 30 So the whole city was aroused. The people ran together, seized Paul, dragged him out of the temple, and shut its gates at once.

31 As they were trying to kill him, the tribune of the cohort was informed that all Jerusalem was in an uproar. 32 Immediately, he took some soldiers and centurions and hurried down upon the rioters. When they saw the tribune and the soldiers, the rioters stopped beating Paul.

33 Thereupon, the tribune came up, arrested him, and ordered him to be bound with a double chain. Then he inquired who he was and what he was doing. 34 Some of the people shouted one thing, and some another. As the tribune could not ascertain the facts because of the uproar, he ordered him to be taken to the barracks.

35 When Paul reached the steps, he was actually carried by the soldiers on account of the violence of the crowd. 36 The infuriated people followed and shouted: "Kill him."

37 As Paul was brought into the barracks, he said to the tribune in Greek: "I want to tell you something." The tribune replied: 38 "If you know Greek, then you are not the Egyptian who recently led out into the desert some four thousand rebels and cut-throats."

39 Paul answered him: "I am a Jew from Tarsus of Cilicia, a citizen of an important city. I implore you, allow me to speak to the people." 40 When he obtained his permission, Paul standing on the steps motioned with his hand to the people. A deep silence followed. Then he spoke to the people in Hebrew as follows:

CHAPTER 22

PAUL'S DEFENSE

1 "Brethren and fathers, hear my defense."

2 When the people heard him speak in Hebrew, they became even more quiet, and he continued:

3 "I am a Jew, born at Tarsus in Cilicia, and brought up

in this city. I was educated in the school of Gamaliel in the strict observance of our traditional Law. I was as zealous for our religion as all of you are today.

4 "I was a deadly enemy of the Gospel, and I sent Christian men and women to prison. 5 As a matter of fact, the high priest and all the elders will bear me witness. For they gave me letters to the brethren in Damascus and authorized me to bring the Christians of that city to Jerusalem in chains for punishment.

6 "On my way about noon, as I was approaching Damascus, suddenly a dazzling light blazed around me from heaven. 7 I fell on the ground and I heard a voice telling me: 'Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?' 8 I asked: 'Who are you, my Lord?' He answered: 'I am Jesus of Nazareth whom you are persecuting.'

9 "My traveling companions saw the light, but they did not hear the voice of the Lord who spoke to me. 10 Then I asked him again: 'What must I do, my Lord?' He answered me: 'Rise and proceed to Damascus. There you will be told of all the work you are foreordained to accomplish.'

11 "As I was blinded by the dazzling light, my companions had to lead me by the hand for the rest of the journey to Damascus. 12 There a man named Ananias, highly respected by all his Jewish neighbors for his pious observance of the Law, came to see me. 13 He stood beside me, and said to me: 'Brother Saul, receive your sight.' At that very moment I regained my sight and looked upon him.

14 "Ananias added: 'The God of our forefathers has foreordained you to know his will, to see the Messiah, and to hear him speak. 15 For you will be the witness of that vision before all men. 16 Now do not delay. Rise up, receive baptism in his name, and wash away your sins.'

17 "Then I returned to Jerusalem. One day, when I was praying in the temple, I fell into a trance. 18 I saw the Lord, who said to me: 'Make haste and leave Jerusalem at once, because its inhabitants will not accept your testimony concerning me.'

19 "I replied: 'Yes, my Lord. For they all know that I used to imprison and flog in every synagogue those who believed in you. 20 Moreover, when the blood of your martyr Stephen was being shed, I myself stood by, I gave my approval, and I watched over the garments of his murderers.' 21 Then the

Lord said to me: 'Go, for I will send you as my Apostle to the Gentiles all over the world.' "

22 The people had listened to him until he made this statement. Then they shouted: "Kill him! Get him off the face of the earth! Such a man must not be allowed to live!" 23 They were howling, tearing their cloaks, and shaking their garments in the air.

24 Thereupon, the tribune ordered him to be brought into the barracks, and examined by flogging, to find out the cause of the outcry against him. 25 But when they had tied him up with thongs, Paul said to the centurion who was standing by: "It is against the law to flog a Roman citizen without a trial."

26 The centurion reported this statement to the tribune and told him: "What do you propose to do? This man is a Roman citizen." 27 Then the tribune came and asked Paul: "Tell me, are you a Roman citizen?" Paul answered: "Yes." 28 The tribune remarked: "I had to pay a large sum of money for my Roman citizenship." Paul said: "I was born a Roman citizen."

29 Thereupon, those who were going to examine him moved away from him immediately. The tribune himself was alarmed when he found out that Paul was a Roman citizen. For he had him tied up for flogging without a trial.

30 On the following day, the tribune tried to find out the real reason for the Jewish accusations. So he released Paul and ordered all the priests and the members of their council to assemble. Then he took Paul and placed him in front of them.

CHAPTER 23

BEFORE THE COUNCIL

1 Paul looked earnestly at the council and said: "Brethren, I have ordered my life towards God in good conscience up to this day."

2 Thereupon, the high priest Ananias ordered those standing near him to strike him on the mouth. 3 Then Paul said to him: "God will strike you, white-washed wall. You are sitting there to judge me according to the Law. Yet in defiance of the Law you order me to be struck!"

4 Those standing near him said: "Do you mean to insult the high priest of God?" 5 Paul answered: "Brethren, I did not know that he is the high priest. For it is written in the Scriptures that we must not speak evil of a leader of our people."

6 But when Paul noticed that one part of the council
members were Sadducees and the other Pharisees, he cried
aloud to the council: "Brethren, I am a Pharisee and a son of
Pharisees. I am on trial here because I hope for the resurrection
of the dead."

7 When he had made that statement, a dissension arose
between the Pharisees and the Sadducees. So the council was
divided. 8 For the Sadducees claim that there is no resurrection,
nor angels, nor spirits, while the Pharisees believe in all of them.

9 Then a great uproar arose. For the scribes of the sect
of the Pharisees got up and contended: "We find nothing wrong
with this man. It does not matter if an angel, or a spirit, has
spoken to him."

10 The dissension became violent. The tribune, fearing that
they would tear him to pieces, ordered the soldiers to go down,
rescue him from them, and bring him to the barracks.

11 On the following night, the Lord appeared to him and
said: "Courage, Paul! For as you have testified about me in
Jerusalem, so you must testify also in Rome."

CONSPIRACY

12 On the following day, the Jews made a conspiracy and
bound themselves by an oath neither to eat nor drink till they
had killed Paul. 13 More than forty men were involved in this
plot. 14 These conspirators went to the chief priests and elders,
and said to them: "We have taken a solemn oath to taste no
food till we have killed Paul. 15 Therefore you and the council
request the tribune to bring him down to you as though you
meant to examine his case more accurately. We will be ready
to kill him before he arrives here."

16 But Paul's nephew heard of the plot, went to the
barracks, and told Paul. 17 Thereupon, Paul called one of the
centurions and said to him: "Take this young man to the tribune.
For he has something to tell him."

18 The centurion brought the young man to the tribune
and said: "The prisoner Paul called me and asked me to bring
this young man to you. He has something to tell you."

19 The tribune took him by the hand, went aside, and
asked him privately: "What do you want to tell me?" 20 The
young man answered: "The Jews have agreed to request you
to bring Paul to the council tomorrow as though they meant to

examine him more accurately. 21 Do not grant them this request. For more than forty of their men have taken a solemn oath neither to eat nor drink until they have killed Paul. Now these conspirators are lying in ambush for him and are waiting for a favorable answer from you."

CAESAREA

22 Thereupon, the tribune dismissed the young man with the following command: "Tell no one that you have informed me of this plot." 23 Then he called two of his centurions and said to them: "Get ready two hundred soldiers, seventy horsemen, and two hundred spearmen to proceed as far as Caesarea by nine o'clock tonight. 24 Also provide horses for Paul to ride and take him safely to the governor."

25 The tribune wrote the following letter to the governor:

26 "Claudius Lysias to His Excellency, the Governor Felix, greeting. 27 This man was seized by the Jews. They were ready to murder him. But I came upon them with my troops and rescued him as I had learned that he was a Roman citizen. 28 I brought him down to their council as I wanted to know what accusation they made against him. 29 I discovered that their accusations had to do with questions of their own religious Law. But he was not charged with any crime punishable with death or imprisonment. 30 As I was informed of a plot which they have laid against him, I am sending him to you. I have notified his accusers to state before you whatever accusations they have against him. Farewell."

31 According to their orders, the soldiers took Paul and brought him to Antipatris during the night. 32 On the following day, they returned to the barracks and left the horsemen to proceed with him. 33 When they arrived at Caesarea, the horsemen delivered the letter to the governor and presented Paul before him. 34 On reading the letter, the governor asked Paul to what province he belonged and learned that he came from Cilicia. 35 Then the governor said: "I will give you a hearing as soon as your accusers make their appearance." In the meantime, he ordered him to be kept under guard in the palace of Herod.

CHAPTER 24

THE ACCUSATION

1 Five days later, the high priest Ananias came down with
the elders and a certain attorney named Tertullus. 2 When he
was called, Tertullus began the prosecution, and said: 3 "Most
excellent Felix! Always and everywhere we acknowledge with
deep gratitude that through you we enjoy perfect peace.
Through your foresight our nation is securing the reforms we
need. 4 But I do not want to detain you any longer. So I beg
you in your kindness to give us a brief hearing. 5 We have
found this man to be a trouble-maker and a disturber of the
peace among the Jews all over the Empire. He is a ringleader
of the sect of the Nazarenes. 6 He actually tried to desecrate
the temple. We arrested him and intended to try him according
to our own Law. 7 But the tribune Lysias intervened and took
him out of our hands with great violence. 8 He ordered his
accusers to state their case before you. Examine him yourself,
and you will ascertain the truth about all the accusations we
bring against him."

9 The Jews supported these accusations and affirmed their
truthfulness.

THE DEFENSE

10 When the governor motioned him to speak, Paul replied:
"I am glad to make my defense before you. For I know well
that you have been a judge over our nation for many years.
11 As you may ascertain, I went up to worship at Jerusalem
only twelve days ago. 12 During that time I have never raised
any controversy and I have never created any disturbance among
the people in the temple, in the synagogues, or in the city.
13 My accusers cannot produce any proof of the charges they
bring against me.

14 "But I admit that, in worshiping the God of our
forefathers, I follow the Gospel of Jesus which they call a sect.
I believe all the doctrines taught in the Law of Moses and
written in the Prophets. 15 I have the same hope in God that
they themselves hold, that there will be a resurrection of the
righteous and the unrighteous. 16 Therefore I strive always to
have a clear conscience before God and men.

17 "After an absence of several years, I had come to
Jerusalem to bring charitable donations to the men of my nation

and to offer sacrifices. 18 While I was purifying myself ritually
and offering these sacrifices, these men found me in the temple
without any crowd or uproar. As a matter of fact, some Jews
from Asia started the trouble. 19 They ought to be here before
you and to prosecute me if they have any accusations against
me. 20 Or let these men themselves tell what crime they found
in me when I appeared before the council. 21 The only crime
I can think of is this one remark which I shouted as I stood
among them: 'It is concerning the resurrection of the dead that
I am on trial before you today.' "

IN PRISON

22 Thereupon Felix, who was well informed about the
Gospel, adjourned the trial, saying to the Jews: "I will decide
your case when Lysias the tribune appears before the court."
23 Then he ordered the centurion to have Paul kept in custody,
but to allow him some freedom and let his friends attend to
his needs.

24 A few days later, Felix with his wife Drusilla, who was
a Jewess, invited Paul and listened to his sermon on the Gospel
of Jesus Christ. 25 When Paul preached about righteousness,
chastity, and the last judgment, Felix was terrified, and dis-
missed him, saying: "Go for the present. I will call you again
when I have an opportunity." 26 He hoped that Paul would
offer him money for his release. So he called him often and
conversed with him. 27 Two years later, Felix was succeeded
by Porcius Festus. As he wanted to do the Jews a favor, Felix
left Paul in prison.

CHAPTER 25

FESTUS

1 Three days after his arrival in the province, Festus went
from Caesarea to Jerusalem. 2 Then the chief priests and
Jewish leaders presented their charges against Paul. 3 Moreover,
they begged him as a favor to have Paul sent to Jerusalem as
they were plotting to kill him on the way. 4 Festus answered:
"I am returning soon to Caesarea where Paul is being kept in
custody. 5 So have your leaders go down to Caesarea with me
and present their accusations against him if he has committed
any offense."

6 After staying only eight or ten days in Jerusalem, Festus

went back to Caesarea. On the following day, he took his seat on the tribunal and ordered Paul to be brought in. 7 When he appeared, the Jews who had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and made many serious accusations against him. But they were unable to prove them.

8 Paul said in his own defense: "I have not committed any offense against the Jewish Law, against the temple, or against the Emperor."

9 Festus, who wanted to gratify the Jews, asked Paul: "Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and be tried there before me on these charges?"

10 Paul answered: "I ought to be tried before Caesar's tribunal where I am now standing. As you know very well, I have done no injury to the Jews. 11 I am ready to die if I am a criminal, guilty of a capital offense. But if the accusations of these men against me are false, no one has the right to surrender me to them. I appeal to Caesar."

12 After conferring with his council, Festus answered: "You appeal to Caesar. To Caesar you go!"

AGRIPPA

13 A few days after, Agrippa the king and Bernice arrived at Caesarea to welcome Festus. 14 As they stayed there many days, Festus stated Paul's case to the king and said: "There is a man here who was left in prison by Felix. 15 When I was in Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews denounced him to me and asked for his conviction.

16 "I told them that it was not the Roman custom to condemn any man until the accused met his accusers face to face and had an opportunity to defend himself against their accusations.

17 "So, when they were assembled here, without losing any time, I took my seat on the tribunal on the next day and ordered the man to be brought in. 18 But when the accusers stood up, they brought no accusation of such crimes as I had expected. 19 Their differences with him were about their religion and about a certain Jesus, who was dead, while Paul claimed that he was alive.

20 "As I was at a loss how to deal with these questions, I asked him if he was willing to go to Jerusalem and be tried on these accusations. 21 But as Paul appealed his case to Caesar,

I have ordered him to be kept in custody until I can send him to Caesar."

22 Agrippa remarked to Festus: "I should like to hear the man myself." Festus answered: "You will hear him tomorrow."

23 On the following day, Agrippa and Bernice came with great pomp into the audience hall with the tribunes and the prominent men of the city. At the order of Festus, Paul was brought in.

24 Then Festus said: "King Agrippa, and all you gentlemen present with us! This is the man about whom all the Jews in Jerusalem and in this city petitioned me and shouted that he should not be allowed to live any longer. 25 But I found out that he had not committed any capital crime. Now, as he himself appealed to Caesar, I decided to send him to Rome. 26 Yet I have nothing definite to write to the Emperor about him. Consequently, I have brought him before you all, and especially before you, King Agrippa. Your investigation will enable me to write a clear report. 27 For it seems to me unreasonable to send a prisoner to Rome without specifying the charges against him."

CHAPTER 26

PAUL'S DEFENSE

1 Then Agrippa said to Paul: "You have permission to defend yourself." Paul stretched out his hand and made his defense:

2 "I consider myself fortunate, King Agrippa, that I am defending myself today against the accusations of the Jews before you. 3 No one is better acquainted than you with the customs and doctrines of the Jews. Therefore I beg you to hear me patiently.

4 "All the Jews know my manner of life from my youth up. For I spent my early years among my own nation at Jerusalem. 5 They have known from the first, if they are willing to give their evidence, that I have lived as a Pharisee according to the strictest observance of our religion. 6 Now I stand on trial because I hope that God will fulfill the promise he made to our forefathers. 7 Our twelve tribes are praying God fervently day and night in the hope of seeing the fulfillment of this promise. Yet for this Messianic hope, O King, I am now prosecuted by the Jews. 8 I am also prosecuted, because they refuse to believe that God can raise the dead.

9 "Indeed, I myself thought it my duty at first to oppose vigorously the Gospel, proclaimed by Jesus of Nazareth. 10 I did oppose it in Jerusalem. On the authority of the chief priests I put many saints in prison. I gave my approval for their execution when they were put to death. 11 Often I punished them in the synagogues, and tried to force them into blasphemy. In my fanatical fury against them I persecuted them even in foreign cities.

12 "I was proceeding to Damascus with the authority and commission of the chief priests. 13 Then at midday, O King, I saw on the way a light from heaven, brighter than the sun, shining around me and my fellow travelers. 14 We all fell to the ground. Then I heard a voice, which said to me in Hebrew: 'Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? You hurt yourself when you kick against the pricks.'

15 "I asked him: 'My Lord, who are you?' He answered: 'I am Jesus, whom you persecute. 16 But rise up and stand upon your feet. I have appeared to you, because I want to appoint you a minister and witness of the present vision and the future visions you will have of me. 17 I will protect you from your people and from the Gentiles to whom I am now sending you. 18 I want you to open their eyes and turn them from darkness to light and from the power of Satan to God. For through faith in me they will receive the remission of their sins and the blessings of the saints.'

19 "Thereupon, O King Agrippa, I obeyed the heavenly vision. 20 Since then I have proclaimed the Gospel to those in Damascus first, then to those in Jerusalem, to those in Judea, and to all the Gentiles. I exhorted them to repent, to turn to God, and to lead lives befitting their repentance.

21 "For this reason some Jews seized me while I was in the temple and tried to murder me. 22 God has rescued me from their hands. I am still standing here today. I am still preaching both to the humble and the great. I am adding nothing to what Moses and the Prophets predicted about Jesus: 23 He is the suffering Messiah and the pioneer of resurrection who proclaimed the Gospel of light both to our people and to the Gentiles."

24 When Paul had finished the speech in his defense, Festus exclaimed aloud: "Paul, you are talking nonsense! Your great learning has turned you mad."

25 Paul answered: "I am not talking nonsense, your Excellency. 26 I am only telling the plain truth. The king knows

all about it. So I can speak freely to him. I am convinced that none of these facts has escaped his notice, because none of them has occurred in a dark street corner. 27 King Agrippa, do you believe the Prophets? I know that you believe them."

28 Agrippa answered to Paul: "You expect to make me a Christian with a short sermon."

29 Paul retorted: "Whether short or long, I pray to God that not only you, but all those who hear me today might become such Christians as I am, but without my chains."

30 Thereupon, the king rose. He was followed by the governor, Bernice, and the gentlemen sitting with them. 31 After leaving the room, they talked the matter over, and commented: "This man has not committed any offense punishable with death or imprisonment." 32 Agrippa remarked to Festus: "He might have been released, if he had not appealed his case to Caesar."

CHAPTER 27

DEPARTURE FOR ROME

1 When it was decided that we should sail for Italy, Paul and some other prisoners were turned over to a centurion named Julius, of the Augustan cohort. 2 Then we embarked in an Adramyttian ship bound for the ports of Asia, and put to sea. We were accompanied by Aristarchus, a Macedonian from Salonica.

3 On the next day, we put in at Sidon. Julius kindly allowed Paul to go to his friends and refresh himself. 4 From there we put to sea and sailed under the lee of Cyprus to avoid contrary winds.

5 After sailing across the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we reached Myra in Lycia. 6 There the centurion found an Alexandrian ship bound for Italy and put us on board.

7 For several days we made slow progress and had some difficulty in arriving off Cnidus. As the wind did not allow us to go on, we sailed under the lee of Crete off Salmone. 8 We coasted along the cape with difficulty and reached a place called Fair Heavens near the town of Lasea.

9 As we had wasted a great deal of time, and navigation had become unsafe, because the autumn fast was already over, Paul advised them, 10 saying: "Gentlemen, I see that this voyage is going to end in disaster and heavy loss, not only of the ship and cargo, but even of our own lives."

11 But the centurion was more influenced by the captain and the owner than by Paul's warnings. 12 As the harbor was ill-adapted for wintering, the majority were in favor of putting to sea again. They hoped to be able to reach and to winter in Phoenix, a harbor of Crete facing southwest and northwest.

13 When a moderate south wind set in, they thought their objective was within reach. So they weighed anchor and sailed along Crete hugging the shore.

THE STORM

14 But very soon a typhonic wind called the Northeaster struck down from the land. 15 The ship was carried off its course, as she could not face the wind. So we gave way and were driven by the gale.

16 As we passed under the lee of a small island called Cauda, we managed with great difficulty to secure the ship's boat. 17 After hoisting it up, the sailors used ropes to brace the ship. Then, as they were afraid of being cast on the Syrtis banks, they lowered the sail and let the ship drift.

18 On the next day, as we were tossed violently by the storm, they began to throw the cargo overboard. 19 The day after, they cast out the ship's furnishings with their own hands.

20 For several days neither the sun nor the stars were visible. The storm continued to rage so violently that at last we gave up all hope of being saved. 21 During all that time we had not taken any food at all. Then Paul stood up among them, and said: "Gentlemen, you should have listened to my advice. If you had stayed in Crete, you would not have incurred this disaster and this loss. 22 Now I advise you to cheer up. None of you is going to lose his life. Only the ship will be lost.

23 "This very night, an Angel of the God I belong to and whom I worship, came to me, 24 and said: 'Do not be afraid, Paul. You must appear before Caesar. God has granted you the safety of all your fellow-travelers.' 25 So cheer up, gentlemen. For I believe in God and I believe that everything will turn out as he has told me. 26 Only we are going to be stranded on an island."

27 On the fourteenth night of the storm, we were drifting through the Adriatic sea. About midnight, the sailors began to hope that there was land ahead. 28 So they sounded and found a depth of twenty fathoms. A little later, they sounded again and found a deph of fifteen fathoms. 29 As they were

afraid we might run on the rocks, they lowered four anchors from the stern, and waited anxiously for daylight.

SHIPWRECK

30 The sailors wanted to abandon the ship. They actually lowered the boat into the sea under the pretext that they were laying out anchors from the bow. 31 But Paul said to the centurion and the soldiers: "You cannot be saved unless these men stay on board." 32 Thereupon, the soldiers cut away the ropes of the boat and let it fall off.

33 As day began to break, Paul urged them all to take some food, saying: "For fourteen days you have been fasting in deadly suspense. You did not feel like eating your rations. 34 Now I beg you to take some food. That will give you strength and keep you alive. Believe me, none of you will lose even a single hair of his head."

35 With these words he took bread, gave thanks to God in the presence of all, broke it, and began to eat. 36 Then they all cheered up and took some food themselves. 37 There were about two hundred and seventy-six of us aboard. 38 When they had eaten to their heart's content, they threw the wheat into the sea in order to lighten the ship.

39 When daylight came, they could not recognize the land. But they saw a bay with a beach and decided to run the ship ashore there, if possible. 40 So they cast off the anchors and left them in the sea. At the same time they loosened the ropes which tied the rudders, hoisted the foresail to the wind, and made for the beach.

41 But they struck a shoal made by two opposing currents of the sea, and ran the vessel aground. The bow stuck deep into the sand and remained immovable, while the stern began to break up under the pounding of the raging waves.

42 Thereupon, the soldiers resolved to kill the prisoners, as they were afraid that some of them might swim away and escape. 43 But the centurion wanted to save Paul, and prevented the soldiers from carrying out their plan. He ordered those who could swim to jump overboard first and get to land, 44 while the rest should follow by floating on planks or pieces of ship wreckage. Thus they all reached land safely.

CHAPTER 28

MALTA

1 After we had escaped from the wrecked ship, we learned
that the island was called Malta. 2 The natives showed us
extraordinary kindness. They welcomed us all and kindled a
fire to protect us from the drenching rain and the cold.

3 Paul had gathered a bundle of faggots and laid them on
the fire, when a viper crawled out of them to escape the heat
and fastened on his hand.

4 When the natives saw the reptile hanging from his hand,
they said to one another: "This man is certainly a criminal.
For though he has escaped from the sea, divine justice will
not let him live."

5 Paul, however, shook off the reptile into the fire and
suffered no harm at all. 6 They expected to see him swell up
and fall dead suddenly. But after waiting a long time and seeing
nothing fatal happen to him, they changed their minds and
declared that he was a god.

7 The governor of the island named Publius, who had
estates in that part of the island, welcomed us and entertained
us hospitably for three days. 8 His father happened to be sick
in bed with fever and dysentery. Paul visited him, prayed for
him, put his hand on him, and healed him.

9 After this miracle, the other sick people on the island
came and were also healed. 10 They made us rich presents, and
when we embarked, they put on board all the supplies we needed.

DEPARTURE

11 Three months later, we sailed on an Alexandrian ship
named the Dioscuri, which had wintered in that island. 12 We
put in at Syracuse where we stayed for three days. 13 From
there we made a circuit and reached Rhegium. A day later, a
southerly breeze sprang up and the following day we arrived
at Puteoli. 14 There we found brethren who invited us to spend
a week with them. Then we went on to Rome. 15 Our brethren
there had heard about us and came as far as the Appian Forum
and the Three Taverns to meet us. When Paul saw them, he
gave thanks to God and was greatly encouraged.

16 When at last we reached Rome, the centurion delivered
the prisoners to the captain of the guard. But he allowed Paul
to live by himself with the soldier who guarded him.

AT ROME

17 Three days later, Paul invited the Jewish leaders to
come and see him. When they were assembled, he said to them:
"Brethren, I have done nothing against our people, or the faith
of our fathers. Yet I was turned over as a prisoner to the
Romans at Jerusalem. 18 They examined me and were ready
to release me, because I had not committed a capital crime.

19 "As the Jewish leaders objected, I was obliged to appeal
to Caesar. But I have no accusation to make against my own
nation. 20 That is why I have asked to see you and talk with
you. It is on account of the Messianic hope of Israel that I am
bound with this chain."

21 They answered him: "We have received no letters about
you from Judea, and none of the brethren who have come here
has reported or said anything against you. 22 So we want to
hear you state your views. But as far as this sect of yours
is concerned, we well know that it is denounced everywhere."

23 So they fixed a day, and came in even larger numbers
to his lodging. From morning till night, he preached to them
the Kingdom of God, gave his testimony about Jesus, and tried
to persuade them by quoting passages from the Law and the
Prophets.

24 Some of them were convinced by what he said. Others
did not share his views at all. 25 As they could not agree among
themselves, they started to leave. Then Paul added this last
remark: "The Holy Spirit spoke well to our forefathers when
he told them through the Prophet Isaiah: 26 'Go to this people
and sap to them: They will listen and listen, but they will
never understand; they will look and look, but they will never
see. 27 For this people's mind is dull. Their ears are deaf. And
their eyes are blind. So they will never see with their eyes.
They will never hear with their ears. They will never understand
with their mind. They will never turn back to me and let me
heal them.' 28 Therefore let it be known to you that this Gospel
of divine salvation will be preached to the Gentiles. They will
listen."

29 With these words the Jews departed, arguing at great
length with one another. 30 Paul remained in Rome for two
whole years at his own expense. He welcomed all those who
came to visit him. 31 He proclaimed the Kingdom of God. And
he preached the Gospel of Jesus Christ with full freedom and
without any hindrance.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE ROMANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, the servant and chosen Apostle of Jesus Christ, —

By whom I have been been foreordained to proclaim the Gospel, 2 which God had promised beforehand in the Holy Scriptures through his Prophets, 3 concerning his Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, —

Who was born as the descendant of David physically, 4 and was manifested as the holy Son of God spiritually, through the miracle of his Resurrection from the dead, —

5 From whom I have received the grace and the commission to preach his religion of faith in his name among all the Gentiles, 6 including yourselves, the elect of Jesus Christ, —

7 To all the chosen saints in Rome who are dear to God:

Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

PASTORAL VISIT

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all. Your faith is renowned all over the world. 9 God, whom I serve with all my soul by preaching the Gospel of his Son, is my witness that I remember you in my prayers constantly. 10 I always pray that I may some day, by the will of God, succeed in visiting you. 11 I long to see you, so that I may convey to you some spiritual gift for your confirmation, in other words, 12 that we may be mutually uplifted by our common faith, yours and mine.

13 Brethren, I want you to know that thus far I have been unable to visit you. Nevertheless I have often planned to come and see you in order to reap some spiritual harvest among you as well as among the Gentiles elsewhere. 14 I have the same duty to all, Greek and barbarian, wise and unsophisticated.

THE GOSPEL

15 So I am eager to preach the Gospel to you in Rome also.
16 I am proud of the Gospel of Christ. It is a message of divine
power. It brings salvation to every believer, to the Jew first
and to the Gentile as well. 17 It reveals that divine righteousness
comes from faith and faith only as it is written in the Scriptures:
"The righteous man will inherit life through faith."

IDOLATRY

18 The wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all
the iniquity of the men who suppress divine truth by their
unrighteous behavior. 19 The knowledge of God is clear to them,
because God has shown it to them. 20 From the creation of
the world, his invisible attributes, his eternal power, and divine
character have been clearly perceptible through his creatures.
So they are inexcusable. 21 For although they knew God, they
have not glorified him as God or given thanks to him. On the
contrary they have indulged in futile speculations until their
stupid minds have been blinded. 22 Professing to be wise, they
have become fools. 23 They have exchanged the majesty of the
immortal God for idols resembling mortal men, birds, animals,
and reptiles.

THE PUNISHMENT

24 Therefore God abandoned them to the impure cravings
of their heart, and let them degrade their own bodies. 25 For
they exchanged divine truth for falsehood. They reverenced and
worshipped the creature in preference to the Creator who is
blessed forever. Amen.

26 For this reason God has left them at the mercy of
their shameful passions. Their women exchanged natural for
unnatural intercourse. 27 Likewise their men gave up natural
intercourse with women and are consumed by desire for each
other, men disgracing themselves with their fellow-men. Thus
they have received in themselves a fitting retribution for their
perversity.

28 Now, since the unbelievers refused to recognize God
any longer, God has abandoned them to reprobate impulses and
indecent conduct. 29 They revel in every kind of iniquity,
fornication, malice, greed, and wickedness. They are full of
envy, murder, strife, deceit, and malignity. They are gossipers,

30 slanderers, abhorrent to God, haughty, boastful, inventors of evil, disobedient to parents, 31 senseless, treacherous, heartless, implacable, merciless. 32 They know the divine decree that those who practice these vices deserve death. Yet they not only imitate them, but also approve those who act likewise.

CHAPTER 2

THE DAY OF RETRIBUTION

1 Therefore you are inexcusable, O men, whenever you judge another. When you pass judgment on someone, you condemn yourselves. For you who sit in judgment practice the very same vices yourselves. 2 We know that divine judgment will fall rightfully on those who are guilty of such misdeeds.

3 Do not suppose, O men, that you will escape judgment by condemning those who are guilty of such misdeeds. For you imitate them yourselves. 4 Do not presume upon his rich kindness, forbearance, and patience. You must know that divine kindness is meant to lead you to repentance.

5 Indeed in your obstinacy and impenitence you are storing up trouble for yourselves on the Day of Retribution, of revelation, and of righteous judgment. 6 Then God will render to every man according to his works. 7 He will give everlasting life to those who seek for glory, honor, and immortality by perseverance in well-doing.

8 But there will be wrath and fury for those who are factious, disloyal to divine truth, and loyal to iniquity. 9 There will be tribulation and torture for every soul of man who has done evil, for the Jew first and for the Gentile as well. 10 But glory, honor, and peace to every man who does good, to the Jew first and to the Gentile as well. 11 For God knows no partiality.

NATURAL LAW

12 All those who have sinned as Gentiles apart from the Law will also perish as Gentiles apart from the Law. Those who have sinned as Jews under the Law will be judged by the Law. 13 Mere listeners to the Law are not righteous in the sight of God. Only strict observers of the Law will be justified.

14 When the Gentiles who have not the Law practice it instinctively, they are a Law to themselves, even though they have not the Law. 15 They show that the obligations of the

Law are written in their hearts. Their consciences will testify for them. Their thoughts will either accuse them or defend them, 16 on the day when God through Jesus Christ will judge the secrets of men according to my Gospel.

JEWISH LAW

17 Suppose you call yourself a Jew. You rely on the Law. You boast about God. 18 You know his will. You can tell what is right according to the Law. 19 You are sure you can guide the blind, enlighten people who are in the dark, 20 instruct the ignorant, and teach the young. For in the Law you have the interpretation of all knowledge and all truth.

21 Now you must teach yourself before you teach others. You must not steal, while you preach against stealing. 22 You must not commit adultery, while you preach against adultery. You must not rob pagan temples, when you detest idols. 23 You must not dishonor God and violate his Law, while you boast about the Law. 24 For then, as the Scripture says: "The name of God is blasphemed through you."

SPIRITUAL CIRCUMCISION

25 Circumcision is of benefit, if you observe the Law. If you violate the Law, your circumcision is annulled. 26 Therefore if the uncircumcized observe the Law, they must be reckoned as circumcized. 27 The physically uncircumcized, by practicing the Law, will condemn you as a violator of the Law, although you have it in writing and you are circumcized.

28 The real Jew is not the man who seems to be a Jew ritually. Real circumcision is not external and physical. 29 The real Jew is the man who feels like a Jew in his conscience. Real circumcision is not ritual. It is mental and spiritual. Such a man receives his reward, not from men, but from God.

CHAPTER 3

JEWISH PRIVILEGES

1 Then what advantage has the Jew? What is the benefit of circumcision? 2 Great in all respects. First, because the Jews were entrusted with the revelations of God.

3 To be sure, some of the Jews have not been loyal to these revelations. But their disloyalty does not affect the divine

covenant. 4 By no means. God will be true to his words, even if all men prove to be false. For the Scripture tells us that his commandments will be vindicated and his judgments will triumph.

5 Thus our iniquity brings out the righteousness of God. But that does not mean that God is wrong in punishing us for our iniquity. 6 Never, even according to our human standards. Because that would mean that God has no right to judge the world.

7 But if the truthfulness of God is glorified through my falsehood, why then am I condemned as a sinner? 8 Yes, that condemnation is perfectly justified. Otherwise we should do evil, so that good may come out of it. As a matter of fact, that is what we are accused of preaching by some of our detractors.

SINFULNESS

9 Well then, does that mean that we Jews are at a disadvantage? In no way. As I have already said before, Jews as well as Gentiles are subject to sin.

10 For it is written in the Scriptures: "There is not a single righteous man on earth. 11 No one understands, no one searches for God. 12 They have all turned away. All of them have gone wrong. There is not a single man who does good. 13 Their throat is an open grave. Their tongues are full of deceit. Their lips are dripping the venom of an asp. 14 Their mouths overflow with curses and bitterness. 15 Their feet run swiftly to shed blood. 16 Their path is marked by ruin and wretchedness. 17 They know nothing of the ways of peace. 18 They have no fear of God before their eyes."

JUSTIFICATION THROUGH FAITH

19 Brethren, we know that everything the Law says, is addressed to those under its authority. So every mouth must be shut, and the whole world must be made accountable to God. 20 For no human being can be justified in his sight by observing the prescriptions of the Law. For the Law makes man conscious of sin.

21 But now justification from God has been revealed apart from the Law, though it is attested by the Law and the Prophets. 22 Justification from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all and upon all believers without distinction. 23 For all men have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.

24 But they are justified freely by his grace, because they have been redeemed through Jesus Christ. 25 God has offered him to us as a sacrifice of reconciliation to be received through faith. Thus he vindicated his own justice in the past. In his divine forbearance God overlooked the former sins of men. 26 He also vindicated his own justice at the present time. He showed us that he is righteous himself and that he justifies those who have faith in Jesus.

27 There is no reason for boasting of our grace. None whatever. Grace is not obtained through deeds, but through faith. 28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith, without any observances of the Law. 29 Is God the God of the Jews only? Is he not the God of the Gentiles also? Of course, he is the God of the Gentiles also. 30 Because God is one, and he will justify both the circumcized and the uncircumcized through the same faith.

31 Does that mean that we abolish the Law through faith? On the contrary, we uphold the Law.

CHAPTER 4

ABRAHAM'S JUSTIFICATION

1 For instance, how did Abraham, our forefather in the flesh, obtain justification?

2 If he was justified by observances, he had reason to be proud of it, but not in the sight of God. 3 For the Scripture says: "Abraham had faith in God, and he obtained justification."

4 The salary given to a workman is not a favor, but a debt. 5 On the other hand, the justification of a sinful man, through faith without any works, is a pure gift from God.

6 Thus David describes the blessedness of a man whom God justified without any works: 7 "Blessed are those whose transgressions have been forgiven and whose sins have been remitted. 8 Blessed is the man whose sins God will overlook."

9 Does this blessedness belong to the circumcized only, or to the uncircumcized as well? We have already said that Abraham has obtained justification through his faith. 10 In what circumstances? Was it after or before his circumcision? Not after, but before his circumcision.

11 He received the mark of circumcision as a seal for righteousness through the faith he had before he was circumcized. 12 Thus he became the forefather of all the

uncircumcized believers who have been justified through faith. He also became the forefather of all the circumcized, who share the circumcision of our forefather Abraham as well as the faith he had before he was circumcized, and who follow his example as his true descendants.

13 The promise made to Abraham and his descendants, that they should inherit the earth, did not come from the Law, but from the justification he obtained through faith. 14 If the adherents of the Law are his heirs, then faith is null and the promise is void. 15 For the Law brings down the retribution of God. But where there is no Law there is no violation of it.

16 Therefore the promise depends on faith, and rests on grace. Thus the promise is guaranteed to all his descendants, not only to the adherents of the Law, but also to those who share the faith of Abraham who is the father of us all. 17 For God tells him in the Scripture: "I have made you the father of many nations." The promise is guaranteed personally by God, in whom Abraham believed, who gives life to the dead, and who calls into being what does not exist.

HIS FAITH

18 Abraham, hoping against hope, believed that he would become the father of many nations, as God tells him in the Scripture: "Your descendants will be countless." 19 His faith did not weaken, though he knew that he was physically worn out, since he was about one hundred years old, and Sarah was past the age of bearing children.

20 He did not question the promise of God incredulously. On the contrary, he was strengthened by faith and glorified God. 21 For he was fully convinced that God would fulfill his promise. 22 Thus he obtained justification through faith.

23 Now it is written in the Scriptures that Abraham obtained justification through faith, not only for himself, 24 but also for us who will obtain justification through faith in God. For he raised from the dead our Lord Jesus, 25 who was put to death for our trespasses and rose from the dead for our justification.

CHAPTER 5

PEACE WITH GOD

1 Now that we have been justified by faith, we enjoy peace
with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. 2 For through him
and through faith we have obtained access to this grace in
which we stand, and we exult in our hope of sharing the glory
of God.

3 Not only that, but we also exult in our afflictions, because
we know well that affliction produces endurance; 4 and endurance
produces steadfastness; and steadfastness produces hope; 5 and
hope will not disappoint us. For the love of God has been poured
out in our hearts through the Holy Spirit which has been given
to us.

6 While we were still sinful, Christ in his own appointed
time died for ungodly men like us. 7 A man will hardly give
his life for a righteous person, though perhaps for a really
good man someone would even dare to die.

8 But God showed his love for us by the fact that Christ
died for us while we were still sinners. 9 So now that we have
been justified through his blood, it is far more certain that
through him we shall be saved from the retribution of God.

10 For we were reconciled to God through the death of
his Son when we were his enemies. Now that we are already
reconciled to him, we are much more assured that we shall be
saved through the life of his Son. 11 More than that, we actually
glory in God through our Lord Jesus Christ through whom we
have now received our reconciliation.

ORIGINAL SIN

12 Therefore, as sin came into the world through one man,
and death through sin, so death spread to all men, because all
men sinned. 13 It is true, sin was in the world before the Law
was revealed. But sin is not imputed in the absence of the Law.

14 Yet death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those
who had not sinned as Adam had by disobeying a command.
In this respect Adam foreshadowed the Messiah who was to
come.

DIVINE GRACE

15 But the effect of grace is the opposite of that of sin. For
whereas the sin of one man made the mass of mankind die,

the grace of God and the grace of one man, Jesus Christ, gave abundant life to mankind.

16 Grace differs from sin in another respect. The sentence which brought us condemnation arose out of one man's sin, while the pardon which brought us justification arose out of many sins. 17 Because of the sin of one man, death reigned through that one man, whereas the overflowing grace and the gift of justification through one man, Jesus Christ, will make men enjoy a reign of life more abundantly.

18 Therefore, as through the sin of one man all men were condemned, so through the righteousness of one man, all men were justified and brought back to life. 19 For as through the disobedience of one man many were made sinners, so through the obedience of one man many men will be made righteous.

20 When Law was instituted, sin increased. But where sin increased, grace abounded all the more. 21 As sin has reigned through death, grace will reign through righteousness and bring everlasting life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAPTER 6

DEAD TO SIN

1 Then what shall we conclude? Shall we continue to sin, so that grace may abound? 2 By no means. We have died to sin once for all. We cannot live in it any more. 3 You know well that all of us who have been baptized in the name of Christ, have been baptized in his death. 4 Consequently we have been buried with him by baptism in death. Thus, as Christ was raised up from the dead through the glory of the Father, likewise we shall rise and live a new life.

5 For as we have been buried like him in death, likewise we shall rise like him in resurrection. 6 You know that our old nature was crucified with him. Our body of sin has been destroyed and henceforth we cannot serve sin. 7 For no one who is dead can be subject to sin.

8 Now, if we are dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him. 9 We well know that Christ, after being raised from the dead, can die no more. Death has no more dominion over him. 10 For when he died, he died once for all unto sin. But now that he lives, he lives unto God. 11 Likewise you must also consider yourselves dead to sin, but alive in God through our Lord Jesus Christ. 12 So do not allow sin to reign

in your mortal bodies, and make you subject to the passions of the flesh.

13 Do not offer the members of your bodies to sin for the service of vice. But dedicate yourselves to God as men brought back from death to life, and offer the members of your bodies to God for the service of righteousness. 14 Sin must no longer dominate you. For now you live under grace, not under the Law.

15 How can we sin now that we live, not under the Law, but under grace? Never! 16 You know that you must serve the master to whom you owe allegiance, either sin which leads to death, or faith which leads to justification. 17 Thank God that you who were slaves of sin in the past now have become devoted servants of that divine doctrine which you were taught.

FREE FROM SIN

18 Now you have been delivered from the bondage of sin and have become the servants of righteousness. 19 I am using human terms because of the weakness of your flesh. In the past you dedicated the members of your bodies to the service of impurity and to greater and greater iniquity. But now you have dedicated the members of your bodies to the service of righteousness and sanctification.

20 When you were the slaves of sin, you were free of the burdens of righteousness. 21 But what benefit did you derive at that time from those practices which now make you blush? Their result was death. 22 However, now that you have been delivered from the bondage of sin and have become the servants of God, the benefit you derive is sanctification, and the final result will be eternal life. 23 Death is the penalty of sin. Everlasting life in Jesus Christ our Lord is the free gift of God.

CHAPTER 7

FREE FROM JEWISH LAW

1 Brethren, I am speaking to those who know the Law. Now the Law governs a man only as long as he lives. 2 For instance, a married woman is bound by law to her husband while he lives. But if he dies, she is set free from her obligations to her husband.

3 Therefore, if she goes with another man, while her husband is alive, she is called an adulteress. But after the death

of her husband she is free, and can marry another man without committing adultery.

4 In the same way, my brethren, we became dead to the Law through the body of Christ. For now we belong to the Lord who rose from the dead and who makes us bear fruit in the service of God. 5 When we were living in the flesh, our sinful passions, suggested by the Law, operated through the organs of our bodies and made them bear fruit in the service of death.

6 But now we have been released from the Law by which we were dominated. So now we can serve according to the new spirit, not according to the old letter.

COMMANDMENTS AND SIN

7 Does that mean that the Law is sin? By no means. Yet I should not have learned what sin was except through the Law. For instance, I should not have known of covetousness, if the Law had not said: "Do not covet." 8 This commandment gave an impulse to sin, and sin worked in me all kinds of covetousness. Sin was dormant without the Law. 9 Once upon a time, I lived without the Law. When the commandments came, sin awoke, and then I died. 10 Thus the commandments which should have meant life, proved to mean death for me. 11 For the commandments gave an impulse to sin, which beguiled me and used the commandments to kill me.

12 So the Law is holy, and the commandments are holy, just, and good. 13 Does that mean that what is good has brought death to me? By no means. It was sin which brought death to me. Thus sin has been manifested in its true nature. For it brought me death even by what is good. By using the divine commandments as a weapon, sin has become immeasurably diabolical.

14 We know that the Law is spiritual, whereas I am physical, sold into the slavery of sin. 15 I do not understand my own actions. For I do not practice what I wish, but I do what I hate.

16 Now if I do what I hate, then I admit that the Law is good. 17 In reality, it is not I who commit the wrong, but sin which dwells within me. 18 For I know that no good resides in me, that is to say in my flesh. I can will what is right, but I cannot do it. 19 For I do not do the good that I wish, but the evil that I do not want.

20 Now if I do what I do not wish to do, it is no longer I who commit it, but sin which dwells within me. 21 So the Law which regulates my actions is this: I want to do what is right. But wrong is all I can manage. 22 I agree with the Law of God in my inner self. 23 But I find another law in my members, which conflicts with the law of my mind, and makes me a prisoner to the law of sin which dwells in my members.

SALVATION

24 What a wretched man I am! Who can save me from this body of death? 25 Thank God! Jesus Christ our Lord can do it. For I serve the Law of God with my mind. But with my flesh I serve the law of sin.

CHAPTER 8

SPIRIT AND FLESH

1 So there is no condemnation any more for those who are in union with Jesus Christ. For they do not act according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. 2 The life-giving Law of the Spirit through Jesus Christ has set me free from the law of sin and death. 3 The Law was powerless, because it was hampered by the limitations of our flesh. But God sent his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh to deal with sin, and condemned sin in his flesh. 4 Thus the just requirements of the Law were fulfilled in us, who act not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

5 Those who live according to the flesh think the thoughts of the flesh. Those who live according to the Spirit think the thoughts of the Spirit. 6 The wisdom of the flesh brings death. The wisdom of the Spirit brings life and peace.

7 The wisdom of the flesh is hostile to God, because it does not submit to the Law of God. Indeed it cannot. 8 Therefore those who belong to the flesh cannot please God. 9 Now you do not belong to the flesh, but to the Spirit, if the Spirit of God dwells in you. The man who does not possess the Spirit of Christ does not belong to him. 10 But if Christ is within you, though your body is dead because of sin, your spirit will be alive because of righteousness.

11 If the Spirit of the Lord who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, then the Lord who raised Jesus from the

dead will give life to your mortal bodies through his Spirit which dwells in you also.

12 Therefore, brethren, we are under no obligation to the flesh, and we must not live according to the flesh. 13 For if you live according to the flesh, you will die. But if you put to death the impulses of the body through the Spirit, then you will live.

CHILDREN OF GOD

14 All those who are guided by the Holy Spirit are sons of God. 15 For you have not received the spirit of slavery to fall back on fear, but the spirit of adoption as sons, which makes us cry: "Abba, Father!" 16 The Holy Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are children of God.

17 Now if we are children, we are also heirs, heirs of God and fellow heirs of Christ. But we must suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I think that the sufferings of the present time bear no comparison to the glory which will be revealed to us in the future. 19 All human creatures are longing for this glorification of the sons of God.

20 Men have been subjected to frustration, not for any fault of theirs, but by divine Providence with a hope to look forward to. 21 The hope is that all of them in their turn will be set free from the slavery of death, and obtain the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 We know that all creation has been groaning and agonizing until now. 23 More than that, we ourselves who possess the first fruits of the Spirit, are groaning inwardly while we wait to be adopted by God as his sons through the redemption of our bodies.

24 For in this hope we were saved. Now visible hope is not hope. Nobody hopes for what he sees. 25 But if we hope for what we do not see, we wait for it with patience.

26 Likewise the Spirit helps us in our distress. For we do not know how to pray as we ought. But the Holy Spirit himself intercedes for us with unutterable sighs. 27 And the searcher of hearts knows what is the desire of the Holy Spirit. For he intervenes on behalf of the saints according to the will of God.

DIVINE DISPENSATION

28 We know that everything works for the benefit of
those who love God, and of those whom God has called for the
fulfillment of his plan. 29 God marked them out from the first
and predestined them to become the image of his Son, who was
the first-born of his many brethren. 30 He called them, he
justified them, he glorified them.

31 Then this is the inevitable conclusion: If God is for us,
no one can be against us. 32 God who did not spare his own Son,
but gave him up for us all, will certainly grant us everything
else.

33 No one can bring any accusation against us. For God
himself has chosen us and has justified us.

34 No one can condemn us. For Christ himself, who died
for us, or rather rose for us, is now sitting at the right hand
of God and is pleading for us.

THE LOVE OF CHRIST

35 No one can separate us from the love of Christ. Affliction,
distress, persecution, famine, privation, peril, and sword cannot
do it. We are prepared for the worst. 36 As the Scripture says:
"For your sake, O Lord, we face death every day, and we are
marked for slaughter like sheep."

37 No, we are going to overcome all these trials and march
to victory through God who loved us. 38 For I am absolutely
sure that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor devils, nor
dominions, nor present, nor future, 39 nor sky, nor abyss, nor
any other power of the universe can separate us from the love
of God in our Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 9

PAUL AND THE JEWS

1 I am not deceiving you. I am telling you the truth in
Christ. My conscience, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, bears me
witness, 2 when I tell you that I feel a great sorrow and a
continual anguish in my heart.

3 I wish I were accursed and cut off from Christ, if that
would benefit my brethren, my own kinsmen by race. 4 They
are Israelites; adopted as sons of God; heirs of the glory, the
covenant, the commandments, the worship, and the promises.

5 The patriarchs are their forefathers. And from their race,
according to the flesh, came Christ, who is God over all, blessed
for all eternity. Amen.

ABRAHAM'S DESCENDANTS

6 You must not imagine that the divine Gospel has failed,
7 for not all those who are descended from Israel belong to
Israel. Not all the descendants of Abraham are his sons, because
the Scripture says: "Your descendants will be named through
Isaac." 8 This means that the children of the flesh are not the
children of God. Only the children of the promise are considered
as his descendants.

9 For this is what the promise said: "About this time I
will return, and Sarah will have a son." 10 Not only she, but
Rebecca also received a promise, when she was about to bear
twin sons to her husband, our forefather Isaac.

DIVINE MERCY

11 The children were not yet born. They had done nothing,
good or evil. But divine Providence did not depend on any work
of theirs. It depended only on choice and the calling of God.
12 So he said to Rebecca that her elder son would serve the
younger, 13 as it is written in the Scriptures: "I love Jacob,
but I hate Esau."

14 Does that mean that God is unfair? By no means!
15 Because he said to Moses: "I will show mercy and compassion
to whom I choose." 16 So it does not depend on human wish or
exertion, but on the mercy of God.

17 For in the Scriptures he says to Pharaoh: "I have raised
you for this very purpose of displaying my power over you,
and making my name known all over the world." 18 So God
has mercy on whom he pleases, and whom he pleases he hardens.
19 Someone might ask: "Why then does God find fault with
men, since nobody can resist his will?"

20 But who are you, my friend, to talk back to God? The
creature cannot ask the Creator: "Why did you make me like
this?" 21 The potter is free to do what he wills with the clay,
using the same lump to make two objects, one for noble and
another for ignoble use.

22 It may be that God has tolerated with much patience
the reprobates who arouse his wrath and are fit only for

destruction in order to display his anger and his power at last. 23 He can show the wealth of all his glory for the vessels of mercy, whom he has prepared beforehand to share his Kingdom.

24 We are the vessels of his mercy, we whom he has called, Jews and Gentiles alike. 25 For he said through the Prophet Hosea: "I will call strangers 'my people.' I will call the unloved ones 'my beloved.' 26 Those who are not my people will be called 'Sons of the living God.'"

27 Isaiah cried out about Israel: "Although the sons of Israel are as numerous as the sand of the sea, only a minority of them will be saved. 28 For the Lord will execute his sentence rigorously and swiftly all over the earth."

FAITH AND LAW

29 Isaiah also foretold: "If the Lord of hosts had not given us children, our land would have been deserted like Sodom and Gomorrah."

30 That means that the Gentiles, who were not striving for righteousness, have attained it through faith. 31 The Jews, who were pursuing righteousness through the Law, have not succeeded in attaining it.

32 Why? Because they did not pursue it through faith, but on the basis of the observances of the Law. They have stumbled over the stone, 33 as it is written in the Scripture: "Listen! I am laying in Zion a stone that will make people stumble, and a rock to trip them over. But the man who believes in God will not be put to shame."

CHAPTER 10

SALVATION THROUGH FAITH

1 I desire with all my heart and I pray to God for the salvation of Israel. 2 I can testify that they have a zeal for God, but it is not based on knowledge. 3 Ignoring and disregarding the justification which comes from God, they are trying to institute a justification of their own. 4 For Christ has superseded the Law, and everyone who has faith in him may be justified.

5 Moses tells us in the Scriptures that every man who observes the rules prescribed by the Law will find life through them. 6 But justification which comes from faith is much easier. It does not mean that we must ascend into heaven to bring

Christ down on earth, 7 or descend into the abyss to bring Christ up from the dead.

8 It means only that the doctrine of the faith we preach is close to you, on your mouth, and in your mind. 9 You can find salvation if you acknowledge with your mouth that Jesus is the Lord, and if you believe in your mind that God has raised him from the dead. 10 For with our mind we believe in him, and so we are justified. With our mouth we acknowledge him, and so we are saved.

THE JEWS AND THE GOSPEL

11 The Scripture says: "The man who believes in God will not be put to shame." 12 For there is no distinction between Jew and Gentile. The same Lord is Lord of all, and bestows his rich mercies upon all who call upon him. 13 "Everyone who calls upon the Lord will be saved."

14 But how are they to call upon him, if they have not believed in him? How are they to believe in him, if they have not heard of him? How are they to hear him, if no one has ever preached to them? 15 How is anyone to preach to them, if he is not sent as a missionary? The Scripture says: "How welcome are the men who preach peace and good news!"

16 But all men have not accepted the Gospel. For Isaiah says: "O Lord, who has believed what we have preached?" 17 So faith comes from sermons, and sermons come from the Gospel of Christ. 18 Therefore I ask: Have they not heard? Indeed they have. For the Scripture says: "Their voice has gone out all over the earth, and their message to the end of the world."

19 Again I ask: Did Israel fail to understand? Well, Moses said about them: "I will make you jealous of those who are not a nation. I will make you rivals of a nation of fools."

20 Moreover Isaiah said: "I have been found by those who did not seek me. I have revealed myself to those who did not call upon me."

21 But of Israel he said: "All day long I stretched out my hands to a disobedient and stubborn people."

CHAPTER 11

A MINORITY SAVED

1 I ask then: Has God repudiated his people? By no means.
For I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, a
member of the tribe of Benjamin. 2 No, God has not repudiated
those whom he predetermined as his people. You know what
the Scripture says about Elijah and his complaint to God against
Israel: 3 "O Lord, they have killed your Prophets, and they
have demolished your altars. I am left alone, and they are
trying to take my life."

4 But God answered him: "I have reserved to myself seven
thousand men who have never knelt to Baal."

5 Likewise at the present time there is a minority of loyal
men chosen by grace. 6 But if they are chosen by grace, that
means they do not owe their choice to observance of the Law.
Otherwise grace would no longer be grace.

7 What does that mean? It means that the majority of
the men of Israel failed to obtain what they sought. Only a
chosen minority obtained it. 8 The rest of them became blinded,
as the Scripture says: "God gave them a spirit of drowsiness,
eyes that could not see, and ears that could not hear, down to
this very day."

9 David says: "Let their feast become a snare and a trap,
a pitfall and a retribution for them. 10 Let their eyes be blinded,
so that they cannot see, and bend them down forever."

11 So I ask: Have they stumbled and fallen utterly? By
no means. Their false step has brought salvation to the Gentiles,
and the conversion of the Gentiles will rouse the Jews to
emulate them. 12 Now, if their false step has enriched the
world, and if their default has brought such a wealth to the
Gentiles, how much greater blessings their complete conversion
will bring!

13 I am speaking to you Gentiles. Inasmuch as I am an
Apostle of the Gentiles, I lay great stress on my ministry, 14 in
the hope of rousing to emulation my fellow-countrymen, and
saving some of them. 15 For if their exclusion has meant the
reconciliation of mankind to God, what can their admission mean
but resurrection from the dead?

HUMILITY

16 When the first handful of dough is consecrated, so is
the entire lump also. And when the root of a tree is consecrated,
so are its branches also. 17 Some of the branches have been
broken off. You who were only a wild olive shoot have been
engrafted in their place, and enabled to share the richness of
the olive's root. 18 So do not boast over the broken branches.
Remember in your boastfulness that you do not support the
root. The root supports you.

19 But you will say: "Branches have been broken off, and
we have been grafted in." 20 That is true. They have been
broken off because of their lack of faith, while you stand fast
through faith only. So do not boast, but stand in awe. 21 For
if God did not spare the natural branches, he will not spare you
either.

22 Now consider both the kindness and the severity of God,
severity to those who have fallen, but kindness to you, provided
you continue to deserve his kindness; otherwise, you will be cut
off also.

23 Even those others, if they shake off their unbelief, will
be grafted in. God has the power to draft them in again. 24 For
if you were cut off from a wild olive and artificially grafted
upon a cultivated olive, then it will be much easier to graft
them back into their own original olive tree.

HOPE FOR ISRAEL

25 I want you to know this mystery. Otherwise you might
think too highly of yourselves. Blindness has fallen upon a part
of Israel, but only until the complete conversion of the Gentiles.
26 Then the entire nation of Israel will be saved, as it is written
in the Scriptures: "The deliverer will come from Zion. He will
drive away ungodliness from the house of Jacob. 27 And this
will be my covenant with them when I take away their sins."

28 From the point of view of the Gospel, they turned away
from God and made room for you. But from the point of view of
divine choice, they are dear to God because of their forefathers.
29 For the gifts and the call of God are irrevocable.

30 You once disobeyed God. But you obtained mercy when
they disobeyed. 31 Likewise they also disobeyed now, after you
have found mercy. So they will find mercy in their turn. 32 God
has made all men liable to disobedience. But he will have mercy
upon them all.

33 How deep is the mine of divine wisdom and knowledge!
How inscrutable are his judgments! How unsearchable are his
ways! 34 Who has ever known the mind of the Lord? Who has
ever been his counselor? 35 Who has ever given him a gift,
for which he should be recompensed? 36 For from him, through
him, and for him all things exist. To him be glory forever. Amen.

CHAPTER 12

EXHORTATION

1 I appeal to you by the mercies of God to offer your bodies
as a living sacrifice, as a holy and rational worship, acceptable to
God. 2 Do not adopt the customs of the unbelievers. But trans-
form yourselves by the renewal of your mind and find out what
the will of God is, namely what is good, acceptable, and perfect.

3 By virtue of the grace which has been bestowed upon me,
I advise everyone of you: Do not be conceited, but think of
yourselves with sober judgment according to the measure of
faith which God has imparted to you.

4 In one body we have many members. But all the members
have not the same function. 5 Likewise, though many in number,
we form one body in Christ collectively, and we belong to one
another individually.

6 Let us use our different spiritual gifts according to the
special grace given to us. Let the prophet prophesy in proportion
to his faith. 7 Let the servant serve. Let the teacher teach.
8 Let the preacher preach. Let the contributor give generously.
Let the leader rule with diligence. Let the merciful man do
his acts of mercy with cheerfulness.

9 Let our love be genuine. Let us hate evil. Let us hold
fast to what is good. 10 Let us be affectionate with one another
like brothers. Let us vie with one another in showing mutual
regard.

11 Do not be slothful in zeal. Be fervent in spirit. Serve
the Lord. 12 Rejoice in your hope. Be patient in tribulation.
Be constant in prayer. 13 Contribute to the needs of the saints.
Be hospitable. 14 Bless those who persecute you. Bless them,
and do not curse them. 15 Rejoice with those who rejoice. Weep
with those who weep. 16 Live in harmony with one another.
Do not be haughty, but associate with the humble. Do not be
conceited. 17 Return no one evil for evil. Bear in mind to be
noble in the sight of all men. 18 Be at peace with everybody
so far as you can, and so far as it depends on you.

19 Dear friends, never revenge yourselves, but leave it to
the divine retribution. For it is written in the Scripture:
"Vengeance is mine, I will repay, says the Lord."
20 On the contrary, if your enemy is hungry, feed him.
If he is thirsty, give him drink. By acting thus, you will heap
coals of fire on his head. 21 Do not be overcome by evil, but
overcome evil with good.

CHAPTER 13

OBEDIENCE

1 Everyone must obey the lawful authorities. Authorities
come from God only, and all existing authorities have been
instituted by him. 2 Consequently anyone who resists the
authorities rebels against the ordinance of God. Such rebels will
incur their own condemnation.
3 The magistrates do not terrorize those who do right,
but those who do wrong. If you want to have no fear of the
authorities, do right, and they will commend you for it. 4 For
they are the servants of God to help you. But if you do wrong,
you may well be afraid. For they do not carry swords for
nothing. They are the servants of God to punish the wrongdoers.
5 Therefore you must obey them, not only to escape the
wrath of God, but as a matter of principle. 6 For the same
reason you must also pay your taxes. Officials are the servants
of God, devoting themselves to his service. 7 Pay all dues, taxes,
tributes to those who are authorized to collect them. Respect
and honor those who are entitled to respect and honor.

CHARITY

8 Owe nobody anything except mutual love. For everyone
who loves his fellow-men has fully satisfied the Law. 9 Because
the commandments, "Do not commit adultery; Do not kill; Do
not steal; Do not bear false witness; Do not covet;" and all
other commandments are summed up in this sentence: "Love
your neighbor as yourself." 10 Love never wrongs a neighbor.
Therefore love is the fulfillment of the Law.

IMPENDING SALVATION

11 You must realize that this is the time to rise from sleep.
For our salvation is nearer to us now than when we first

believed in the Gospel. 12 The night is nearly over, and the day is drawing near. Therefore let us abandon all the practices of benighted paganism and let us take up the weapons of enlightened Christianity.

13 Let us live decently, as in the full light of the day. Turn away from revelry, drunkenness, lewdness, licentiousness, dissension, and rivalry. 14 Put on the armor of our Lord Jesus Christ, and forget all about gratifying the passions of the flesh.

CHAPTER 14

FORBEARANCE

1 Welcome the man who is weak in faith without arguing about his scruples. 2 Some men believe in eating everything. Others who are scrupulous eat only vegetarian food.

3 The man who eats must not look down on the man who abstains from it. Likewise the man who abstains from meat must not criticize the man who eats it. For God has welcomed him. 4 Who are you to pass judgment on the servant of another? Whether he stands or falls, it concerns only his master. To be sure, he will stand on his feet. For God is able to make him stand.

HOLIDAYS AND FOOD

5 Now this man observes a certain day as holier than another. That man considers all days alike. But everyone must be fully convinced in his own mind about this fact.

6 Everyone who observes a certain holiday must do so in the Lord. Likewise everyone who does not observe any holiday must do so in the Lord. Everyone who eats must do so in the Lord. For he offers thanks to God. Likewise everyone who abstains from food must do so in the Lord. For he also offers thanks to God.

7 None of us lives in himself alone, and none of us dies in himself alone. 8 If we live, we live in the Lord. If we die, we die also in the Lord. For we are servants of the Lord whether we live or die. 9 For this reason Christ died, rose from the dead, and returned to life again in order to become the Lord of both the living and the dead.

10 You have no right to judge your brother. You have no right to revile your brother. God only has the right to judge us, when we all stand before his tribunal. 11 For it is written

in the Scriptures: "As surely as I live, says the Lord, every knee will bow to me, and every tongue will glorify God." 12 So remember that each one of us will give an account of himself before God. 13 Therefore we must never judge one another. We must never put a hindrance or an obstacle in the way of a brother.

14 I know and I am persuaded as a disciple of Jesus Christ that no food is unclean in itself. But it is unclean for the man who considers it unclean. 15 Therefore if you hurt your brother by what you eat, you do not live according to the rules of charity. You must not cause the ruin of your brother for whom Christ has died. 16 You must not bring disrepute to your holy faith.

17 For the Kingdom of God does not mean food and drink. It means righteousness, peacefulness, and blessedness in the Spirit. 18 Whoever serves Christ through these virtues is well-pleasing to God and approved by men.

19 Let us pursue whatever contributes to peace and mutual edification. 20 Do not demolish the work of God for the sake of food. Everything indeed is clean. But it is wrong to lead astray others by what we eat. 21 It is right not to eat meat, or drink wine, or do anything by which your brother is offended, led astray, or upset.

22 If you have faith, keep it for yourself and for God. Blessed is the man who has complete faith in his diet. 23 But the man who has doubts about his diet is committing sin whenever he eats what he feels he should not eat. For he does not act from faith. Now everything that is not motivated by faith is sin.

CHAPTER 15

CHARITY

1 We who are strong must bear the burdens of our weak brothers without consulting our own pleasure. 2 Therefore each one of us must try to be kind to his neighbor, must help him, and must build up his faith.

3 For Christ did not seek his own gratification, but as it is written in the Scriptures: "He endured the denunciations of the detractors which have fallen upon him."

4 As you see, every line in the Scriptures has been written for our instruction. Thus we derive hope from the examples of endurance and consolation the Scriptures give us.

5 May God, who is the source of all endurance and
consolation, grant you Christian harmony with one another.
6 Then unitedly and unanimously you will glorify God, the
Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Therefore welcome one another, as Christ has welcomed
you, for the glory of God. 8 For I tell you that Christ became
a servant of the circumcized in order to prove the truthfulness
of God. So he carried out the promises made to our forefathers,
9 and caused the Gentiles to glorify him for his mercy. For the
Scripture says: "Therefore I will glorify you among the Gentiles
and I will praise your name."

10 Again the Scripture says: "Rejoice, O Gentiles, with
the people of the Lord." 11 And again: "Praise the Lord, all
Gentiles, and all peoples." 12 Furthermore, Isaiah says: "A
descendant of Jesse will come, and he will rise to rule the
Gentiles. For they will set their hope on him."

13 May the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in
your faith, so that you may have overflowing hope through the
power of the Holy Spirit.

APOSTLE OF THE GENTILES

14 For my part, as far as you are concerned, my brethren,
I am convinced that you are full of goodness, endowed with all
knowledge, and able to instruct one another.

15 I have written you more boldly on some points to refresh
your memories. 16 God has bestowed upon me his grace
to become an Apostle of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, to serve
as a priest of the divine Gospel, and to make the Gentiles an
acceptable offering to God, consecrated by the Holy Spirit.

17 I am proud of my work for God. 18 For I will venture
to speak only of what Jesus Christ has accomplished through
me in winning the Gentiles to the faith by word and action,
19 by wonders, by miracles, and by the power of the Holy Spirit.
Thus I have successfully preached the Gospel of Christ all
around from Jerusalem to Illyricum.

20 It has been my ambition to proclaim the Gospel in
regions where the name of Christ was unknown. I did not
build on foundations laid by another man. 21 As the Scripture
says: "Those who have never been told about him will see, and
those who have never heard will understand."

MISSIONARY PLANS

22 This is why I have been so often prevented from visiting
you. 23 But now there is no more work for me in these regions.
I have longed for many years to come to you. 24 So when I
go to Spain, I hope to visit you on my way there, and to have
you send me off on my journey, after I have enjoyed your
company for a while.

25 But now I am going to Jerusalem to bring some relief
to the saints there. 26 For our brethren of Macedonia and
Achaia were kind enough to make some contributions to the
poor among the saints in Jerusalem. 27 They were kind enough
to do it. As a matter of fact, they were really indebted to them.
The Gentiles have shared their spiritual gifts. Consequently they
are bound to contribute to their temporal needs in return.

28 After I have accomplished this mission, and consigned
to them these contributions, I will start for Spain and come
to you on the way. 29 I know well that when I come to see
you, I will come with the full blessing of Christ.

PRAYERS

30 I entreat you by our Lord Jesus Christ and by the love
of the Holy Spirit, to appeal in your prayers to God on my
behalf. 31 Pray that I may be delivered from the unbelievers
in Judea, and that my mission in Jerusalem may be acceptable
to the saints. 32 Then, by the will of God, I will come to you
with joy and find rest in your company. 33 The God of peace
be with you all. Amen.

CHAPTER 16

PHOEBE

1 I introduce to you our sister Phoebe, a deaconess of the
Church at Cenchreae. 2 Welcome her in the name of the Lord,
in a manner worthy of the saints, and assist her in any business
in which she may need your help. She has been a protectress
of many brethren, including myself.

GREETINGS TO ROME

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila, my fellow-workers in Jesus
Christ, 4 who have risked their lives for me. Not only I, but
all the Churches of the Gentiles are thankful to them. 5 Greet

also the members of the Church who meet in their house. Greet my dear friend Epaenetus, who was the first convert of Christ in Asia.

6 Greet Mary, who has worked very hard among you. 7 Greet Andronicus and Junias, my kinsmen and my fellow prisoners, who are held in high esteem among the Apostles, and who became Christians before I did.

8 Greet Ampliatus, my dear friend in Christ. 9 Greet Urbanus, our fellow-worker in Christ, and my dear friend Stachys. 10 Greet Apelles, the well-approved brother in Christ. Greet those who belong to the household of Aristobulus.

11 Greet my kinsman Herodion. Greet the Christians who belong to the household of Narcissus. 12 Greet Tryphaena and Tryphosa, our fellow workers in the Lord. Greet my dear friend Persis, who has worked hard for the Lord.

13 Greet Rufus, the chosen in the Lord, and his mother, who has been a mother to me. 14 Greet Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren who meet with them. 15 Greet Philologus, Julia, Nereus and his sister, Olympas and all the saints who meet with them. 16 Greet one another with a sacred kiss. All the Churches of Christ send you their greetings.

WARNING

17 I appeal to you to keep your eye on those who stir up dissensions and scandals, contrary to the doctrine which you have been taught. Avoid their company. 18 Such men are not serving our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own base passions. With their plausible and flattering talk they deceive the hearts of unsuspecting people.

19 You are renowned all over the world for your loyalty to the Gospel, and I am proud of you. Still I want you to be wise about what is good, and innocent about what is evil. 20 Then the God of peace will soon crush Satan under your feet. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

GREETINGS FROM CORINTH

21 My fellow worker, Timothy, and my kinsmen, Lucius, Jason, and Sosipater send their greetings.

22 I, Tertius, the writer of this letter, greet you in the name of the Lord.

23 Gaius, my host and the host of the Church at large,
sends you his greetings. Greetings from Erastus, the treasurer
of the city, and brother Quartus.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.
Amen.

DOXOLOGY

25 May God confirm you according to my Gospel and the
teachings of Jesus Christ. His plan of salvation was kept secret
for long ages. 26 But now it has been revealed and manifested.
In accordance with the command of the eternal God, it has been
proclaimed through the prophetic Scriptures to all the Gentiles,
to convert them to our faith.

27 Glory to the only omniscient God through Jesus Christ,
forever and ever. Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, the chosen Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and our brother Sosthenes:

2 To the Church of God at Corinth; to the chosen saints who have been sanctified in the name of Jesus Christ; and to all those anywhere who invoke the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord as well as ours:

3 Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I always give thanks to God on your behalf for that divine grace which has been bestowed upon you in the name of Jesus Christ. 5 You have been enriched through him in every way, in eloquence, and in knowledge of every kind, 6 since the testimony of Christ has been confirmed among you.

7 Now there is no spiritual gift in which you are still deficient. You have only to look forward to the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ. 8 For he will strengthen you to the last and pronounce you blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 God who has called you to the communion of his Son, Jesus Christ our Lord, will fulfill his promise.

FACTIONS

10 Brethren, I entreat you in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ to reach an agreement, to stop your dissensions, and to be perfectly united in mind and purpose. 11 For it has been reported to me by Chloe's household that you, my dear friends, are quarreling with each other.

12 What I mean is this, that one of you says, "I am a follower of Paul," another, "I am a follower of Apollos," another, "I am a follower of Peter," and another, "I am a follower of Christ."

13 Now Christ is not divided. Paul was not crucified for
you. And you have not been baptized in the name of Paul.
14 I am thankful to God that I have not baptized any of
you except Crispus and Gaius. 15 So no one can say that I
have baptized him in my name. 16 Yes, I did baptize also the
members of the household of Stephanas. I do not know that
I baptized anyone else.

THE CRUCIFIED MESSIAH

17 Christ has not sent me to baptize, but to preach his
Gospel without any fine rhetoric, and to let the Cross of Christ
reveal its full power. 18 The message of the Cross is foolishness
to those who are perishing. But it is the power of God to us
who are being saved. 19 For the Scripture says: "I will destroy
the wisdom of the wise, and I will thwart the shrewdness of
the shrewd."
20 Where is the wise man? Where is the scribe? Where
is the debater of this age? God has made their worldly wisdom
sound foolish. 21 For when God showed us his divine wisdom,
men with their worldly wisdom failed to know God. So God
has chosen to save the believers through the Gospel message
which sounds foolish to them.
22 For the Jews are demanding miracles, and the Greeks
are looking for philosophy. 23 But we are preaching a Messiah
who was crucified. This crucified Messiah is a stumbling-block
to the Jews, and foolishness to the Gentiles. 24 But he is the
power and the wisdom of God to those Jews and Gentiles who
have received the heavenly call. 25 For what is called divine
foolishness is superior to human wisdom, and what is called
divine weakness is stronger than human strength.

THE HUMBLE AND THE PROUD

26 Consider what God has done when he called you, my
brethren. According to worldly standards, very few of you were
learned, influential, and well-born. 27 But God has chosen the
simple men of this world to confound the learned. God has
chosen the weak men of this world to confound the powerful.
28 God has chosen the humble, the despised, and the unimportant
men to annihilate the important men of this world. 29 So no
human creature can boast in his presence.
30 God is the source of your life, your wisdom, your

consecration, and your redemption in Jesus Christ. 31 Therefore, as the Scripture says: "If anyone wants to boast, let him boast in the Lord."

CHAPTER 2

INSPIRED PREACHING

1 When I visited you, my brethren, I did not proclaim to you the Gospel of God with eloquent and sophisticated rhetoric. 2 I did not pretend to possess any other knowledge except the revelation of Jesus, the Crucified Messiah. 3 When I came to you, I was sick, agitated, and terrified. 4 I did not preach my Gospel to you with persuasive and philosophical disquisitions, but with sermons demonstrating the miraculous inspiration of the Holy Spirit. 5 Thus your faith is not founded on the wisdom of man, but on the power of God.

DIVINE WISDOM

6 True, I impart wisdom to people of mature faith. But it is not a wisdom of this age, or of the rulers of this age, who are doomed to pass away. 7 I impart a divine wisdom, which is shrouded in mystery, which was foreordained before the ages for our glorification.

8 None of the rulers of this age has understood this wisdom. If they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 9 As the Scripture says: "God has prepared for those who love him what no eye ever saw, what no ear ever heard, what no human mind ever conceived." 10 Yes, God has made these revelations to us through the Holy Spirit. For the Holy Spirit can search everything, even the depths of God.

11 For instance, who else can know a man's thoughts except that man's own Spirit within him? Likewise no one knows the thoughts of God except the Holy Spirit of God.

12 We have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which comes from God, and makes us realize the gifts which he has bestowed upon us. 13 We express these gifts in words not taught by human wisdom, but in words inspired by the Holy Spirit. For we can interpret spiritual truths only in spiritual language.

14 But the worldly man does not grasp the secrets of the Spirit of God. They are folly to him. He cannot understand them, because they can be scrutinized only spiritually.

15 A spiritual man can scrutinize everything. But he
cannot be scrutinized by any worldly man. 16 For who can
understand and interpret the mind of the Lord? We are the
only ones who can do it, because we have the mind of Christ.

CHAPTER 3

ELEMENTARY INSTRUCTION

1 Now, brethren, I could not preach to you as to spiritual
men, but as to worldly men, as to little children in Christ. 2 I
fed you with milk, not with solid food, because you were not
strong enough for it. Indeed you are not strong enough for it
even now.

3 For you are still worldly men. When you are torn by
jealousy, strife, and dissension, you are worldly men and behave
like men of the flesh. 4 When one of you says, "I am a follower
of Paul," and another, "I am a follower of Apollos," you are
worldly men indeed.

MISSIONARIES

5 For what is Paul? And what is Apollos? They are only
missionaries of the faith through whom you believed, as the
Lord gave each one an opportunity.

6 I planted, Appollos watered, but God made the plants
grow. 7 So neither the planter nor the waterer counts for
anything, but only God who makes the plants grow. 8 The
planter and the waterer are all one. Yet each one will receive
his wages according to his work.

THE MASTER BUILDER

9 We are fellow laborers in the service of God. You are
the field of God, the building of God. 10 Like a skillful master
builder, I laid a foundation according to the divine grace given
to me, and other men are building upon it. Let each man build
upon it carefully. 11 For no one can lay any other foundation
than that which is laid, that is to say, Jesus Christ himself.
12 Now different men will build on this foundation with gold,
silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or stubble.

13 But the quality of each man's work will become manifest.
The Day of the Lord will disclose it. That Day will be revealed
with fire, and that fire will test the quality of each man's work.

14 If what a man has built on this foundation survives, he will receive his reward. 15 If a man's work is burned up, he will suffer loss. Yet he himself will be saved through that fire.

THE TEMPLE OF GOD

16 You must know that you are the temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you. 17 God will destroy anyone who destroys the temple of God. For the temple of God is holy, and you are his temple.

18 Let no one deceive himself. If any one of you imagines that he is wiser than the rest of you in what the world calls wisdom, he had better become a fool. Then he may become really wise. 19 For the wisdom of this world is folly with God. For it is written in the Scripture: "The Lord catches the wise with their own cunning." 20 And again: "The Lord knows that the deliberations of the wise are vain."

21 Therefore let no one place his confidence in men. After all, everything belongs to you. 22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Peter, or the world, or life, or death, or the present, or the future, all of them belong to you. 23 And you belong to Christ, and Christ belongs to God.

CHAPTER 4

CHRIST THE ONLY JUDGE

1 Every believer must regard us as missionaries of Christ and stewards of the divine sacraments. 2 The first requirement for a steward is trustworthiness. 3 So far as I am concerned, I pay no attention to the investigation which you or any human court might undertake against me on this point. In the first place, I do not see any reason to investigate myself. 4 For I am not aware of any guilt. That does not mean that I am self-righteous. But the only one who has the right to investigate me is the Lord himself.

5 Therefore do not pronounce any premature judgments. Wait until the Lord comes back. He will bring to light what is hidden in darkness. He will reveal the secrets of all human minds. Then each one of us will receive his measure of praise from God.

ORDEALS OF APOSTLES

6 Now, brethren, I have applied the above-mentioned remarks to myself and to Apollos for your benefit. As I have already written to you, do not be puffed up with rivalry over one teacher against another.

7 After all, my friends, what gives you this pre-eminence? Everything came to you as a gift. If you received everything as a gift, why do you boast as if you had achieved them yourselves?

8 Already you are filled. Already you have grown rich. In our absence you have become kings. Indeed I wish you did reign. Then we would share your kingdom with you.

9 On the contrary, God has exhibited us Apostles at the end of the procession, like the men condemned to die in the arena. Indeed we have become a spectacle before the world of angels and of men.

10 We are fools in Christ, you are wise in Christ. We are weak, you are strong. You are respected, we are despised.

11 Up to this present hour we hunger. We thirst. We are ill-clad. We are buffeted. We are homeless. 12 We work like slaves. We labor with our own hands.

13 When we are reviled, we bless. When we are persecuted, we endure. When we are insulted, we entreat. We have become the refuse and the offscouring of all mankind even until now.

14 I am not writing thus to make you ashamed. I am only admonishing you as my beloved children. 15 You may have ten thousand instructors in Christ. Yet you have not many fathers. And I have become your spiritual father in Jesus Christ through the Gospel. 16 Therefore I entreat you, follow my example.

17 For this very reason I am sending you Timothy, my beloved and faithful son in the Lord. He will remind you of the Christian doctrines which I preach in all the Churches. 18 Now some of you are bragging, as if I were not coming to you again. 19 But I will come to you soon, if the Lord is willing. Then I will ascertain, not the empty words, but the real power of these braggers. 20 For the Kingdom of God does not consist of words, but of power. 21 What would you prefer? Do you want me to come to you with a rod, or in a spirit of charity and gentleness?

CHAPTER 5

INCEST

1 I am informed that a notorious immorality prevails among
you. Your immorality is of a kind unknown even among pagans.
For instance, a man is living with his father's wife. 2 Now,
instead of bragging, you should be overwhelmed with grief.
You must expel from your company the man who is guilty of
such a shameful act. 3 Indeed, though absent in body, but
present in spirit, I have already passed judgment in the name
of Jesus Christ on this man who is disgracing himself.

4 Therefore call an assembly at which I will be present in
spirit with all the power of our Lord Jesus Christ. 5 Then in
his name hand over that man to Satan to torture his corrupt
nature. Thus his spirit will find salvation in the day of our
Lord Jesus Christ.

6 You have no reason to be boastful. You know that a
little yeast can ferment the entire lump of dough. 7 You must
remove the old yeast and become fresh dough, since you claim
that you are free of the old leaven. For our Passover Lamb,
Christ himself, has been sacrificed for us. 8 So let us celebrate
this festival, not with the old leaven of malice and wickedness,
but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

EXCOMMUNICATION

9 I wrote you in my letter not to associate with fornicators.
10 I do not mean that you must have nothing whatever to do
with anyone in the world around you who is a fornicator, miser,
grafter, or idolater. For then you would have to go out of the
world.

11 No, what I meant in my letter was that you must not
associate with anyone who is supposed to be a Christian brother,
yet is a fornicator, or miser, or idolater, or reviler, or drunkard,
or grafter. With such a person you must not even sit at the
table.

12 It is none of my business to judge the outsiders. No.
God will judge them. 13 But you must judge the insiders your-
selves. You must expel a wicked person from your community.

CHAPTER 6

LAWSUITS

1 Now I understand that when anyone of you has a
grievance against his neighbor, instead of laying the case before
a synod of Christian saints, you dare to bring the matter to a
court of profane judges.

2 Yet you know well enough that the Christian saints will
judge all mankind. If you are qualified for such an enormous
duty, how can you be unfit to take care of your trivial cases?

3 Moreover you know that we are going to judge even the
angels in heaven. Then surely we are capable to decide mere
secular matters on earth. 4 Whenever you have such ordinary
cases to arbitrate, you would do better to appoint the most
insignificant members of your own Church as judges.

5 To tell you the truth, you should be ashamed of yourselves.
Have you really not a single man in your Church wise enough
to settle a disagreement between one brother and another?

6 How is it that brother must go to court against brother,
and before profane judges? 7 To begin with, having lawsuits
with one another at all, means your utter failure. You must
rather bear the wrong. You must rather suffer loss. 8 When
you go to court, you commit wrong, you inflict loss, and at a
brother's expense.

9 You know well enough that wrong-doers will not inherit
the Kingdom of God. Do not deceive yourselves. Neither
fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminates, nor
sodomites, 10 nor thieves, nor misers, nor drunkards, nor revilers,
nor grafters will inherit the Kingdom of God.

11 Some of you used to be such sinners in the past. But
now you have been purified. You have been consecrated. You
have been justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and in the
Holy Spirit of our God.

UNION WITH CHRIST

12 I am free to do everything, but everything is not
convenient for me. Therefore I do not want to be enslaved by
any passion. 13 Food is meant for the stomach, and the stomach
for food. But God will destroy them both ultimately. The body
is not meant for fornication, but for the service of the Lord.
For the Lord is the master of our body. 14 Now God raised our

Lord from the dead, and he will raise us also from the dead through his power.

15 You know that your bodies are members of Christ. You must not take what belongs to Christ and hand it over to a harlot. Never! 16 For you well know that everyone who unites himself to a harlot becomes one body with her. The Scripture says: "The two will become one flesh."

17 On the contrary, everyone who unites himself to the Lord becomes one spirit with him. 18 Therefore keep away from fornication. Any other sin which a man commits, is perpetrated outside his own body. But the fornicator is committing a crime against his own body.

19 You know that your bodies are the shrines of the Holy Spirit within you. You have obtained them from God. Consequently you are not the masters of your bodies. 20 A ransom has been paid for your redemption. Therefore glorify God in your bodies and in your spirits which belong to God.

CHAPTER 7

MATRIMONY AND CELIBACY

1 In answer to the questions you asked me in your letter, let me tell you that it is preferable for a man to remain unmarried. 2 Still, in order to avoid the danger of immorality, let each man have his own wife, and each woman her own husband.

3 Both husband and wife must help each other in discharging their conjugal duties. 4 Both of them must know that they belong to each other physically as well as spiritually. 5 Therefore you must not abstain from your conjugal intercourse unless you agree to do so for a while, to devote yourselves to prayer and fasting. Then come together again and do not give Satan an opportunity to tempt your weakness.

6 This is not a command. It is only a concession. 7 I wish you were all unmarried like myself. But I know that each one of us has a special gift from God for a different way of life.

8 To the bachelors and the widows I give this advice: It would be preferable for them to remain single like myself. 9 But if they do not possess self-restraint, let them marry. For it is better to marry than to torture themselves.

10 To those already married I give this command, which is not mine, but comes from the Lord: The wife must not leave

her husband. 11 If she has already left him, she must either remain a widow, or go back to her own husband again. Likewise the husband must not divorce his wife.

MIXED MARRIAGES

12 To some of you I give this advice, which is mine and does not come from the Lord: If a Christian brother has a wife who is not a believer, yet she is willing to live with him, he must not divorce her. 13 Likewise, if a Christian wife has a husband who is not a believer, yet he is willing to live with her, she must not part with him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is consecrated through his Christian wife, and the unbelieving wife is consecrated through her Christian husband. Otherwise your children will fall away, while they are not consecrated in the faith.

15 But if the unbelieving husband is in favor of separation, let them separate. In such a case, the Christian brother or sister is free from any obligation. God has commanded you to live in peace.

16 Still it is quite possible for a wife to save her husband and for a husband to save his wife. 17 Therefore everyone of you must act according to the duty which God has assigned him, and the vocation to which the Lord has called him. This is the direction I give to all members of the Church.

CIRCUMCISION

18 If a man was circumcized before his conversion, he must not conceal it. If he was uncircumcized, he must not undergo circumcision after his conversion. 19 Circumcision or uncircumcision does not make any difference at all. What counts is the observance of the commandments of God.

VOCATION

20 Let each one of you remain in the vocation he had, when he was converted. 21 If you were converted as a slave, do not worry. Your conversion will give you a better opportunity to become free. 22 For the slave who has been called to the service of the Lord, becomes automatically a free man of the Lord. Likewise a free man becomes a slave of the Lord after his conversion. 23 A price was paid to redeem you from human slavery. Do not become slaves of men again. 24 Therefore,

brethren, let each one of you remain with God in the condition of life in which he was at the time of his conversion.

VIRGINITY

25 I have no commandment from the Lord about virgins. But I give you my opinion as a man who has become trustworthy through the mercy of the Lord. 26 I think that, in view of the impending upheaval, it is well for a person to remain as he is now.

27 If you are united to a wife, do not seek to be released. If you are free of wedlock, do not look for a wife. 28 If you marry, you do not commit a sin. And if a virgin marries, she does not commit a sin either. Yet those who marry will have worldly troubles which I want to spare you.

29 I must warn you, brethren, that the appointed time of the upheaval is approaching shortly. So let those who have wives live as if they had none. 30 Let the mourners behave as if they were not mourning. Let the joyful look as if they had no joy. Let buyers feel as if they did not possess their goods. 31 Let those who deal with worldly affairs look as if they were not interested in them. For the present phase of the world is passing away.

32 I want you to be free of worldly anxieties. The unmarried believer is anxious about the affairs of the Lord, and how he can please the Lord. 33 But the married believer is anxious about worldly affairs, and how he can please his wife. So his interests are divided.

34 The unmarried woman or the virgin is anxious about the affairs of the Lord, and how she can be consecrated in body and spirit. But the married woman is anxious about worldly affairs, and how she can please her husband.

35 I make these suggestions for your own benefit. I do not mean to lay any restraint on you. I am only concerned about what is suitable for you, and how you can serve the Lord without diversion.

36 If anyone thinks that his conduct is open to censure with regard to the girl to whom he is betrothed, in case she is of mature age, and if it is absolutely necessary, then let him do as he pleases. Let them be married, it is no sin.

37 But the man of firm purpose who has made up his mind, who is under no pressure, and who can carry out his plan of

keeping his betrothed as a spiritual bride, is also doing the right thing.

38 Thus both are right in marrying and in refraining from marriage, but the man who does not marry will do better.

39 A wife is bound to her husband during his lifetime. After his death, she is free to marry anyone she pleases, but only in the name of the Lord. 40 Yet she will be happier, if she remains unmarried. That is my opinion, and I suppose that I am inspired by the Holy Spirit as well as others.

CHAPTER 8

PAGAN SACRIFICES

1 We all know what is the truth about meat which has been offered in pagan worship. But knowledge puffs up. Only charity builds up. 2 The only thing we know well is that we do not possess real knowledge about anything. 3 But everyone who loves God is endowed with divine knowledge.

4 We know well that the idols to whom sacrificial meat is offered have no real existence in the world, since there is only one God. 5 Pagans may speak of their so-called gods as existing either in heaven or on earth. Their gods are many and their lords are countless.

6 But for us there is only one God the Father by whom everything came into being and for whom we all exist, and one Lord Jesus Christ, through whom everything came into being and through whom we all exist.

7 Yet all men do not possess this knowledge. Some of them in their conscience still believe in idols and eat the sacrificial meat offered to them. Thus they defile their weak conscience.

8 Food cannot improve our standing in the sight of God. If we eat, we are not better off. If we do not eat, we are not worse off.

9 But you must take care that this right of yours does not become a stumbling-block to your weak brother. 10 Somebody may see you who are enlightened, attending a dinner in a pagan temple. Then he may be led by his weak conscience to eat meat offered in sacrifice to a pagan divinity.

11 Thus, through your superior knowledge, you will bring spiritual ruin to your weak brother, for whom Christ has died. 12 Now when you sin against your brethren and wound their weak consciences, you sin against Christ himself. 13 Therefore,

if my food makes my brother fall, I will never eat meat again. I will not become the cause of my brother's fall.

CHAPTER 9

PAUL'S CLAIMS

1 I am an Apostle. I am a free man. I have seen our Lord Jesus Christ. You yourselves are the certificate of my work in the service of the Lord. 2 If I am not an Apostle to others, I am an Apostle to you. For you are the best evidence of my Apostleship in Christ.

3 My defense to those who call me to account is the following: 4 We have the right to be provided with food and drink for our services. 5 We have the right to travel with our Christian wives like the other Apostles, like the Lord's brethren, and like Peter.

6 Barnabas and myself must not be the only ones who have to labor for self-support. 7 No soldier serves at his own expense. No one tends a flock without drinking any of its milk. 8 This is not a plea invented by man. The Scripture tells us so also. 9 For in the Law of Moses it is written: "You must not muzzle an ox that thrashes the corn."

10 Of course, God was not making provisions for oxen only, but also for men. Yes, this rule was written for our benefit also. The ploughman has a right to plough, and the thrasher to thrash, with the expectation of sharing the crop. 11 So it is not such a great matter to reap from you a temporal reward for the spiritual harvest we have sown among you.

FREE SERVICE

12 If others enjoy such a right over you, we certainly have a still better claim. Nevertheless, we have never availed ourselves of this legitimate right, On the contrary, we endure every privation rather than put an obstacle in the way of the Gospel of Christ.

13 You know that those who work in the temple get their food from the temple. Likewise, those who serve at the altar get their share from the altar offerings. 14 Therefore the Lord has ordained that those who preach the Gospel should live from the Gospel.

15 But I have not availed myself of any of these rights. And I am not writing you now to secure any such provision for

myself. I would rather die than let anyone deprive me of this boast of mine.

16 There is really nothing to boast of when I preach the Gospel, for I cannot help doing it. Woe to me, if I do not preach the Gospel. 17 Now, if I do it because I like it, I have my reward. If I do it, though I do not like it, I am only executing a commission for which I feel responsible.

18 Then what is my reward? My reward is that I preach the Gospel free of charge, without using my legitimate right of living from the service of the Gospel.

LABORING FOR CHRIST

19 Though I am free from all men, I have made myself a slave of everyone, because I want to save more souls. 20 So to the Jews I became like a Jew, because I wanted to convert Jews. To those under the Law of Moses I became as though I were under the Law, because I wanted to convert those who are under the Law. Yet I am not under the Law of Moses myself.

21 To the Gentiles who are outside the Law of Moses I became like a Gentile, because I wanted to convert Gentiles. Yet I am not a Gentile outside the Law of God, since I am under the Law of Christ.

22 To the distressed I became distressed, because I wanted to convert the distressed. So I have become everything to everyone, because I wanted by all means to save some of them. 23 I do it all for the sake of the Gospel, because I want to share its blessings.

THE PRIZE

24 As you know, in the arena all the runners compete. But only one of them receives the prize. Try to get the prize when you compete in a race. 25 Every competitor in a contest has to undergo a strict regime of diet and training. They do it to win a perishable wreath. But we compete for an eternal crown in heaven.

26 As for me, I never run aimlessly. I never beat the air like a shadow-boxer. 27 But I pommel and subdue my body, because I do not want to lecture others and be disqualified myself.

CHAPTER 10

WARNINGS

1 I want you to bear in mind that our forefathers were all
guided by the cloud in the desert. They all passed through the
sea dry-shod. 2 They were all baptized in the cloud and in the
sea in the name of Moses. 3 They all ate the same spiritual
food. 4 They all drank the same spiritual drink. For they drank
from the spiritual Rock that followed them. That Rock was
Christ.

5 But God was displeased with most of our forefathers.
he struck them down in the desert. 6 These events are a
warning for us to stop craving for evil, as they did.

7 We must not be idolaters like some of them, as it is
written in the Scripture: "The people sat down to eat and
drink. Then they rose up to dance."

8 We must not commit fornication, as some of them did.
For twenty-three thousand of them were killed in one day.

9 We must not try the patience of the Lord, as some of
them did. For they were killed by the snakes.

10 We must not grumble, as some of them did. For they
were slain by the angel of destruction.

11 All these disasters which happened to them were
examples. They have been written to serve as a warning for
us in these days, in which the ages have reached their climactic
end. 12 Therefore everyone who thinks that he is standing
firmly must be on his guard against a fall. 13 You have had
only common human temptations. But God in his mercy will
not let you be tempted beyond your strength. On the contrary,
he will help you to endure and escape temptations.

HOLY COMMUNION

14 Therefore my dear friends, flee from idolatry. 15 I
appeal to your good sense. Judge my advice for yourselves.
16 Remember that when we drink the Wine from the consecrated
Cup, we receive the communion of the Blood of Christ. When
we break the consecrated Bread, we receive the communion of
the Body of Christ. 17 The one Bread makes us one body, though
we are many in number, because we share the same Bread.

18 Look at the rites of Israel. Those who eat the sacrifices
are ministers of the altar. 19 I am not implying that a sacrifice
to an idol has any meaning, or that an idol has any existence.

20 I mean that the pagans offer sacrifice to demons and not to God. Therefore I do not want you to become ministers of demons.

21 You cannot drink the Cup of the Lord and the cup of demons. You cannot share the Table of the Lord and the table of demons. 22 We cannot defy the Lord, because we cannot claim to be stronger than he.

IDOLATRY

23 I am free to do everything, but everything is not convenient for me. Yes, I am free to do everything, but not everything is constructive. 24 Moreover, we must not seek our own convenience, but the benefit of our neighbor.

25 You may eat whatever is sold in the meat market without raising questions of religious scruples. For the Scripture says: 26 "The earth and its contents belong to the Lord."

27 If an unbeliever invites you to dinner and you accept his invitation, you may eat whatever is served before you without raising questions of religious scruples. 28 But if your host tells you that the meat has been offered in sacrifice to a pagan divinity, then you must refuse to eat it out of regard for your host, 29 and for his religious scruples rather than yours in this case. But as a rule there is no reason whatever why my liberty should be subject to the religious scruples of an unbeliever. 30 I cannot eat such food and give thanks to God for it. Because it would be a blasphemy to say grace over the sacrificial meat of an idol.

31 Whether you are eating, or drinking, or doing anything else, do everything for the glory of God. 32 Give no offence to Jew, or to Gentile, or to the Church of God. 33 This is my own rule, to satisfy all alike and to aim, not at my own advantage, but at the general welfare and salvation.

CHAPTER 11

MEN AND WOMEN

1 Follow my example, as I follow the example of Christ. 2 Brethren, I appreciate your constant memory of me and your loyalty to the traditions which I have handed on to you. 3 I want you to know that Christ is the leader of every man, that the husband is the leader of his wife, and that God is the leader of Christ.

4 Every man who keeps his head covered when he prays
or prophesies is disgracing himself. 5 On the other hand, every
woman is disgracing herself, if she prays or prophesies with
her head unveiled. For it is just as though her head were shaved.

6 If a woman is not veiled, she might as well shave her
hair also. But if it is a disgrace for a woman to have her hair
cut off or shaved, then she must wear a veil.

7 A man has no need to veil his head, because he is the
image and the glory of God, whereas the wife is the glory of
her husband. 8 For God has created woman from man, not
man from woman. 9 He did not create man for woman, but
woman for man. 10 For this reason a woman must wear a veil
on her head, to symbolize her subjection out of respect to the
angels.

11 Nevertheless, in the Lord neither woman is independent
of man, nor man is independent of woman. 12 For as woman
was created from man originally, so now man is born of woman.
But everything comes from God.

13 Judge for yourselves whether it is proper for a woman
to pray to God with uncovered head. 14 Nature itself teaches
you that it is a disgrace for a man to wear long hair. 15 On
the contrary, long hair is an added grace to a woman, because
long hair has been given to her to take the place of a veil.
16 Those who argue the matter must know that we recognize
no other practice in any of the Churches of God.

HOLY EUCHARIST

17 By the way, I cannot approve of your meetings, because
they are doing you more harm than good. 18 In the first place,
when you meet in Church, I understand that you are divided
into sects, and in a measure I believe it. 19 There must be
factions among you, for that will help you to recognize those
who are genuine among you.

20 When you meet together, you do not seem to eat the
Lord's Supper. 21 For each one of you goes ahead with his own
meal, so that some go hungry, while others are drunk. 22 Have
you no houses to eat and drink in? Or do you mean to show your
contempt to the Church of God and shame the poor? What can
I say to you? Can I approve your conduct? I certainly cannot.

23 For I received from the Lord the tradition which I
handed on to you: Our Lord Jesus, on the night he was betrayed,
took bread, 24 gave thanks, broke it, and said: "Take, eat, this

is my Body, which is broken for you. Celebrate this sacrament in my commemoration."

25 Likewise, at the end of the Supper, he took the Cup and said: "This Cup is the New Covenant, ratified with my blood. Celebrate this sacrament, and drink of it in my commemoration."

26 For every time you eat this Bread and drink this Cup, you proclaim the death of the Lord until his second coming. 27 Consequently everyone who eats this Bread or drinks this Cup of the Lord unworthily commits a sin against the Body and the Blood of the Lord.

28 Therefore every man must examine his conscience before he eats this Bread and drinks this Cup. 29 Everyone who partakes of them unworthily commits a transgression, because he does not pay due respect to the Body of Christ.

30 This is why there are so many sick and ill among you, while a good many others have died. 31 If we examined our conscience, we would not commit this transgression. 32 But whenever we do commit it, we are punished by the Lord. Thus we will not be condemned along with the unbelievers.

33 Therefore, brethren, when you assemble for a common meal, wait for one another. 34 If anyone is hungry, let him eat at home and avoid condemnation for disturbing your meeting. When I come to you, I will give you directions about the other questions.

CHAPTER 12

SPIRITUAL GIFTS

1 Brethren, I do not wish you to be ignorant about spiritual gifts. 2 As you remember, when you were still pagans, you allowed yourselves blindly to be misled by worshiping dumb idols.

3 Therefore I want you to understand that no one who is inspired by the Holy Spirit can say: "Anathema to Jesus." On the other hand, no one can say: "Jesus is the Lord," unless he is inspired by the Holy Spirit.

4 There are different kinds of gifts. But it is the same Holy Spirit who gives them. 5 There are different kinds of services, but it is the same Lord we serve. 6 There are different manifestations, but it is the same God who manifests his power everywhere in all of us. 7 Each man receives from the Holy Spirit a gift for the common good. 8 The gifts we receive from the Holy Spirit are the following: the gift of wisdom; the gift

of knowledge; 9 the gift of faith; the gift of healing; 10 the gift of working miracles; the gift of prophecy; the gift of interpreting prophecies; the gift of speaking oracular languages; and the gift of interpreting oracular speech. 11 All these gifts are operated by the same Holy Spirit who distributes them to each man according to his will.

THE MYSTICAL BODY OF CHRIST

12 The body is one. Yet it has many organs. All the organs, though many, form a single body. So it is with the body of Christ. 13 For we also have been baptized into a single body through the power of a single Spirit. Jews and Gentiles, slaves and free men, we have all been imbued with a single Spirit. 14 Because the body does not consist of one organ but of many.

15 If the foot should say, "I am not the hand, therefore I am not a part of the body," that would not make it less a part of the body. 16 If the ear should say, "I am not the eye, therefore I am not a part of the body," that would not make it any less a part of the body.

17 If the entire body were an eye, there would be no hearing. If the entire body were an ear, there would be no sense of smell.

18 God has arranged each and all the organs in the body as he wished them to be. 19 For if the entire system were a single organ, there would be no body. 20 As it is, there are many organs, yet one body.

21 The eye cannot say to the hand, "I do not need you," nor the hand to the feet, "I do not need you."

22 On the contrary, the organs of the body which seem to be inferior, are indispensable. 23 The organs of the body which we consider less honorable, are surrounded with special honor. Thus our unpresentable organs are treated with a modesty, 24 which our presentable organs do not require. But God established a harmony in the body and gave the greater honor to the inferior organs which need it.

25 Thus there is unity. For all the organs have the same care for one another. 26 If one organ suffers, all the other organs suffer with it. If one organ is treated with honor, all the other organs rejoice with it.

27 You are the body of Christ collectively, and you are members of his body individually. 28 Now God has ordained first Apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly preachers, then wonder-

workers, healers, helpers, administrators, and oracular speakers.

29 Of course, everyone is not an Apostle, a prophet, a preacher, or a wonder-worker. 30 Everyone is not a healer, an oracular speaker, or an interpreter of oracles. 31 Yet everyone should covet the highest gifts of heaven. I will show you which one is the noblest of them all.

CHAPTER 13

LOVE

1 I may speak all the languages of men and of angels. Yet if I have no love, I am only a booming trumpet or a tinkling cymbal.

2 I may possess prophetic inspiration. I may understand all mysteries. I may know all sciences. I may have such perfect faith that I can move mountains. Yet if I have no love, I am nothing at all.

3 I may give away all my possessions. I may deliver my body to be burned. Yet if I have no love, I gain absolutely nothing.

4 Love is long-suffering and gentle. Love is not envious, boastful, and arrogant. 5 Love is not rude, selfish, irritable, and resentful. 6 Love does not take pleasure in wrong-doing, but rejoices at the victory of truth. 7 Love always bears, always believes, always hopes, and always endures.

8 Love will never die out. But the time will come when prophecies will be abolished, when speaking in oracular languages will cease, when mystical knowledge will be swept away. 9 For our mystical knowledge and our prophecies are imperfect glimpses of the truth. 10 They will be swept away when perfect truth will be revealed.

11 When I was a child, I spoke like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I gave up childish ways.

12 Now we see dimly in a mirror. Then we shall see face to face. Now I have only glimpses of knowledge. Then I will understand God fully as he understands me. 13 In the meantime, faith, hope, and love remain with us. These are the three great virtues. But the greatest of them all is love.

CHAPTER 14

ORACLES AND PROPHECY

1 Cultivate love, and try to acquire all spiritual gifts,
especially that of prophecy. 2 Everyone who speaks in an
oracular language is not speaking to men but to God. No one
understands him, because he utters spiritual mysteries.

3 But everyone who prophesies is speaking to men for
their edification, encouragement, and consolation. 4 Everyone
who speaks in an oracular language, is edifying himself. But
everyone who prophesies is edifying the Church.

5 I want you all to speak in oracular languages, but even
more to prophesy. For the man who prophesies renders a greater
service than the man who speaks in an oracular language, unless
someone interprets his oracles for the edification of the Church.

6 I cannot help you, if I come and preach to you in a
strange language. I can benefit you only if I give you an
intelligible revelation, or lecture, or prophecy, or doctrine. 7 Even
inanimate instruments, like the flute and the harp, must produce
distinct and connected notes. Otherwise, nobody will understand
what melody they are playing.

8 If the bugle sounds an unknown call, no soldier will
prepare for battle. 9 So if you preach in an oracular language,
no one will understand what you mean. You will be talking into
the air.

10 For instance, there are many different languages in the
world. All of them are intelligible to those who know them.
11 But when I do not understand the language of the preacher,
I am a foreigner to him, and he is a foreigner to me. 12 So
if you are ambitious for spiritual activities, strive to excel in
them by building up the Church intelligently.

13 Therefore everyone who preaches in an oracular language
should pray for the power to explain what he says. 14 If I
pray in an oracular language, I may pray spiritually, but not
intelligently. 15 Then what should I do? I must pray both
spiritually and intelligently. I must sing both spiritually and
intelligently.

16 For if you utter spiritual blessings in an oracular
language, you cannot expect an ordinary man to say "Amen"
to your thanksgiving, because he does not understand what
you say. 17 Your thanksgiving may be perfect, but your brother
is not edified at all.

18 I am thankful to God that I have a greater gift of speaking in oracular languages than any of you. 19 Nevertheless, in the Church I would rather preach a sermon of five intelligible words for your instruction than a sermon of ten thousand words in a strange language which nobody understands.

20 Brethren, you must not be mentally childish. Be babies in evil, but be mentally mature. 21 The Scripture says: "I will speak to these people in strange tongues and foreign languages. But even then they will not listen to me, says the Lord."

22 Thus oracular language is a miracle to unbelievers rather than to believers, while prophecy is a miracle to believers rather than to unbelievers. 23 For instance, if outsiders or unbelievers attend a general meeting of the Church when all speak in oracular language, they will think that you are crazy.

24 But if an unbeliever or an outsider attends a meeting when all prophesy, he will be reproached by all, he will be called to account by all. 25 The secrets of his heart will be disclosed. So he will fall on his face, he will worship God, and proclaim that God is really among you.

ORDER

26 Brethren, when you meet together and each one of you has either a psalm, or a lecture, or an oracular message, or a revelation, or an interpretation, remember that everything must be done for your edification.

27 For instance, let only two, or at most three, preach in oracular languages, each one of them in turn, and let someone interpret what they say. 28 If there is no interpreter, no oracular preachers should be allowed to speak in Church. Let them speak to themselves and to God in silence.

29 Likewise, only two or three prophets should be allowed to prophesy. Let the others listen to their prophecies. 30 If a prophet sitting in the audience wants to make a revelation, he must wait until the preceding prophet is through.

31 There is room for everyone of you to prophesy one by one. In this way all the congregation receives instruction and consolation. 32 It is the duty of spiritual prophets to observe the rules of order. 33 For God is not a God of disorder, but of peace. These are the rules in all the Churches.

34 Women must be silent in the Churches. They must not talk. They must obey the rules laid down by the Scriptures.

35 If they have any questions, let them ask their husbands at home. For it is disgraceful for women to speak in church.

36 You are not the originators of the divine Gospel, and you are not the only ones who have received it. 37 Anyone among you who is a prophet or spiritual leader must know that these are the commandments of the Lord. 38 Those who disregard them should be disregarded.

39 Therefore, brethren, cultivate with zeal the gift of prophecy, and do not interfere with oracular sermons. 40 But everything must be done in a decent and orderly fashion.

CHAPTER 15

THE RESURRECTION

1 Brethren, I want to remind you of the Gospel I preached to you. You received it. You stand in it. 2 You will be saved by it. But you must hold on, if you really believe in it.

3 In the first place, I handed on to you the doctrines which were handed on to me: According to the Scriptures, Christ has died for our sins, 4 and was buried. As the Scriptures had foretold, he rose from the dead on the third day. 5 Then he appeared to Peter and to the twelve Apostles.

6 Later on, he appeared to more than five hundred brethren at one time, most of whom are still alive, though some of them have gone to their rest. 7 Then he appeared to James, then to all the Apostles.

8 Last of all, he appeared also to me, as to an abortive man. 9 For I am the least of all the Apostles, or rather I am unfit to be called an Apostle, since there was a time when I persecuted the Church of God. 10 Only by the grace of God I have become what I am. But his grace was not in vain. For I have worked harder than any of them. Rather it was not I, but the grace of God working through me. 11 Whether it was I or they who did the work, these are the doctrines which I preach and which you believe.

EMPTY FAITH

12 If we preach that Christ has risen from the dead, how can some of you claim that there is no resurrection of the dead? 13 If there is no resurrection of the dead, then Christ has not risen from the dead either.

14 If Christ has not risen from the dead, our Gospel is

empty, and our faith is empty also. 15 Moreover, that means that we have given false testimony about God. For we testified that God raised Christ from the dead, which he has not done, if there is no resurrection from the dead.

16 If the dead do not rise again, then Christ has not risen either. 17 If Christ has not risen from the dead, then your faith is futile, and you are back under the control of your sins. 18 Then also those who have gone to their rest in Christ have perished. 19 Indeed, if we hope in Christ only for our earthly life, we are the most miserable of all men.

THE PIONEER OF RESURRECTION

20 As a matter of fact, Jesus rose from the dead and will lead to resurrection all those who have fallen asleep. 21 For as death came to the world through a man, so the resurrection of the dead has come through a man also. 22 As all physical descendants of Adam die, so also all spiritual followers of Christ will be raised to life again.

23 The resurrection will take place in the following order: After Christ, the pioneer of resurrection, his followers will rise at his second manifestation. 24 The end will come when Jesus hands over the Kingdom to God the Father after destroying every rule, authority, and power of the enemy. 25 For he must reign until he has subjected all his opponents under his feet. 26 The last enemy to be destroyed will be death.

27 According to the Scriptures, "God has subjected everything under his feet." It is plain that God, who has subjected everything under his feet, is the only one excepted from this subjection. 28 When everything has been subjected to the Son, then the Son himself will hand over the dominion of the universe to God the Father, the source of all his power. Then God will be everything to everyone.

A FUNDAMENTAL DOCTRINE

29 Now there is no sense in being baptized on behalf of the dead, if the dead do not rise again. Why should anyone be baptized on their behalf? 30 And why do I face peril every hour? 31 For I swear by my pride to you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that I am at the door of death every day.

32 If I have engaged in a wild beast fight at Ephesus for human motives only, what has been my benefit? If there is no

resurrection of the dead, let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.

33 Do not be deceived. Bad company can corrupt noble minds. 34 Come back to your right mind, and do not sin any more. For I must tell you to your shame that some of you are utterly ignorant of God.

QUESTIONS ANSWERED

35 But someone may ask: "How can the dead rise again? With what kind of body do they come back?"

36 You foolish man! What you sow does not come to life, unless it dies first. 37 And what you sow is not the coming body, but a mere kernel, say of wheat or some other grain. 38 God gives it a body as he pleases, and he endows each seed with a body of its own.

39 All flesh is not alike. Men have one kind; animals, another; birds, another; and fish, another.

40 There are heavenly bodies, and there are earthly bodies. But the glory of the heavenly bodies is of one kind, and the glory of the earthly bodies is of another. 41 The sun has one kind of splendor; the moon, another; and the stars another. For one star differs from another in splendor.

42 It is so with the resurrection of the dead. Buried men are perishable. Raised men are imperishable. 43 They are buried in humiliation. They are raised in glory. 44 They are buried as human flesh. They are raised by divine power. They are buried as physical bodies. They are raised as spiritual bodies. For if there is a physical body, there is also a spiritual body. 45 This is what the Scripture tells us also: "The first man Adam became a living being." The new man Adam became a life-giving spirit.

THE HEAVENLY MAN

46 It is not the spiritual man, but the physical man who came first. Then followed the spiritual man. 47 Adam, the first man, originated from the earth as a man of dust. Jesus, the second man, originated from heaven. 48 Earthly men are like Adam, men of the dust. Heavenly men are like Jesus, the man from heaven. 49 Now as we have been the image of Adam, the earthly man, so we shall also become the image of Jesus, the heavenly man.

50 Therefore, brethren, I must tell you again that earthly flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God. For the perishable cannot inherit the imperishable.

TRIUMPH OVER DEATH

51 Listen! I will reveal to you a mystery. We shall not all fall asleep. But we shall all be transformed. 52 This transformation will take place in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the sound of the last trumpet. Yes, the trumpet will sound. The dead will rise imperishable, for we shall be transformed. 53 Our perishable nature will assume an imperishable form. Our mortal nature will assume immortality.

54 When this transformation has taken place, then the prophecy of the Scriptures will be fulfilled: "Death has been crushed by victory." 55 O death, where is your sting? O Hades, where is your victory? 56 Now the sting of death comes from sin. And the power of sin comes from the Law of Moses. 57 But give thanks to God. He granted us victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore, my dear brethren, be steadfast and unshakable. Always fulfill abundantly your obligations in the service of the Lord, because you know that your labors in his service will not be in vain.

CHAPTER 16

THE COLLECTION

1 Now concerning the collection for the saints, follow the plan which I have prescribed for the Churches of Galatia. 2 On the first day of the week, each one of you should put aside whatever he can spare and save it up. No collection should be made at the time of my visit. 3 When I arrive, I will send your accredited delegates to carry your gift to Jerusalem. 4 If you think that I should go also, I will accompany your delegates.

MISSIONARY PLANS

5 I will visit you after I have traversed Macedonia, through which I am now passing. 6 I may stay some time with you, perhaps until the winter is over. Then you may see me off on my journey wherever I may be going.

7 I do not want to pay you a mere passing visit now.

I hope to spend some time with you, if the Lord permits. 8 I will spend Pentecost in Ephesus, 9 where I must work very hard, because I have many opponents.

10 When Timothy comes, be sure to make him feel at home among you. For he is working in the service of the Lord as well as I am. 11 Let no one disparage him. When he leaves to rejoin me, speed him cordially on his journey, for I am expecting him along with the other brethren.

12 As for our brother Apollos, I urged him strongly to visit you with the brethren. For the present it was not the will of God that he should come to you. But he will come as soon as he has an opportunity.

FINAL INSTRUCTIONS

13 Brethren, watch, stand firm in the faith, act like men, be strong. 14 Do everything with charity.

15 Now I appeal to you, brethren: You know that the household of Stephanas and of Fortunatus are the first converts of Achaia, and they have devoted themselves to the service of the saints. 16 You must obey such men, and every fellow worker and laborer. 17 I am glad that Stephanas, Fortunatus, and Achaicus have arrived. Because they have remedied your deficiencies. 18 They have brought relief to my mind as well as to yours. You must appreciate such men.

GREETINGS

19 The Churches of Asia send you their greetings. Aquila and Prisca, along with the Church in their house, send you hearty greetings in the Lord. 20 All the brethren send you their greetings. Greet one another with a sacred kiss.

21 I, Paul, send you my greetings in my own handwriting. 22 Whoever has no love for our Lord Jesus, let him be accursed.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

24 My love be with you all in Jesus Christ. Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 I, Paul, Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and
Timothy our brother,
To the Church of God in Corinth and to all the saints in
all Achaia:
2 Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our
Lord Jesus Christ.

CONSOLATION IN AFFLICTIONS

3 Blessed be God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the
Father of mercies and God of all consolation, 4 who consoles
us in all our afflictions, and enables us to console all the afflicted
with the consolation we have received from God.
5 For as the sufferings of Christ are abundant in our
lives, so through Christ our consolation is also abundant.
6 Consequently, if we are afflicted, it is for your consolation and
salvation, which is worked out in the patient endurance of the
same sufferings which we also endure. If we are consoled, it
is for your consolation and salvation. 7 So our hope for you is
firm, since we know that, as you share in our sufferings, you
will also share in our consolation.

DELIVERANCE

8 Brethren, I do not want you to be ignorant of the affliction
I experienced in Asia. For I was so utterly and unendurably
crushed that I actually despaired of life itself. 9 Indeed, I felt
in my heart that I had been sentenced to death. Then I learned
that I should not rely on myself, but on God, who can raise the
dead. 10 He delivered me from that deadly peril then. He delivers
me now. And I hope that he will deliver me again in the future.
11 But you must also help us with your prayers. Thus

many thanks will be given on our behalf for a blessing bestowed upon us in answer to many supplications.

SINCERITY

12 My boast is the testimony of my conscience that my relations with other men and especially with you have been marked by divine purity and sincerity, not by worldly shrewdness, but by divine grace.

13 For what I am writing to you is only what you can read and understand. I hope that you will be fully persuaded, 14 as you are already in some measure. Thus you can be proud of me, as I can be of you in the day of our Lord Jesus.

HIS DELAY

15 With this confidence in you, I intended to give you a double pleasure: 16 I was going to visit you first on my way to Macedonia, then from Macedonia to come back to you and have you see me off for Judea.

17 This was my intention, although I failed to carry it out. Did I prove to be fickle? Did I make my plan in worldly fashion, meaning at the same time "yes" as well as "no"?

18 By the good faith of God, my promise to you did not mean "yes" and "no" at the same time. 19 For Jesus Christ, the Son of God, whom Silvanus, Timothy, and I preached among you, did not waver between "yes" and "no." He meant always "yes." 20 For all the promises of God find their "yes" and their "Amen" in him to the glory of God through us.

21 God himself confirmed me with you in Christ. He has anointed me. 22 He has put his seal on me. He has given me the pledge of the Holy Spirit in my heart.

23 Upon my soul I call God to witness that I did not come to Corinth, because I wanted to spare you, 24 not because I domineer over your faith. Rather I am helping you to achieve happiness, for you are standing firm in your faith.

CHAPTER 2

LOVE

1 I made up my mind not to pay you another painful visit. 2 For if I cause you pain, then no one will be left to make me glad. 3 I wrote you as I did, so that, when I come, I would not

be pained by those who should make me rejoice. I felt sure that my joy would be the joy of you all. 4 For I wrote you with much affliction, with anguish of heart, and with many tears, not to cause you pain, but to show you the abundant love I feel for you.

FORGIVENESS

5 Now if anyone caused me pain, he has not caused it to me, but in some measure to you all. So I must not be too hard on you. 6 For such a man this punishment by the majority is sufficient. 7 Therefore you should rather forgive him and comfort him. Otherwise, he will be overwhelmed by his remorse. 8 So I entreat you to reaffirm your love for him.

9 This is why I wrote you, that I might test you and find out whether you are obedient in everything. 10 I am ready to forgive anyone whom you forgive. I have already forgiven him for your sake in the presence of Christ, 11 to prevent Satan from gaining the advantage over us. For we all know his designs.

THANKSGIVING

12 When I went to Troas, I had a good opportunity to preach the Gospel of the Lord there. 13 But my mind could not rest, because I did not find there my brother Titus. So I took leave of them and went on to Macedonia.

14 But I am thankful to God. He always leads me to triumph in the name of Christ, and through me spreads the fragrance of his knowledge all over the earth. 15 For we are the perfume of Christ before God among those who are saved as well as those who are perishing. 16 To some it is a fragrance from death to death, and to others a fragrance from life to life. Who is sufficiently qualified for this work? I am. 17 For I am not a peddler of the divine message like so many others. I preach the Gospel of Christ before God in all sincerity like a man ordained by God.

CHAPTER 3

LETTERS OF RECOMMENDATION

1 I am trying to recommend myself again. Yet I do not need any letters of recommendation to you or from you. 2 You yourselves are my open letter of recommendation, inscribed in our minds, known and read by all men. 3 You are manifestly

my letter of recommendation from Christ which I have been commissioned to promulgate. This letter is written, not with ink, but with the Holy Spirit of the living God. This letter is engraved, not on tablets of stone, but on tablets of flesh, in our hearts.

4 I have complete confidence in God through Christ. 5 I do not mean that I am qualified of myself to claim anything as originating with me. My qualification comes from God. 6 He has qualified me as an Apostle of the New Testament, not in the letter, but in the Spirit. For the letter kills, while the Spirit gives life.

THE NEW RELIGION

7 Now the old religion of death was written in letters and carved in stone. It was ushered in with such splendor that the sons of Israel could not look at the face of Moses because of its ephemeral brightness. 8 But the religion of the Spirit will be attended with much greater splendor.

9 Certainly, the religion of righteousness will surpass in splendor the religion of condemnation. 10 Indeed, the splendor of the old religion faded away before the extraordinary splendor of the new religion. 11 Of course, the permanent religion must have more splendor than the temporary one.

THE GLORY OF THE LORD

12 Since we have such a hope, we speak with great frankness, 13 not like Moses, who put a veil over his face. He did it to prevent the Israelites from seeing the end of the old order which was passing away. 14 But their minds were blinded. For to this day, when they read the old covenant, that same veil remains unlifted. It will be taken away only through Christ. 15 Yes, to this day, when the Law of Moses is read, a veil hangs over their minds. 16 But whenever they return to the Lord, the veil will be removed.

17 Now the Lord is the Spirit, and there is freedom wherever the Spirit of the Lord is dwelling. 18 With unveiled faces we all behold the glory of the Lord. We are transfigured into his likeness from one degree of glory to another, as the Spirit of the Lord enables us.

CHAPTER 4

PAUL'S PERSEVERANCE

1 Since I have this ministry, I never lose heart. 2 I repudiate disgraceful and underhanded ways. I do not act deceitfully. I do not adulterate the divine message, but I proclaim the truth and commend myself to every human conscience in the sight of God.

3 My Gospel may sound obscure to those who are perishing. 4 The minds of unbelievers have been blinded by the god whom this world is worshiping. Therefore the glorious Gospel of Christ who is the image of the invisible God cannot reach them and illuminate them.

5 After all, I do not proclaim myself, but Jesus Christ as Lord, and myself as your servant in Jesus. 6 For God who commanded light to shine out of darkness illuminated my heart and revealed to me the divine glory in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 I have this treasure in an earthen vessel, to show that the sovereign power belongs to God and not to me. 8 I am always afflicted, but never crushed. I am perplexed, but not disheartened. 9 I am persecuted, but not forsaken. I am struck down, but not annihilated.

10 I am always carrying in my body the death of Jesus. Therefore the life of Jesus will be manifested in my body also. 11 For while I live, I am given up to death for the sake of Jesus. Thus the life of Jesus will be manifested in my body also. 12 So death is operating in me, and life in you.

13 I have the same spirit of faith as he who says in the Scripture: "I believed, and so I spoke." I also believe, and so I speak. 14 I know that God who raised the Lord Jesus from the dead will raise me also through Jesus and bring me with you into his presence.

15 It is all for your benefit. Thus, as divine grace reaches more and more people, more and more thanksgiving is offered to the glory of God.

16 I never lose heart. For though my outer flesh is wasting away, my inner spirit is renewed every day.

17 Thus this slight and momentary affliction is building up for me an eternal glory beyond all comparison. 18 I am not looking for the visible, but for the invisible. Because the visible is temporary, whereas the invisible is eternal.

CHAPTER 5

OUR ETERNAL HOME

1 When our earthly tent home is torn down, we know that
an eternal home, built by God and not by man, is waiting for
us in heaven. 2 We groan in our present home, because we long
to move to our heavenly home, 3 which will give shelter to the
unsheltered.

4 Yes, we tent-dwellers are now moaning and heavy-hearted,
because we do not wish to be further stripped. On the contrary,
we wish to be better clothed. Then our mortal flesh will be
imbued with life. 5 God has been preparing us for this
transformation when he gave us the Holy Spirit as a guarantee.

6 Therefore we must always keep up our courage. We must
know that while we live in the flesh, we are exiled from the
presence of the Lord. 7 So we have to guide our steps, not by
physical sight, but by spiritual faith.

8 Yes, we must always keep up our courage. We must
prefer to be exiled from the flesh and live in heaven with the
Lord. 9 For this reason, whether on earth or in heaven, we are
eager to please him. 10 For we must all appear before the
tribunal of Christ, from whom each one will receive the reward
or the punishment for the good or evil he has done in his life.

11 Therefore, with the fear of the Lord in my mind, I try
to convert men by persuasion. I am well known to God, and
I hope that I am also well known to your better judgment.

12 I am not recommending myself to you again. I am only
giving you an opportunity to be proud of me before those who
pride themselves on outward appearance and not on sincerity
of heart.

13 If I am extravagant, it is for God. If I am rational, it
is for you. 14 But the love of Christ controls me. For I am
convinced that if he has died for all, then we all have died for
him also. 15 He died for all to enable men to live no longer for
themselves, but for Christ who died and rose from the dead for
their sake.

16 Therefore from now on I consider no one of you as a
mere man of the old flesh. True, I once considered Christ as a
man of that type. But I consider him no longer in that fashion.
17 For everyone who is united with Christ has become a new
man. His old flesh has passed away. Now everything about him
is new.

18 This total transformation comes from God, who reconciled me to himself through Christ, and conferred on me the mission of this reconciliation. 19 Yes, God reconciled all mankind to himself through Christ overlooking their trespasses, and entrusted me with the Gospel of this reconciliation.

AMBASSADOR OF CHRIST

20 I am now an ambassador of Christ. Now God himself appeals to you through me. I beseech you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled to God. 21 For our sake he made Christ who knew no sin appear in the form of a sinful man. Thus we have been enabled to be justified before God through Christ.

CHAPTER 6

UPS AND DOWNS

1 As a fellow worker of God, I entreat you not to receive the grace of God in vain. 2 For he says in the Scripture: "I have listened to you at the proper time, and helped you on the day of salvation." Now this is the proper time. This is the day of salvation.

3 I put no obstacle in anyone's path. Thus my Apostleship will be blameless. 4 I show myself as an Apostle of God in every respect; in great endurance; in afflictions; in disturbances; in distress; 5 in stripes; in prisons; in riots; in labors; in vigils; in fastings; 6 in charity; in knowledge; in long-suffering; in gentleness; in the Holy Spirit; in unfeigned love. 7 I am preaching the true doctrine through the power of God; through the armor of righteousness on the right hand and on the left; 8 through honor and disgrace; through defamation and glorification. I am called an impostor, though I tell the truth. 9 I am ignored, though I am well known. I am dying, though I am alive. I am tortured, though I am not yet killed. 10 I am sorrowful, though I am always rejoicing. I am poor, though I enrich many. I am possessing nothing, though I possess everything.

BELIEVERS AND UNBELIEVERS

11 Brother Corinthians, I have spoken freely to you. I have opened my heart to you. 12 You are not restricted by me, but you are restricted by your own sentiments. 13 Open your hearts to me. my children, as I open my heart to you.

14 Do not associate with unbelievers. There is no affiliation
between righteousness and iniquity. There is no fellowship
between light and darkness. 15 There is no agreement between
Christ and Belial. There is no partnership between a believer
and an unbeliever. 16 There is no intercommunion between the
temple of the living God and the house of idols. You are the
temple of the living God, as God himself proclaimed in the
Scripture: "I will dwell in them, I will move among them, I
will be their God, and they will be my people. 17 Therefore come
away from them, and separate yourselves from them, says the
Lord. Do not touch what is unclean, and I will welcome you.
18 I will be your father, and you will be my sons and my
daughters," says the Almighty Lord.

CHAPTER 7

AFFECTION

1 Therefore, since we have these promises, let us cleanse
ourselves from every defilement of the flesh and of the spirit,
in order to achieve sanctification in the fear of God.

2 Be patient with me. I have wronged no one, I have
corrupted no one, I have despoiled no one.

3 I am not criticizing you. For as I told you before, I love
you so much that I want to die with you and live with you.

4 I have full confidence in you. I take the greatest pride
in you. I am so deeply comforted by you that I am overflowing
with happiness in the midst of all my tribulations.

5 For since I came to Macedonia, my poor human nature
could find no rest at all. I had trouble on every side, wrangling
without and anxiety within. 6 But God who consoles the humble
comforted me with the arrival of Titus, 7 and not only by his
arrival, but also by the encouragement he derived from you.
He told me how you longed for me, how you grieved over me,
and how eagerly you took my part that I have rejoiced more
than ever.

REPENTANCE

8 I know that I have grieved you with my letter. But I do
not regret it now, though I did regret it before. For I see that
my letter grieved you only for a while. 9 As it is, I am glad
that your grief resulted in repentance. You felt a divine grief.
So you suffered no loss whatever through me.

10 Divine grief produces salvation and brings no regret.
But worldly grief produces death. 11 As you have seen, your
divine grief has produced earnestness, justification, indignation,
reverence, longing, zeal, and vindication. You have proved your-
selves innocent in the matter at every point.

12 So although I did write to you, it was not on account
of the offender, nor of the injured man, but for the revelation
of your zeal for me in the sight of God.

13 This is why I am so comforted. I was still more overjoyed
at the gladness of Titus. His mind has been set at rest by you
all. 14 So if I did express to him some pride in you, I have
had no reason to be ashamed of it. But as all I said to you
was true, so the pride I expressed to Titus proved to be true
also. 15 His affection for you is all the more unbounded. He
remembers how you all received him with obedience, reverence,
and respect. 16 I rejoice that I can trust you in every respect.

CHAPTER 8

COLLECTION

1 Brethren, I must tell you about the grace which God
has lavished upon the Churches of Macedonia. 2 For in spite
of their severe ordeal of affliction and their extreme poverty,
their abundance of enthusiasm has overflowed in a wealth of
liberality on their part.

3 I can assure you that they have given to the utmost of
their ability, and even beyond their means. 4 What is more, of
their own free will, they implored me earnestly to allow them
the privilege of taking part in the relief of the saints. 5 Their
gift went beyond our hopes. They even gave their services to
the Lord and then to me by the will of God.

6 Their initiative led us to urge Titus to complete the
charitable campaign he had started among you for the same
purpose. 7 Therefore, as you excel in everything, in faith, in
eloquence, in knowledge, in devotion of every kind, and in your
affection for me, see that you excel in this gracious work also.

8 I do not mean to give you a command. I only want to
test the genuineness of your charity by comparing it with the
fervor of others. 9 You know how gracious our Lord Jesus
Christ was. Though he was rich, he became poor for your sake,
in order to enrich you through his poverty. 10 I am only giving
you my advice. It is to your interest to go on with this enterprise

which you were the first to plan and to start as early as last year.

11 It remains for you now to complete your action. Your generous intention must be fulfilled by deeds in accordance with your means. 12 For if the will is there, your donation is acceptable according to what you can afford, not according to what you cannot afford.

13 I do not mean that others should be eased and you burdened. 14 No, there should be equality. Your abundance at the present time should supply their need. Then their abundance will in turn supply your need. Thus the balance will be restored. 15 For the Scripture says: "The man who had gathered much, had nothing left over, while the man who had gathered little, had no lack."

MISSION OF TITUS

16 I am thankful to God who inspired Titus with the same devotion to you. 17 He has accepted my appeal. But as a matter of fact, he was eager to visit you of his own choice.

18 With him I am sending the brother who has won the praise of all the Churches for his preaching of the Gospel. 19 Moreover, he has been also appointed by the Churches to be our companion in this gracious ministry of ours, to further the glory of the Lord and to show our good will.

20 We are anxious that no suspicion should be aroused against us with these great sums we are handling. 21 We intend to do what is right, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

22 Therefore I am sending along with the delegates our brother whom we have often tested and found eager in many ways and upon many occasions. Now he is more eager than ever because of his great confidence in you.

23 As for Titus, he is my partner and my fellow worker among you. As for the delegates, they are Apostles of the Churches, the glory of Christ. 24 Therefore give evidence to the Churches of your charity and of the good reason we have to be proud of you.

CHAPTER 9

PROMPTNESS

1 Now it is superfluous for me to write to you about the collection for the saints. 2 I know your eagerness of which I boast to the people of Macedonia. I always say that you from Achaia have been ready since last year, and your zeal has stimulated most of them.

3 Now I am sending the brethren. My boasting about you must not prove unfounded in this case. Therefore you must be ready, as I said you would be. 4 For if some Macedonians come with me and find you unprepared, both you and I will be humiliated for being so boastful.

5 So I thought it necessary to urge the brethren to visit you first, to arrange in advance for this offering you have promised. But it must be a free donation, not a grudging tribute.

GENEROSITY

6 Remember that everyone who has sown sparingly will also reap sparingly. And everyone who has sown generously will also reap generously. 7 Everyone must give whatever he has decided on, not reluctantly or under compulsion. For God loves a cheerful giver.

8 God has the power to supply you abundantly with every blessing. Thus you will always have enough for every situation, and you will be able to provide abundantly for every good work. 9 The Scripture says: "He scatters his gifts to the poor. His mercy endures forever."

THANKSGIVING

10 May God, who provides seed to the sower and bread for food, supply and multiply your resources and increase the harvest of your charity. 11 May he enrich you in every way for every act of generosity which will make us offer thanksgiving to God.

12 The administration of this service not only will supply the needs of the saints, but will also yield a rich harvest of thanksgiving to God.

13 This service will make men praise God for your spirit of obedience in proclaiming the Gospel of Christ, and for the generosity of your contribution for them and for all others.

14 Moreover, they will long for you and pray for you. 15 Thank God for his indescribable gift.

CHAPTER 10

HIS AUTHORITY

1 I make a personal appeal to you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ. I, Paul, who am humble when face to face with you, but bold to you when I am away, 2 I entreat you, do not force me to deal roughly with you when we meet, as I do with those who think that I am acting through worldly motives.

3 For though I live in this world, I do not carry on a worldly war. 4 The weapons of my warfare are not worldly. But they are so divinely powerful that they can destroy strongholds. 5 Yes, I can pull down the conceits of men and every barrier rising against the true knowledge of God. I can capture all minds to the obedience of Christ. 6 I am prepared to punish every disobedience, until your submission has become complete.

7 Look at what is before your eyes. Whoever boasts of being a follower of Christ, let him understand once and for all that I am also a follower of Christ, just as he is. 8 For even if I boast a little more about my authority, which the Lord gave me to build you up, not to pull you down, I shall not be put to shame.

9 Do not imagine that I am trying to scare you with my letters. 10 For some people say that my letters are weighty and powerful, while my physical appearance is insignificant, and my speeech is worthless. 11 Let those people understand that what I say by letter, when absent, I do by deed when present.

12 I do not dare to class or compare myself with some of those who advertise themselves. But when they measure themselves by one another, and when they compare themselves with one another, they do not show good sense.

HIS JURISDICTION

13 I will not boast extravagantly. I will boast only within the limits of the jurisdiction which God has assigned to me and which reaches all the way to you. 14 Nobody can claim that I am overstepping and that I have never extended my activities to your province. For it is a fact that I am the first to come all the way to you with the Gospel of Christ.

15 I am not unfairly boasting of other men's labors. Moreover, as your faith increases, I hope that our field of activity among you within my jurisdiction will be enlarged. 16 Then I will preach the Gospel in regions beyond yours, without boasting of ready-made conquests in a jurisdiction that belongs to another. 17 Whoever wants to boast, let him boast in the Lord. 18 It is not the self-commended man that becomes successful, but the man who is commended by the Lord.

CHAPTER 11

HERESY

1 I hope you will put up with my vanity for a little while. Do be patient with me. 2 I feel a divine jealousy on your behalf. I betrothed your Church as a chaste maiden to your one Bridegroom, our Lord Jesus Christ.

3 But I am afraid that your minds may be seduced and weaned away from a loyal devotion to him by the same subtle means which the serpent used with Eve. 4 For I understand that you have welcomed a newcomer who is preaching dissident doctrines about Jesus, about the Holy Spirit, and about the Gospel. These new doctrines are entirely different from the original doctrines which I have preached to you and which you have accepted from me.

5 Now let me tell you that I am in no way inferior to the twelve great Apostles. 6 Perhaps I am unskilled in preaching. But I am not wanting in knowledge. I have proved it to you on many occasions.

NO COMPENSATION

7 I hope I have not committed a sin when I humbled myself in order to uplift you and when I preached to you the Gospel of God without any compensation. 8 I impoverished other Churches which paid me in order to work for you. 9 I was penniless when I visited you. Yet I did not burden anyone of you. The brethren who came from Macedonia supplied my needs. So I always refrained, and will refrain from being a burden to you in any way.

10 By the truth of Christ which is in me, this boast of mine will not be checked in the regions of Achaia. 11 Why? Not because I do not love you. God knows that I do.

12 Indeed, I will go on doing what I do, in order to silence

those who claim that in their boasted apostleship they work on the same terms that I do. 13 Such men are false and deceitful apostles of Christ. 14 And no wonder, for even Satan himself masquerades as a shining angel. 15 So it is nothing strange that his servants also masquerade as servants of righteousness. But they will be punished at the end according to their wicked works.

16 I repeat, no one should think I am vain. But if you do, receive me in spite of my vanity, and let me boast a little in my turn. 17 When I assume this role of a boaster, I am not proclaiming the message of the Lord. I am only talking in a fit of vanity. 18 If so many others boast of their worldly advantages, I must be allowed to boast of them also.

19 You tolerate vain persons complacently in spite of your good sense. 20 You tolerate those who tyrannize over you, or prey upon you, or take advantage of you, or vaunt their power over you, or give you a slap in the face.

LABOR AND ORDEALS

21 I am sorry to say that I did not have the heart to take advantage of you. But if I were vain enough to brag, I could claim every title that they boast of. 22 If they are Hebrews, so am I. If they are Israelites, so am I. If they are descendants of Abraham, so am I. 23 If they are Apostles of Christ, well, I will let my vainglory run wild and tell you that so am I in a superlative degree. I have labored more arduously, I have been flogged more savagely, I have been imprisoned more frequently, I have faced death more constantly.

24 Five times I have been beaten by the Jews the prescribed thirty-nine stripes. 25 Three times I have been flogged by the Romans with rods. Once I have been stoned. Three times I have been shipwrecked. A night and a day I have been adrift on the sea.

26 In my journeys I have been in constant danger from rivers; danger from robbers; danger from my own nation; danger from the Gentiles; danger in the city; danger in the desert; danger on the sea; danger among false brethren.

27 I have been often in toil, in hardship, in sleeplessness, in famine, in thirst, in fasting, in exposure, and in destitution.

28 Over and above these physical tortures, I have to carry the burden and responsibility for all the Churches. 29 If one of them suffers, I suffer. If one of them falls away, I am burning.

30 So if I must boast, let me boast of my ordeals. 31 God,

the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, whose name is blessed forever, knows that I am telling the simple truth. 32 When I was at Damascus, the governor of King Aretas guarded the city gates in order to arrest me. 33 But I was lowered in a basket through a window in the wall, and escaped from his hands.

CHAPTER 12

VISIONS

1 Well, I have to boast, though there is nothing to be gained from it. So I must tell you of my visions and revelations of the Lord. 2 I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago was carried up into the third heaven. 3 Whether in the spirit or in the body, I do not know, God knows. 4 I only know that this man was carried into Paradise, and heard ineffable mysteries which man is not allowed to utter.

PHYSICAL ORDEAL

5 I am ready to boast of this man. But as for myself, I will boast only of my ordeals. 6 It would not be vanity if I chose to boast. For I would only be telling the simple truth. But I refrain from it, because I do not want anyone to think that I am more than he sees in me or hears from me.

7 And to keep me from being too proud of this wealth of revelations, a thorn in the flesh was given me to torture me like a henchman of Satan. 8 Three times I have prayed to the Lord to liberate me from this ordeal. 9 But he answered me: "My grace is sufficient for you. For my power is perfected through suffering." So more than ever I am glad to boast of my sufferings. For I am sure that Christ will give me the power to endure them.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in the sufferings, insults, hardships, persecutions, and ordeals I am enduring for the sake of Christ. For when I am suffering, then I am strong. 11 I am boasting like a vain man. But you forced me to do it. You should have commended me. For I have been in no way inferior to the leading Apostles, though I am worthless.

12 I have earned the marks of my apostleship among you with miracles, wonders, and mighty deeds. 13 You have been in no way inferior to the rest of the Churches, except that I myself did not burden you with my maintenance. Forgive me this wrong.

THIRD VISIT

14 Now for the third time I am ready to visit you. And I will not be a burden to you. I am not looking for your property but for yourselves. As you know, it is the parents who should save for their children, not the children for their parents. 15 For my part, I will gladly spend all I have and all I can for the sake of your souls. For the more I love you, the more I will be loved.

16 True, I did not burden you. Still some of you claim that I was crafty and that I captured you by guile. 17 But you know that I have not taken advantage of you through any of those whom I sent to you. 18 I requested Titus to visit you, and sent our brother with him. They did not take advantage of you. We all acted in the same spirit. We all followed the same course.

19 You may think that I am defending myself. I am only speaking in the sight of God and in the name of Christ, my dear friends. For I have done everything for the sake of your edification.

20 I am afraid that on my arrival I may not find you to be such as I wish, and that you may not find me to be such as you wish. There may be quarrels, jealousy, anger, selfishness, slander, gossip, conceit, and disorder among you. 21 When I come again, my God may humiliate me before you. I may have to mourn over many of the former sinners who have not repented of the impurity, fornication, and licentiousness which they have practiced.

CHAPTER 13

WARNING

1 This is the third time that I will visit you. Any charge must be sustained by two or three witnesses. 2 I warned the former sinners and all the others. Now I warn them again while absent, as I did when present on my second visit. When I come again, I will not spare them.

3 Now you demand proof that Christ really speaks through me. He is not weak, but powerful among you. 4 True, he was crucified and suffered in his human flesh. But he lives by the power of God. Likewise, we are suffering for him. But we shall live again with him by the power of God within us.

5 Examine yourselves to see whether you are still holding to your faith. Test yourselves. You must realize that Jesus

Christ is within you, unless indeed you fail to meet the test.
6 I hope you will find out that I have not failed to meet mine.

7 I pray to God to keep you from doing wrong, not because I wish to prove successful. I desire that you should do what is right, even though I may seem to have failed. 8 I cannot oppose the truth, I can only work for the truth.

9 I am glad when I am weak and you are strong. I always pray for your improvement. 10 Therefore I am warning you while absent. So when I come, I will not have to deal severely with you in the exercise of the authority which the Lord has given me for building up and not for tearing down.

FAREWELL

11 Now, brethren, farewell. Mend your ways, listen to my appeal, agree with one another, live in peace. Then the God of love and peace will be with you. 12 Greet one another with a sacred kiss. 13 All the saints send you their greetings.

14 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, the love of God the Father, and the communion of the Holy Spirit be with you all. Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE GALATIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, an Apostle, not from men nor through man, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father who raised him from the dead, 2 and all the brethren who are with me,

To the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace and peace to you from God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 For he gave himself up for our sins and delivered us from the present wicked world, according to the will of God our Father. 5 To him be glory forever and ever. Amen.

HERESY

6 I am amazed that you are so lightly turning away from God who called you to the grace of Christ and going over to another gospel. 7 As you well know, there is only one Gospel. But there are some people who are trying to mislead you, and want to distort the Gospel of Christ.

8 Even if I or an angel from heaven should proclaim to you a gospel other than that which I have preached to you, let him be accursed! 9 I said it before, and I repeat it now: Whoever proclaims to you a gospel other than that which I have preached to you, let him be accursed!

10 Am I now trying to win the favor of men, or of God? To be sure, I am not courting the good-will of men. If after all these years I were still seeking to please men, I should not be a servant of Christ.

DIVINE GOSPEL

11 Now, brethren, I want you to know that the Gospel which I have preached, is not of human origin. 12 I have not received it from a man, nor was I instructed in it by any human

teacher. I have received it through a revelation from Jesus Christ.

13 You have heard of my former way of life in Judaism. I have persecuted the Church of God violently and tried to destroy it. 14 I was proficient in Judaism beyond many of my own age and race. I was a fierce champion of the traditions handed down by my forefathers.

15 But God had set me apart before my birth and called me to his service through his grace. 16 He graciously revealed his Son to me and ordered me to preach his Gospel to the Gentiles. My first action then was not to confer with any human being. 17 I did not go up to Jerusalem to see those who had been Apostles before me. Instead, I went into Arabia, and I returned again to Damascus.

18 Three years later, I went up to Jerusalem to visit Peter, and stayed fifteen days with him. 19 But I saw none of the other Apostles except James, the brother of the Lord.

20 What I am writing to you in the presence of God is the plain truth.

21 After my conversion, I went to Syria and Cilicia. 22 I was still personally unknown to the Christian Churches of Judea. 23 They had only heard people say: "The man who once persecuted us is now preaching the faith he tried to destroy." 24 So they glorified God for what he had done through me.

CHAPTER 2

APOSTLE OF THE GENTILES

1 After fourteen years, I went up to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took Titus also with me. I made this journey in obedience to a revelation. 2 Privately, I communicated only to the leaders the Gospel which I was preaching to the Gentiles, to make sure that what I had done in the past or what I am now doing was not futile.

3 They did not insist that my companion Titus, who was a Gentile, should be circumcized. 4 They refused to gratify the false brethren who had sneaked in and who were spying on us. They were plotting to deprive us of the liberty we enjoy in Jesus Christ and to bring us back to the slavery of the Jewish ritual. 5 We did not submit to them for a moment. For we were resolved that the true principles of the Gospel should remain in your possession.

6 As to those who were regarded as the leaders, it does
not matter to me who or what they were. God makes no
distinction between man and man. These leaders contributed
nothing to my work. 7 They simply accepted the accomplished
facts: They saw plainly that I was the leader of the mission
among the Gentiles, as Peter was the leader of the mission
among the Jews. 8 God who had enabled Peter to become the
Apostle of the Jews had also enabled me to become the Apostle
of the Gentiles. 9 Therefore James, Peter, and John, who were
regarded as pillars of the Church, recognized the grace God
had given me. So they made an agreement with me and Barnabas
that we should be in charge of the work among the Gentiles,
while they should be in charge of the work among the Jews.
10 Only we were to remember the poor, which was the very
thing I had set myself to do.

PETER AND PAUL

11 But when Peter came to Antioch, I opposed him openly,
because he was condemned by his own conduct. 12 He had been
eating with the Gentiles, until we were visited by certain
delegates from James. After their arrival, he began to draw
back and hold aloof, as he was afraid of the supporters of
circumcision. 13 The other Jewish Christians followed his
example in concealing their real views. Even Barnabas himself
was carried away by their hypocrisy.

14 When I saw that they were not straightforward about
the truth of the Gospel, I said to Peter in front of them all:
"If you who are a Jew live like a Gentile, why do you force the
Gentiles to live like Jews? 15 We are Jews by birth, and we
are not descendants of sinful Gentiles. 16 Yet we found out
that man is justified, not by observances of the Law, but by
faith in Jesus Christ. Therefore we also believed in Jesus Christ,
in order to be justified by faith in Christ, and not by observances
of the Law. For no man can be justified by observances of
the Law."

17 When we seek justification in Christ, we admit that
we are sinners. But that does not mean that Christ is encourag-
ing sin. Certainly not, because we repent of our sins.

18 But when I reconstruct the Law which I have torn
down, then I prove to be an unrepentant sinner. 19 For my old
self died to the Law through the Law. Now I live a new life
in God. 20 I have been crucified with Christ. Now it is not my

old self, but Christ himself who lives in me. Yes, now I live a new life in the flesh, by faith in the Son of God who loved me and sacrificed himself for me.

21 I refuse to repudiate the grace of God. For if justification comes through the Law, then Christ has died in vain.

CHAPTER 3

THE GOSPEL AND THE LAW

1 You foolish Galatians! Who has bewitched you that you disobey the true doctrine, although Jesus Christ has been depicted nailed on the cross before your eyes?

2 Let me ask you only one question: Did you receive the Holy Spirit from the observance of the Law, or from the Gospel of faith? 3 How can you be so senseless? You have started with the Holy Spirit. Now you end with the delusions of the flesh! 4 Did you endure so many sufferings in vain? It looks as if it was indeed all in vain.

5 Yet you well know that God did not bestow upon you the Holy Spirit and the power to perform miracles through the observance of the Law, but through the Gospel of faith.

THE EXAMPLE OF ABRAHAM

6 Thus Abraham believed in God, and he was justified. 7 You see that the real descendants of Abraham are the children of his faith. 8 The Scripture foretold that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, and announced this good news in the old days to Abraham in this passage: "All the nations will be blessed in you." 9 Consequently, all men of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.

THE JEWISH LAW

10 All those who rely on the works of the Law, are under a curse. For the Scripture says: "Cursed be everyone who does not observe and does not carry out all the commandments contained in the Book of the Law."

11 It is evident that no one is justified before God by the observance of the Law. The Scripture says that the righteous man will find life by faith. 12 But the Law does not depend on faith. For it is written in the Scripture: "Whoever carries out the commandments of the Law will find life in them."

13 Christ redeemed us from the curse of the Law by
becoming a curse for us. For the Scripture says: "Cursed be
everyone who hangs on a tree." 14 Thus the blessing of Abraham
came upon the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, and thus we have
received the promise of the Holy Spirit through faith.

THE DIVINE PROMISE

15 Let me give you a human illustration: No one annuls
or adds to a man's testament, after it has been ratified. 16 Now
the promises were made to Abraham and to his offspring. The
Scripture does not say "to his descendants," in the plural, but
in the singular, "to his offspring," which means Christ.

17 This is what I mean: The Law, which came four
hundred and thirty years later, does not annul a covenant
previously ratified by God, and does not cancel his promise.
18 For if our inheritance depends on the Law, then it has nothing
to do with the promise. Yet it was as a promise that God
bestowed it upon Abraham.

THE CUSTODIAN

19 Then what about the Law? It was added to punish
trespassers, until the arrival of his offspring to whom it was
made, and it was ordained by angels through an intermediary.
20 Now an intermediary implies more than one, whereas God
is one.

21 Does this mean that the Law is contrary to the promises
of God? By no means. For if a life-giving law had been given,
then justification could be obtained through the Law. 22 But
the Scripture represents all mankind as being under the bondage
of sin. Therefore it is faith in Christ which will impart the
promised blessing to the believers.

23 Until faith came, we were kept in bondage to the Law,
waiting for the coming revelation of the faith. 24 Therefore
the Law was our custodian until Christ came and brought us
justification through faith. 25 Now that faith has come, we
are no longer under a custodian.

26 We are all sons of God through faith in Jesus Christ.
27 For all of you who have been baptized in Christ, have put
on Christ. 28 There is neither Jew nor Gentile, neither slave
nor freeman, neither male nor female, for you are all one in
Jesus Christ.

29 And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's offspring, and his heirs according to the divine promise.

CHAPTER 4

SONS OF GOD

1 I mean that the heir, as long as he is a minor, has no more liberty than one of the servants, although he is the owner of the whole estate. 2 He is under guardians and trustees until the date prescribed by his father.

3 Likewise, when we were minors, we were slaves to the worldly regulations. 4 But when the appointed time had arrived, God sent his Son, born of a woman under the Law, 5 to redeem those who lived under the Law, and enable us to become his sons by adoption. 6 To prove that you are his sons, God has sent into your hearts the Spirit of his Son to cry: "Abba, namely Father!" 7 Therefore you are no longer servants, but sons. Now, if you are sons, you are certainly heirs of God through Jesus Christ.

SLAVERY

8 Formerly, when you had no knowledge of God, you were the slaves of mythical divinities. 9 But now that you have recognized the true God, or rather have been recognized by him, how can you go back to those wretched and miserable hobgoblins? Do you want to become their slaves again? 10 I understand that you still observe certain pagan holidays, months, seasons, and years. 11 So I am afraid that the labor I spend on you was wasted.

APPEAL

12 I entreat you, brethren, stand by me, as I stood by you. I have no complaint against you. 13 As you know, I was a sick man when I preached the Gospel to you at first. 14 Yet, although my physical condition was a trial to you, you did not despise and reject me. On the contrary, you received me as a divine messenger, as Jesus Christ himself.

15 How gracious was your kindness then! I assure you, in those days, if it had been possible, you would have plucked out your eyes and given them to me. 16 Have I now become your enemy, because I told you the truth?

17 Others pretend to be your admirers, but not with honorable intentions. On the contrary, they want to isolate you and make you their own admirers. 18 I hope you will continue to be my honest and constant admirers, not only when I am present with you, 19 my children. For I am in travail with you again and I want you to be reborn in the image of Christ.

20 I wish I were with you now and could speak to you in a different tone. For I am utterly perplexed about you. 21 Tell me, how can you disregard the Law, under which you want to remain subject?

ISHMAEL AND ISAAC

22 The Scripture tells us that Abraham had two sons, one by a slave-girl and another by a free woman. 23 The child of the slave-girl was born in the ordinary course of nature. The child of the free woman was born in fulfillment of the divine promise.

24 Allegorically, these two women represent the two Testaments. 25 Hagar, the slave-mother, typifies the old Testament from Mount Sinai in Arabia, and corresponds to the earthly Jerusalem. For she is in slavery with her children.

26 Sarah, the free woman, typifies the New Testament and corresponds to the heavenly Jerusalem. She is the free mother of us all. 27 For the Scripture says: "Rejoice, O barren, desolate, and childless woman! You will have more children than the married woman with a husband."

28 Brethren, like Isaac, we are children, born in fulfillment of the promise. 29 But, as the natural son persecuted the spiritual son, so it is now. 30 Yet the Scripture says: "Cast out the slave-girl and her son. For the son of the slave-girl must not share the inheritance with the son of the free woman."

31 Brethren, we are not sons of the slave-girl, but sons of the free woman.

CHAPTER 5

NO DIVIDED ALLEGIANCE

1 Therefore stand firm in the freedom which Christ has bestowed upon us. Do not submit again to a yoke of slavery.

2 Listen! I, Paul, tell you that if you receive circumcision, Christ will be of no profit to you. 3 I warn again every man who receives circumcision that he is under obligation to observe the entire Law.

4 If you expect to be justified through the Law, you have
been severed from Christ, and you have fallen away from grace.
5 For we hope to receive justification by faith through the Holy
Spirit. 6 In Jesus Christ, neither circumcision nor uncircumcision
is of any value. What matters is faith which finds its expression
through charity.

THE SEDUCERS

7 You were making good progress until now. Who stopped
you from following the true doctrine? 8 This injunction does
not come from the Lord who called you to his service. 9 It
takes only a little yeast to leaven the whole dough. 10 I am
fully confident in the Lord that you will agree with me and
leave the disturbers of your peace, whoever they may be, to
bear the penalty for their misdeeds.

11 Brethren, I am persecuted because I do not preach the
need of circumcision. If I did, the preaching of the Cross would
no longer give offense. 12 May those who disturb you get out
of your Church once for all.

SPIRITUAL LIFE

13 Remember, brethren, that you were called to freedom.
Only do not use your freedom as an excuse for sensuality. But
serve one another through charity. 14 For the entire Law can be
summarized in one sentence: "Love your neighbor as yourself."

15 Now, if you bite and devour one another, look out.
Otherwise, you will destroy one another in the end. 16 So I say:
Live a spiritual life, and do not gratify the desires of the flesh.
17 For the desires of the flesh are contrary to the spirit, and
the desires of the spirit are contrary to the flesh. They are
mutually opposed, and do not allow you to do what you wish.
18 But, if you are led by the Holy Spirit, you are not subject
to the yoke of the flesh.

VICES

19 The vices of the flesh are well-known: Adultery, forni-
cation, impurity, licentiousness, 20 idolatry, sorcery, enmity,
strife, jealousy, anger, rivalry, dissensions, factions, 21 envy,
murder, drunkenness, revelry, and similar vices. I warn you,
as I told you before, that those who practice these vices will
not inherit the Kingdom of God.

VIRTUES

22 The virtues produced by the Holy Spirit are love, joy,
peace, patience, kindness, generosity, faith, 23 meekness, and
continence. The Law is not needed by men who practice these
virtues. 24 For the followers of Christ have crucified their flesh
with all its passions and cravings.

25 If we want to live by the Holy Spirit, let us be guided
by the Holy Spirit also. 26 We must not be vainglorious,
provocative, and envious.

CHAPTER 6

FRATERNAL ADMONITION

1 Brethren, if a man is detected in some trespass, as
disciples of the Holy Spirit, you must set him right in a spirit
of meekness. Remember that you may also fall into temptation.

2 Bear the burdens of one another. In that way you will
carry out the commandments of Christ. 3 For whoever imagines
that he is somebody in the Lord, when he is nobody, deceives
himself. 4 Every man must scrutinize his own work and must
boast only of what he has done himself, without any reference
to others. 5 For every man must bear his own load.

DO GOOD

6 Those who are instructed in the Gospel must give a share
of their goods to their teachers. 7 Do not be deceived. You
cannot cheat God. Every man will reap whatever he sows.
8 Everyone who sows temporal seed will reap perishable fruit.
Everyone who sows spiritual seed will reap eternal life through
the Holy Spirit.

9 We must never be weary of well-doing. For in due time
we shall reap our reward, if we do not get discouraged.
10 Therefore, whenever we have an opportunity, let us do good
to all men, and especially to those who belong to the household
of the faith.

RECAPITULATION

11 See in what large characters I am writing to you with
my own hand.

12 Remember that those who urge you to be circumcized

want to keep up appearances and avoid persecution for the Cross of Jesus. 13 They are preaching circumcision, but they are not observing the Law themselves. They want only to boast of your conversion.

14 But far be it from me to boast of anything except the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ by which the world is crucified to me, and I to the world. 15 For neither circumcision nor uncircumcision, but only a spiritual rebirth has any importance in Jesus Christ. 16 Peace and mercy be on those who follow this rule, for they are the true Israelites of God.

17 Henceforth let no one make trouble for me, for I already bear in my flesh the brandmarks of Jesus.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, my brethren. Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, the Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God,
To the faithful saints in Jesus Christ who dwell in Ephesus:
2 Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

DIVINE DISPENSATION

3 Blessed be God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly regions. 4 He has chosen us in Christ before the foundation of the world. He has enabled us in his love to become holy and blameless before him. 5 He has foreordained us in his gracious pleasure to become his adopted sons through Jesus Christ.

REDEMPTION

6 He has bestowed upon us his glorious grace through his beloved Son. 7 He has enabled us to obtain redemption and remission of sins through Christ, through his blood, and through the wealth of his grace, 8 which he showered upon us in all wisdom and insight. 9 He has revealed to us in his gracious pleasure the secret purpose of his design.

10 When the predestined time had come, he summed up in Christ everything in heaven and on earth. 11 It was our lot to be called to his service, as we were foreordained by the will of God. For he governs the universe in fulfillment of his design, 12 and wins praise for his glory through us, the first to believe in Christ. 13 You have heard the message of his true doctrine, the Gospel of our salvation. You have believed in him. You have been sealed with the promised gift of the Holy Spirit, 14 who is the guarantee of our inheritance. He will help us to acquire possession of it for his praise and glory.

15 For this reason, having heard of your faith in Jesus
Christ and your love for all the saints, 16 I never cease to offer
thanks on your behalf and remember you in my prayers. 17 May
the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, give you
a spirit of wisdom, revelation, and divine knowledge.

18 May he enlighten the eyes of your mind and make you
realize how great is the hope of his vocation, how rich is the
glorious inheritance of his saints, 19 and how immeasurable is
his power in us who believe in him. He has showed us his great
might, 20 when he raised Christ from the dead, and made him
sit at his right hand in heaven, 21 far above all principalities,
authorities, realms, and dominions, above every name that is
known, not only in the present world, but also in the world
to come.

22 He has put all the universe under his rule, and made
him the head of the Church, 23 which is his body, and represents
the fulness of him who fills everything everywhere.

CHAPTER 2

LIFE IN CHRIST

1 You were formerly dead through your trespasses and your
sins. 2 For once you lived according to the demon who is
supposed to reign in the air, and according to the evil spirit,
which is now worshiped by the sons of insubordination. 3 Once
we all were associated with them in the passions of our flesh.
We were obeying the orders of our bodies and our imaginations.
We were by birth children of wrath like the rest. 4 But God,
who is rich in mercy, out of his excessive love for us, 5 even
when we were dead in sins, gave us life through Christ and
saved us through his grace. 6 He raised us from the dead with
Jesus Christ and made us sit with him in heaven.

7 Thus he showed to the coming ages the immeasurable
wealth of his grace and kindness toward us in Jesus Christ.
8 You have been saved by grace through faith. It was not the
result of your actions, it was a gift from God. 9 It was not
achieved by anyone. So no one can boast of it. 10 We are his
work, created in Jesus, and pledged to good actions, which we
should perform as he has foreordained.

UNION OF JEW AND GENTILE

11 Now remember that you were formerly Gentiles in the flesh, called the uncircumcized by those who had received circumcision by human hands. 12 At that time you were separated from Christ, excluded from the commonwealth of Israel, and deprived of the covenant promise. You had no hope and no God.

13 But now, in the name of Jesus Christ, you who were far off have been brought near to us within the fold through the blood of Christ. 14 For he is our peace. He unified the two groups by demolishing the barrier that kept us apart. 15 He put an end to the feud between us in his flesh. He abolished the Law with its observances and regulations. He created out of the two groups a new man, united with himself. He made peace between the two groups.

16 He reconciled them both to God in one body through the Cross. He brought to an end the hostility between them in his own flesh. 17 He came and proclaimed his Gospel of peace to you who were far off and to those who were near. 18 Now, united in the same Spirit, we both have access to the Father.

19 You are no longer foreigners and immigrants. Now you are fellow-citizens of the saints and members of the divine family. 20 You have been built on the foundations laid by the Apostles and the Prophets, with Jesus Christ as the cornerstone. 21 In him the entire building is bound together and rises upwards as a holy temple dedicated to the Lord. 22 Along with him you are built up as a dwelling-place of God in the Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER 3

PAUL'S INITIATION

1 For this reason, I, Paul, am the servant of Jesus Christ on behalf of you Gentiles. 2 Surely you have heard how God has foreordained to bestow his grace upon me. 3 In a revelation he disclosed to me his mystery which I have briefly described in my writings. 4 When you read these documents, you will understand my insight into the mysteries of Christ.

5 This mystery was not manifested in other generations as it has now been revealed by the Holy Spirit to his holy Apostles and Prophets. 6 This mystery means that the Gentiles

are fellow heirs, fellow members, and fellow partakers of the promise made in the name of Jesus Christ through the Gospel.

PAUL'S MISSION

7 I was appointed a missionary of this Gospel through the gift of divine grace, which was given to me and which is operating in me through the power of God.

8 Though I am the very least of the saints, this grace was given to me to preach to the Gentiles the inexhaustible wealth of Christ and to enlighten all men. 9 Thus they will be enabled to see the plan of the mystery hidden for ages in God, who created the universe through Jesus Christ. 10 The many-sided wisdom of God now will be known through the Church to the authorities and powers in heaven.

11 Such was the eternal purpose which God carried out in our Lord Jesus Christ. 12 Through him and our faith in him, we are emboldened to approach God in confidence. 13 Therefore I beseech you not to be depressed at my worrying over you. On the contrary, you should be proud of it.

PRAYER

14 For these requests I kneel before the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, 15 the Father of all the Angels in heaven and of all men on earth. 16 May he strengthen your souls with the wealth of his glory through the Holy Spirit. 17 May Christ find a dwelling-place in your hearts through faith. May your lives be rooted in love and founded on love.

18 May you and all the saints be enabled to understand and measure in all its breadth, length, depth, and height, 19 the love of Christ which surpasses all knowledge. May you become divinely perfect.

20 Glory be to him, who by the power operating within us can do far more than all we ask or imagine. 21 Glory to him through the Church and through Jesus Christ in all generations, forever and ever. Amen.

CHAPTER 4

UNITY

1 As a servant of the Lord, I appeal to you to lead lives worthy of the vocation you have received, 2 with perfect humility, meekness, and patience. Forbear one another in charity.

3 Endeavor to preserve the unity of the Holy Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 You must be one body with a single Spirit, because you have received the same vocation with one hope, 5 one Lord, one faith, one baptism, 6 one God and Father of all, above all, through all, and in all of you.

GIFTS

7 Nevertheless, each one of us has received his own special grace as a generous gift from Christ. 8 Therefore the Scripture says: "He ascended into heaven, he led a host of captives, he gave gifts to mankind."

9 Now, if he ascended into heaven, that means that he had previously descended into the lower regions of the earth. 10 For Christ first descended, then ascended above all the heavens, and filled the entire universe.

11 He gave us some men as Apostles, some as prophets, some as evangelists, some as pastors, some as teachers. 12 It is their duty to train the saints, to minister to their needs, to build up the Church of Christ, 13 and to enable us to achieve the unity of the faith and knowledge of the Son of God. So we shall reach full growth, the maturity and the perfection of Christ.

CHRISTIAN LIFE

14 We must no longer be children, tossed by the waves and carried about with every wind of doctrine through the trickery of men and their ingenuity in fabricating deception.

15 We must follow the true religion. We must practice charity. We must grow up in everything under Christ who is our leader. 16 The whole body depends on him. It is organized and unified at every joint with the source which supplies it. Thus each limb receives the energy it needs, promotes the growth of the body, and builds itself up through charity.

17 Therefore this is my message and my appeal to you: Do not live as the pagans do in accordance with their frivolous imagination 18 and their darkened understanding. They are estranged from the life of God because of their ignorance and their obstinacy. 19 They have become callous and abandoned themselves to licentiousness. They are greedily practicing every kind of vice.

20 But you know that this is not the Christian way of life.
21 You have heard the Gospel of Christ, and you have been
instructed in his true religion.

22 Therefore put off your old nature, which belongs to your
former way of life, and which leads to ruin through deceptive
passions. 23 Adopt a new attitude of mind. 24 Put on a new
nature, which has been created in the image of God, in
righteousness, holiness, and truth. 25 Cast away falsehood and
always tell the truth to your neighbors. For we are members
of the same body.

26 Do not let anger lead you to sin. Get rid of anger before
the sun sets. 27 Give no opportunity to the devil.

28 The man who was a thief must not steal any more. On
the contrary, he must labor and toil with his own hands, so as
to be able to share his blessings with those who are in need.

29 No base talk must ever cross your lips. Speak only
words good for edification and fit for the occasion which will
bring grace to those who are listening.

30 Do not offend the Holy Spirit of God. For you must
bear his seal until the day of your redemption comes. 31 Cast
away from you all bitterness, wrath, anger, strife, blasphemy,
and malice. 32 Be kind, merciful, and gracious to one another,
as God in Christ has been gracious to you.

CHAPTER 5

THE COMMANDMENTS

1 Obey the commandments of God as his beloved children.
2 Love one another, as Christ loved us when he gave himself
up on our behalf and offered himself as a fragrant sacrifice to
God.

3 Remember that among saints like you it is not fitting
even to mention fornication, impurity of any kind, and covetous-
ness. 4 You must spend all your time in thanksgiving to God,
not in obscene, frivolous, flippant, and unbecoming subjects of
conversation. 5 You well know that immoral, impure, and
covetous men, who are as bad as idolaters, will never inherit
the Kingdom of God.

6 Let no one deceive you about them with empty arguments,
for the wrath of God is aroused by those who disobey him and
practice these vices. 7 Therefore do not associate with them.
8 You belonged to the darkness of paganism in the past. But

now you belong to the light of God. Therefore live like children of light. 9 For the light of the Holy Spirit leads to perfect goodness, righteousness, and truth. 10 Try always to find out what is pleasing to the Lord.

PAGAN ORGIES

11 Do not take part in the orgies of benighted paganism. On the contrary, denounce them publicly. 12 True, it is shameful even to mention their secret practices. 13 But when you denounce them publicly, you expose them under the light. When you expose them, you reveal them in their true light. 14 For the Scripture says: "Wake up, O sleeper, rise from the dead, and Christ will give you light."

15 Therefore be careful in your conduct, and do not live unwisely, but wisely. 16 Make the most of your opportunity. For these are evil days. 17 So do not behave foolishly, but try to understand what is the will of the Lord.

18 Do not get an artificial stimulation from wine, as the pagans do. For that will lead you to drunkenness. 19 But get all your inspiration from the Holy Spirit, and express your religious enthusiasm in antiphonal psalms, hymns, and spiritual anthems, singing and praising the Lord with all your hearts.

HOLY MATRIMONY

20 Always give thanks for everything to God the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, 21 and subordinate yourselves to one another piously.

22 Wives, obey your husbands, as you obey the Lord. 23 The husband is the head of the wife, as Christ is the head of the Church, which is his body and of which he is the Savior. 24 Therefore, as the Church obeys Christ, likewise wives must always obey their husbands.

25 Husbands, love your wives even as Christ loved the Church and gave himself up on her behalf. 26 Thus he consecrated her. He purified her in the laver of Baptism through the Gospel. 27 He won her for himself as a glorious, flawless, unblemished, perfect, and immaculate Church.

28 Husbands must love their wives, as if they were their own bodies. A husband who loves his wife is really loving himself. 29 No one hates his own flesh. On the contrary, he feeds it and takes care of it, as Christ is doing for the Church.

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. 31 For this reason, a man must leave his own father and mother, he must attach himself to his wife, and the two must become one flesh.

32 This is a great Sacrament. And I am making this statement in the name of Christ and in the name of the Church. 33 Therefore each one of you must love his wife as he loves himself. And the wife must respect her husband.

CHAPTER 6
OBEDIENCE

1 Children, obey your parents in the Lord. It is your duty. 2 "Honor your father and mother." This is a principal commandment with a promise attached to it: 3 "Then it will be well with you, and you will live long on the earth."

4 Fathers, do not exasperate your children, but bring them up in the training and instruction of the Lord.

5 Slaves, obey your secular masters with respect, reverence, and sincerity as Christ himself. 6 Do not render them mere external service, as though you had only men to please, but as servants of Christ who carry out the will of God. 7 Perform your duties heartily and cheerfully, as if they were for the Lord himself and not for men. 8 You know well that each one of us, slave or free, will be rewarded by the Lord for every good act.

9 Masters, you must also treat your slaves in the same way. Do not threaten them. You know that God in heaven is their master as well as yours, and he makes no distinction between man and man.

DIVINE ARMOR

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord with all the power of his might. 11 Put on the complete armor of God. Then you will be able to make a stand against the stratagems of the devil. 12 Our struggle is not against a human enemy, but against the satanic principalities and dominions, against the rulers of universal darkness in the lower world, and against all the spirits of wickedness in the upper world.

13 Therefore take up the complete armor of God. So when the evil days come, you will be able to make a stand and hold your ground after the battle is over. 14 Stand fast. Gird your

waist with the belt of truth. Put on your chest the breastplate of righteousness. 15 And have your feet shod with the readiness to proclaim the Gospel of peace.

16 Above all, carry the shield of faith. Then you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked fiend. 17 Put on the helmet of salvation, and take up the sword of the Holy Spirit, namely the divine Gospel.

CONTINUAL PRAYER

18 Pray at all times in the Spirit, with every kind of petition and supplication. Keep awake to that end with all perseverance. Pray for all the saints. 19 Pray also for me, that I may be enabled to speak as boldly as I ought and proclaim the mystery of the Gospel, 20 for which I am an ambassador in chains.

CONCLUSION

21 I presume that you want to know how I am and what I am doing. Our dear brother Tychicus, a faithful servant in the Lord, will tell you all about it. 22 I have sent him to you for this very purpose, to give you that information and to cheer you up.

23 May God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ bestow upon our brethren peace, love, and faith. 24 Grace be with all those who feel an unfailing love for our Lord Jesus Christ. Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE PHILIPPIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul and Timothy, servants of Jesus Christ,
To all the saints, bishops, and deacons in Christ at Philippi:
2 Grace and peace be to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

THANKSGIVING

3 I give thanks to my God every time I think of you. 4 I always remember you all joyfully in every prayer of mine. 5 For you have been my fellow workers in the Gospel from the first day until now.

6 I am sure that God who inspired you for this good work will bring it to perfection at the day of Jesus Christ. 7 It is only natural for me to entertain such hopes for you. I have you all in my heart, because you shared my pride in my imprisonment, in my defense, and in my proclamation of the Gospel.

8 God is my witness that I yearn for you all with the affection of Jesus Christ himself. 9 And this is my prayer for you: May your love grow richer and richer in knowledge and insight. 10 May the Lord help you to appreciate what is salutary, and to become pure and blameless in preparation for the day of Christ. 11 May your lives be filled with the fruits of righteousness through Jesus Christ to the glory and praise of God.

BLESSING IN DISGUISE

12 Now, brethren, I want you to know that my ordeals contributed considerably to the promotion of the Gospel. 13 It has become clear to all the praetorian guard and all the people that I have been sent to jail for the sake of Christ. 14 So most of the brethren in the Lord have been inspired by my imprisonment and are now proclaiming the divine Gospel boldly and fearlessly.

15 Some of them, it is true, are moved by jealousy and
rivalry. But there are others who are preaching the Gospel of
Christ in good faith. 16 The former are proclaiming Christ
insincerely for their own ends. They hope to add more distress
to my imprisonment. 17 The latter are doing it out of charity.
They know that I am here to defend the Gospel.

18 But what difference does it make? In either way,
whether with pretense or with sincerity, Christ is proclaimed.
So I rejoice in it now. Yes, and I will rejoice in it in the future.
19 I know that this will make for my salvation through your
prayers and the assistance of the Spirit of Jesus Christ.

LIFE OR DEATH

20 I eagerly expect and hope that I shall not be put to
shame. I am sure that with my unfailing courage this time, as
always hitherto, Christ will be glorified in my flesh, either by
my life or my death.

21 To me life means a Christian life, and death means a
Christian prize. 22 But if my life in the flesh can produce
fruitful work, I cannot tell which to choose. 23 I am undecided
between the two. I long to depart and be with Christ. That is
far better.

24 Yet to remain in the flesh is more necessary on your
account. 25 As I am convinced of this necessity, I know that I
will remain and serve you all for your progress and joy in the
faith. 26 Thus you will have ample cause to be proud of me in
Jesus Christ when I come to you again.

EXHORTATION

27 Only let your way of life be worthy of the Gospel of
Christ. Then if I come, I will see you. If I am absent, I will hear
that you are standing firm with one spirit, and working together
with one soul for the faith of the Gospel. 28 Do not be at all
terrified by your opponents. Your firmness will be a clear
evidence of their coming destruction and of your salvation from
God. 29 For it has been granted to you not only to believe in
Christ, but also to suffer for his sake. 30 Your battle is my
battle. You saw how I fought it once, and you have heard how
I am fighting it now.

CHAPTER 2

UNITY

1 I will tell you how you can give me Christian consolation,
comfort of love, communion of the Holy Spirit, fraternal
sympathy, 2 and make me perfectly happy: Be one in thought,
one in heart, one in soul, and one in mind.

HUMILITY

3 Do nothing from selfishness or conceit. Each one of you
must have the humility to think others better than himself.
4 Each one of you must look, not only to his own interests, but
also to the interests of others.

5 Be minded as Jesus Christ was. 6 He was divine by
nature. Yet he did not cling covetously to his equal status with
God. 7 On the contrary, he divested himself of all his divine
prerogatives, and assumed the nature of a slave. He was born
like a human child. 8 He appeared before us in the form of an
ordinary man. He humbled himself and carried his obedience
so far as to die the death of a criminal on the Cross.

9 Therefore God exalted him so highly and bestowed on
him the name which is superior to every other name. 10 At
the name of Jesus everyone in heaven, on earth, and in the
underworld must fall on his knees. 11 Everyone must acknowledge
that Jesus Christ is the Lord to the glory of God the Father.

SALVATION

12 Therefore, as you have always been obedient in my
presence, be much more so now in my absence, and work out
your salvation with reverence and awe. 13 For God makes you
both will and act for the fulfillment of his gracious pleasure.

14 Do everything without any complaint or hesitation. 15 Be
blameless, innocent, and immaculate children of God in the midst
of a crooked and perverse generation. Shine among them like
beacons of mankind. 16 Proclaim the life-giving Gospel. Then,
when the day of Christ comes, I will be proud of my work.
For I will know that I have not contended in vain nor labored in
vain. 17 Even if my blood is poured out as a libation on the
sacred sacrifice of faith you offer to God, I am glad and rejoice
with you all. 18 Likewise, you should be glad and rejoice with
me.

TIMOTHY

19 I hope in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you. I also will be cheered by having news of you. 20 I have no one else here who shares my feelings as he does, no one who will concern himself so genuinely with your welfare.

21 For they are looking after their own interests, not those of Jesus Christ. 22 But you know his tested character. He labored with me for the Gospel as a son with his father. 23 Therefore I hope to send him as soon as I see how things will go with me.

EPAPHRODITUS

24 I am persuaded in the Lord that shortly I myself shall come also. 25 In the meantime, I have thought it necessary to send you Epaphroditus, my brother, fellow worker, and fellow crusader, whom you sent to minister to my needs.

26 He has been longing for you all, and he has been greatly distressed because you heard that he was sick. 27 Indeed he was sick, and nearly died. But God had mercy on him, and not only on him but on me also, for he did not let me have one sorrow after another.

28 So I am all the more eager to send him. You will be glad to see him again, and I will feel more relieved. 29 Therefore receive him joyfully in the Lord. You must honor men like him. 30 For he came near death in the service of the Lord, and risked his life to carry out his mission of mercy on my behalf as your delegate.

CHAPTER 3

PRIVILEGES

1 Brethren, I greet you in the name of the Lord. I do not mind writing the same message to you so long as it is safer for you.

2 Look out for the dogs, look out for the evildoers, look out for the mutilators. 3 We are the true representatives of circumcision. For we worship God in spirit. We are proud of Jesus Christ. We do not rely on privileges of the flesh. 4 I myself have reason to rely on such privileges. For I am more entitled to rely on privileges of the flesh than any other man.

5 I was circumcized eight days after my birth. I come from the stock of Israel, I belong to the tribe of Benjamin. I am a

Hebrew, born of Hebrews. In legal observance I was a Pharisee.
6 In zeal I was a persecutor of the Church. In practicing the
commandments of the Law, I was beyond reproach.

RENUNCIATION

7 But I now count all my former gains as loss for the sake
of Christ. 8 Indeed, I count everything as loss compared with
the supreme privilege of knowing my Lord Jesus Christ. For
his sake I lost everything, and I count everything as refuse.
Thus I hope to win Christ, 9 and dwell in him. For I believe
that I can obtain justification, not through the observances of
the Law, but through faith in Christ. For justification from
God depends on faith. 10 So I hope to understand Christ and
the miracle of his Resurrection, to share his sufferings, to die
like him, 11 and, if possible, to obtain resurrection from the dead.

12 I do not mean to say that I have received this blessing,
or that I have already achieved perfection. But I press on to
capture it, because I have been captured by Jesus Christ.
13 Brethren, I do not consider that I have captured it yet.
I am doing only one thing. I forget what I have left behind.
14 I reach out for what lies ahead, and I press on toward the
goal of my heavenly and divine vocation in Jesus Christ.

15 All of us who are mature must be like-minded. If you
disagree with me, God will enlighten you also and show you
the way. 16 Therefore let us have the same purpose, let us
follow the same faith, and let us stick to the achievements we
have attained.

FOLLOWERS AND OPPONENTS

17 Brethren, follow my example. But watch those who
pretend to be my followers. 18 I have told you often, and again
I tell you with tears that many of these men behave like enemies
of the Cross of Jesus.

19 But they are doomed to destruction. For they worship
their bellies as their god. They glory in their shameful vices.
They crave for infernal abominations.

20 But our home is in heaven from which we hope that
our Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, will come. 21 He will transform
our humble bodies and make them look like his glorious body
through his power as the Master of the Universe.

CHAPTER 4

HARMONY

1 Therefore, my dear brethren, whom I love and long for, who are my joy and my crown, stand firmly in the Lord.

2 I entreat Euodia and Syntyche to make up their differences in the name of the Lord. 3 I also appeal to you, my true comrades, to help these women. They both toiled hard for the Gospel with me, with Clement, and my other fellow workers whose names are written in the Book of Life.

DIVINE PEACE

4 Brethren, farewell. May the Lord be with you always. 5 Let all men see your gentleness. The Lord is coming. 6 Do not worry about anything. But make all your petitions known to God through prayer, supplication, and thanksgiving.

7 Then, the peace of God, which transcends all human understanding, will keep your minds and your thoughts in Jesus Christ.

8 Now, brethren, let your minds dwell on what is true, noble, righteous, pure, amiable, kindly, virtuous, and praiseworthy. 9 Practice what you have learned, received, and heard from me, or seen me do. May the God of peace be with you.

APPRECIATION

10 I rejoiced in the Lord greatly that your interest in me has been revived again after so long. Indeed, you have always been interested. But you have had no opportunity to show it.

11 I am not complaining. I have learned to be contented in whatever condition I am in. 12 I know how to enjoy plenty. Everywhere and among all people I have learned the secret of having my fill and of going hungry, of having plenty and of suffering want. 13 I can do anything through Christ who strengthens me.

14 However, it was very kind of you to share my distress. 15 As you Philippians know, in the early days of the Gospel, after I left Macedonia, no Church had any financial dealings with me except yours only. 16 Even when I was in Thessalonica, you sent money for my needs more than once. 17 Not that I want your gifts, but I want you to enjoy the benefits of your liberality.

18 I have everything in abundance, I am fully supplied,
now that I have received your gift from Epaphroditus. It was
like fragrant incense, an acceptable and well-pleasing sacrifice
to God. 19 May the Lord reward you by supplying all your
needs with his wealth of glory in Jesus Christ. 20 Glory to God
our Father forever and ever. Amen.

GREETINGS

21 Greet all the saints in Jesus Christ. The brethren who
are with me send you greetings. 22 All the saints, and especially
those who belong to Caesar's household, send you their greetings
also.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.
Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE COLOSSIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother,

To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ at Colossae:

2 Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

THANKSGIVING

3 We always give thanks to God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, whenever we remember you in our prayers. 4 For we have heard of your faith in Jesus Christ and of your love toward all the saints. 5 We also know that you hope for your reward in heaven, as you have learned from the Gospel of truth, 6 which was proclaimed to you and to all mankind. This Gospel is now bearing fruit and thriving everywhere, and also among yourselves, since the day you first heard of it and received the grace of the true God.

7 You have obtained that information from Epaphras, our beloved fellow servant of Christ. 8 He told us also about your love in the Holy Spirit.

PRAYER

9 So ever since the day we received his report, we have been praying for you in return unceasingly. This is our prayer for you: May God fill you with the knowledge of his will, with all spiritual wisdom and understanding. 10 May God help you to lead a life worthy of the Lord, fully pleasing to him, bearing fruit in divine insight. 11 May God strengthen you with all his glorious power and might to endure everything patiently and joyfully.

12 We give thanks to God our Father. For he enabled us to share the inheritance of the saints who live in the light.

13 He rescued us from the power of darkness, and transferred us to the kingdom of his beloved Son. 14 In him, through his blood, we find our redemption and the remission of our sins.

JESUS

15 He is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creation. 16 All beings, whether heavenly or earthly, whether visible or invisible, whether thrones or dominions, whether principalities or authorities, were created in his name. Yes, everything was created through him and for him.

17 He stands above all, and everything subsists in him. 18 He is the head of the Church which is his body. He existed from the beginning, and became the pioneer of the resurrection. He is pre-eminent in everything. 19 For God in his perfection has graciously dwelt in him.

CONCILIATOR

20 God has reconciled to himself all men through him, whether on earth or in heaven, and has made peace with them through his blood on the Cross.

21 You also were once estranged and hostile in disposition because of your evil deeds. Yet he has now reconciled you 22 in his flesh through his death, in order to present you holy, blameless, and irreproachable before him. 23 But you must remain well-grounded and steadfast in the faith. You must not shift from the hope of the Gospel which you heard, which has been preached to every creature under heaven, and of which I became the Apostle.

PAUL'S MESSAGE

24 At present I am glad I am suffering for your sake. Thus I am making up in my own flesh the balance of the afflictions of Christ for the Church which is his body. 25 I became his missionary by virtue of the divine commission which authorized me to preach among you the Gospel of God in its fulness.

26 This was the secret which had been hidden for ages and generations. 27 Now God has revealed it to his saints. For he wanted to manifest the wealth and the glory of this secret to the Gentiles. This secret means that Christ is in you, and he is the hope of your glory.

28 Therefore we proclaim his Gospel. We advise and teach every man as wisely as we can to achieve the perfection of Jesus Christ. 29 This is the mission for which I am laboring and fighting with the mighty energy with which he has endowed me.

CHAPTER 2

ADMONITION

1 I want you to know what a fight I am putting up for you, for our brothers in Laodicea, and for all those who do not know me personally. 2 May their hearts be comforted. May they be knit together in love. May they have all the wealth of conviction that comes from insight. May they penetrate the secret revealed to us by God the Father and by Jesus Christ, 3 in whom all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge are stored up.

4 Now I warn you again. You must not let anyone delude you with plausible arguments. 5 For though I am absent in the flesh, I am with you in spirit, and I am glad to see your discipline and the firmness of your faith in Christ. 6 Therefore order your lives according to the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ which you have received. 7 Be rooted and built up in him. Be established in the faith, as you were taught. Be overflowing in thanksgiving for these blessings.

SPECULATIONS

8 See to it that no one victimizes you through philosophy and through empty paganism. The former is based on human speculation, the latter on the worship of natural forces. Both of them are opposed to Christianity.

9 For we believe that Christ is the embodiment of divine perfection. 10 We believe that we become perfect through union with Christ. We believe that Christ is the head of all the angelic Principalities and Powers.

11 As you well know, you have received a mystical circumcision through the circumcision of Christ which enabled you to put off the sins of the flesh. 12 You have been buried with Christ through baptism. You have risen from the dead with Christ through faith in Almighty God who raised him from the dead.

13 Christ has raised you to life when you were dead through

your trespasses and through the uncircumcision of your flesh. He forgave all your sins. 14 He cancelled the old book of the Law which stood against us. He put it out of our way. He nailed it on the Cross. 15 He despoiled the infernal dominions and realms. He dragged their rulers as captives in procession, and through his Cross he led us all to triumph.

ERRORS

16 Consequently, no one can call you to account on rules of food and drink, or on observances of a festival, or a new moon, or a sabbath. 17 For they were only symbols of future realities. The sum total of these realities is Christ.

18 You must not let anyone cheat you with a sham humility, angel-worship, imaginary visions, and puffed-up hallucinations of the flesh which have no connection with Christ. 19 For he is the head from whom the whole body, nourished and knit together through its ligaments and sinews, grows up with a divine growth.

20 Now if you have died in Christ and have parted company with all worldly principles, why do you still act as if you were living a worldly life? Why do you submit to human precepts and regulations 21 against touching, tasting, or handling things, 22 which all perish as they are used?

23 Such practices have a show of wisdom, with their self-imposed devotions, their self-humiliation, and their ascetic discipline. But they are all forgotten when nature demands full gratification.

CHAPTER 3

HEAVENLY-MINDED

1 If you have risen from the dead with Christ, seek the blessings of heaven, where Christ is sitting at the right hand of God. 2 Be heavenly-minded, not earthly-minded. 3 Your earthly life is at an end, and now begins your mystical life with Christ in God.

VICES

4 When Christ, who is our life, appears from heaven, you also will appear in glory with him. 5 Therefore turn away from all the earthly cravings of your flesh, namely fornication, impurity, passion, evil desire, and avarice, which are as wicked

as idolatry. 6 Men practicing these vices arouse the wrath of God, because they disobey him.

7 Remember that you were guilty of these sins in the past. 8 But now you must cast them all away, including anger, rage, malice, blasphemy, and obscenity. 9 Do not lie to one another. For you are through with your old self and your old practices. 10 Now you have begun life as a new man, recreated in wisdom after the image of the Creator. 11 In this respect there is no difference between Gentile and Jew, circumcized and uncircumcized, barbarian and Scythian, slave and freeman. Now Christ is everything, and he lives in everyone of you.

VIRTUES

12 As the chosen and beloved saints of God, practice mercy, kindness, humility, meekness, and patience. 13 Be tolerant with one another and always ready to forgive anyone who has a difference with you. Forgive others as Christ has forgiven you.

14 Above all, practice charity, which is the bond of perfection. 15 Let the peace of God reign in your hearts. For you have been called to become members of a single body. Be always thankful. 16 Let the Gospel of Christ dwell in you and enrich your hearts. Teach and admonish one another in all wisdom. Sing psalms, hymns, and spiritual anthems. Praise God and give thanks to him with all your hearts.

17 Whenever you have to say or do anything, always invoke the name of the Lord Jesus, and give thanks to God the Father through him.

THE CHRISTIAN FAMILY

18 Wives, obey your husbands, as it is your duty in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and do not be harsh toward them.

20 Children, obey your parents always, for this is well-pleasing to the Lord.

21 Fathers, do not exasperate your children, and do not break their hearts.

MASTERS AND SLAVES

22 Slaves, obey always your secular masters. Do not render them mere external service, as if you had only men to please.

Perform your duties with sincerity of heart and with fear of God.

23 Whatever your task may be, carry it out heartily, as if you were doing it for the Lord and not for men. 24 You know well that you will receive the reward of the inheritance from the Lord. Remember that you are serving the Lord Jesus. 25 Remember that the wrongdoer will receive retribution for the wrong he has done without any partiality.

CHAPTER 4

MASTERS

1 Masters, treat your slaves justly and fairly. Remember that you also have a master in heaven.

PRAYER

2 Be steadfast in your prayer, and watchful in your thanksgiving. 3 Pray for me also. May God afford me an opening for preaching the revelation of Christ, which is the cause of my imprisonment, 4 and show me how to proclaim his Gospel.

PRUDENCE

5 Be prudent in your behavior with outsiders, and make the most of this opportunity. 6 Your manner of speaking must always be gracious and seasoned with salt. You must know how to answer everyone.

TYCHICUS AND ONESIMUS

7 Tychicus will tell you all about my affairs. He is a beloved brother, a faithful missionary, and a fellow servant in the Lord. 8 I have sent him to you for this very purpose, that he may let you know how I am and cheer up your hearts. 9 He is accompanied by Onesimus, our faithful and beloved brother. He will tell you of everything that has taken place here.

GREETINGS

10 You have greetings from Aristarchus, my fellow prisoner; from Mark, the cousin of Barnabas about whom you have already received instructions and whom you must welcome when he visits you; 11 and also from Jesus, who is surnamed Justus.

They are the only Jews who have helped me to preach the Kingdom of God. They have been a comfort to me.

12 You have greetings from Epaphras, a servant of Christ, who is one of your friends. He always remembers you in his prayers very earnestly. He hopes that you will become mature and perfect in every respect according to the will of God. 13 I assure you that he is greatly concerned over you as well as the brethren of Laodicea and Hierapolis.

14 You have greetings from Luke, our beloved physician, and from Demas. 15 Give our greetings to the brethren at Laodicea, to Nymphas, and to the Church in his house.

CHURCH OF LAODICEA

16 When this letter has been read to you, have it read also in the Church of Laodicea, and see that you read the letter from Laodicea as well.

17 And tell Archippus: "See to it that you fulfill the duty which has been committed to you in the service of the Lord."

18 Receive this greeting from the hand of Paul himself. Remember that he is in prison. The grace of God be with you. Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy,

To the Church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ:

Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

THANKSGIVING

2 I always give thanks to God for you all when we mention you in our prayers. 3 I remember unceasingly before our God and Father your work of faith, your labor of love, and the steadfastness of your hope in our Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I know, beloved brethren, that God has chosen you. 5 For my Gospel did not come to you in mere words, but with power, with the Holy Spirit, and with full conviction. You know yourselves what I have been to you and what I have done for you.

6 You have followed the example of the Lord and mine. For in spite of the great persecution, you welcomed my message with joy in the Holy Spirit. 7 Thus you have become a model to all the believers throughout Macedonia and Achaia.

8 Yes, the divine message has resounded from you, and not only in Macedonia and Achaia. Your faith in God has reached every place. All know it, so I never need to speak about it.

9 Moreover, my friends tell me of their own accord about the visit I paid to you. They describe how you turned away from idòlatry to the worship of God. So now you serve the living and true God. 10 Now you wait for his Son, whom he raised from the dead, to come down from heaven and save us from the future retribution.

CHAPTER 2

MISSIONARY ZEAL

1 Brethren, you yourselves know that my visit to you was
not in vain. 2 Although I had been previously ill-treated and
insulted at Philippi, as you remember, I took courage from God,
and preached the divine Gospel to you in the face of great
opposition.

3 For my exhortation does not proceed from deceit, or
impurity, or fraud, 4 but from God who judged me fit to entrust
with his Gospel. Therefore I preach, not to please men, but
God, who scrutinizes our hearts. 5 As you know, I never used
the language of flattery, or any device for money-making as
God is my witness. 6 I never sought glory from men, from you,
or from others, although I was entitled to make heavy demands
as the Apostle of Christ.

7 On the contrary, I have been gentle with you like a nurse
taking care of her children. 8 In my deep devotion to you, I was
ready to offer you, not only the Gospel of God, but even my own
life, because you had become very dear to me.

9 Brethren, you remember my labor and my toil. I worked
day and night. For I did not want to burden anyone of you
while I was preaching to you the Gospel of God. 10 As God
and you yourselves are witnesses, my behavior to you believers
was holy, righteous, and blameless.

11 As you remember, I treated everyone of you as a father
treats his children. I encouraged you. I comforted you. 12 I
implored you to lead a life worthy of the God who now invites
you to the glory of his Kingdom.

APPRECIATION

13 Therefore I give thanks to God unceasingly. For when
I delivered the divine message to you at first, you received it,
not as the message of man, but as what it really is, the Gospel
of God who manifests his power in you believers. 14 For you
have followed the example of the Churches of God in Jesus
Christ in Judea.

15 You suffered the same ill-treatment from your fellow
neighbors as they did from the Jews who killed the Lord Jesus
and the prophets and persecuted me. They are displeasing to
God and enemies of mankind. 16 They are trying to hinder me
from preaching salvation to the Gentiles. Thus they are always

filling up the measure of their sins. But the retribution of God has come upon them at last.

17 Since I have been separated from you for a short time, in person though not in spirit, I have endeavored with great eagerness to see you again. 18 I did intend to visit you, I, Paul, more than once. But Satan hindered me.

19 For you are my hope and my crown of triumph before our Lord Jesus at his manifestation. 20 Yes, you are my glory and my delight.

CHAPTER 3

TIMOTHY

1 Therefore I could bear it no longer. So I decided to remain at Athens by myself, 2 and I sent you Timothy, my brother, my fellow servant of God, and my fellow worker in the Gospel of Christ. He will confirm you in your faith and he will encourage you. 3 So no one will be led astray by these afflictions. You know very well that this is our appointed lot.

4 For when I was with you, as you know, I told you beforehand that I was going to suffer afflictions, and it came true. 5 For this reason, when I could not bear it any longer, I sent to ascertain your faith. For I was afraid that the tempter had perhaps tempted you and that my labor was wasted.

6 But now Timothy has come back to me from you. He brought me the good news of your faith and love. He reported to me that you always remember me kindly and long to see me as I long to see you.

7 For this reason, brethren, in all my distress and affliction, I have been comforted by your faith. 8 For now I really live, since you stand firm in the Lord. 9 What thanksgiving can I render to God for you to express all the joy I feel for your sake before our God? 10 Night and day I pray most fervently to see you face to face again and to supply the deficiencies of your faith.

11 May God the Father himself and our Lord Jesus Christ direct my journey to you. 12 May the Lord give you the same abundant and overflowing love toward one another and toward all men, as I have toward you. 13 May he confirm your hearts in unblemished holiness before God the Father at the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

CHAPTER 4

CHASTITY AND LOVE

1 Brethren, I entreat you and exhort you, in the name of
the Lord Jesus, to live and please God, as you have learned
from me. Then you will progress still more. 2 You know what
commandments I gave you by the authority of the Lord Jesus.

3 It is the will of God that you should attain sanctification.
Therefore abstain from fornication. 4 Each one of you must
learn to control his own body, as something holy and precious.
5 None of you must yield to the promptings of passion as the
pagans do in their ignorance of God.

6 None of you must be exorbitant and take advantage of
his brother in his business dealings. Because the Lord will avenge
all these wrongdoings as I told you before in solemn warning.

7 God has not called us to a life of incontinence, but to a
life of holiness. 8 Therefore everyone who disregards this
commandment, disregards not man, but God who gave us his
Holy Spirit.

9 Concerning brotherly love, you do not need any directions.
For you yourselves have been taught by God to love one another.
10 Indeed, you do practice this love toward all the brethren who
live all over Macedonia. But I entreat you, brethren, to progress
still more.

11 Try to live quietly, to attend to your business, and to
work with your hands as I directed you. 12 So your way of life
will be reputable in the eyes of outsiders, and you will not need
to depend on others.

THE SECOND COMING

13 Now I do not want you to have any misgivings about
our departed brethren and grieve over them like hopeless
unbelievers. 14 For since we believe that Jesus died and rose
from the dead, even so God will raise our departed brethren
through Jesus and glorify them with him.

15 I declare to you on the authority of the Lord that at
his manifestation we the survivors and stragglers will not
precede our departed brethren. 16 For the Lord himself will
descend from heaven with a summons, with a shout of the
Archangel, and with a blast of the divine trumpet. First our
departed brethren in Christ will rise from the dead.

17 Afterwards, we the survivors and stragglers will ride

upon the clouds with them to meet the Lord in the sky. Then we shall remain with the Lord forever. 18 Therefore comfort one another with these Christian hopes.

CHAPTER 5

TIME UNKNOWN

1 But as to the times and the periods of events, brethren, you do not need any information. 2 You yourselves know well that the day of the Lord will come unexpectedly like a housebreaker in the night. 3 For when people imagine that peace and security prevail, then the catastrophe will fall upon them suddenly as travail comes upon a pregnant woman. There is no escape from it. So we must be prepared.

4 But you, brethren, do not live in darkness. Then that day will not take you by surprise like a housebreaker. 5 You are all sons of light and sons of the day. We do not belong to the night and to the darkness.

WATCHFULNESS

6 Therefore we must not sleep like other men. We must be watchful and sober. 7 Those who belong to the night may sleep and get drunk. 8 But we who belong to the day must be sober and fully armed with faith and charity as our breastplate and with the hope of salvation as our helmet.

9 Remember that God has destined us to win, not damnation through sin, but salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ. 10 For he died for us in order that during our life and after our death we may live with him. 11 Therefore exhort and uplift one another, as indeed you are doing.

EXHORTATION

12 I also entreat you, brethren, to respect those who are laboring among you, presiding over you, and admonishing you in the name of the Lord. 13 Hold them in the highest esteem and affection for their ministry. Be at peace among yourselves.

14 Brethren, we appeal to you: Admonish the unruly. Encourage the timid. Support the weak. Be patient with everybody. 15 You must never return evil for evil. On the contrary, you must always do good to one another and to all. 16 Rejoice in the Lord always. 17 Pray constantly. 18 Give thanks in every

circumstance. For this is what God wants you to do as disciples of Jesus Christ.

19 Do not quench the Holy Spirit. 20 Do not despise prophecies. 21 But test everything. Hold fast to what is good, 22 and keep away from every kind of evil.

PRAYER

23 May the God of peace himself sanctify you completely. May he preserve your spirit, your soul, and your body in immaculate purity until the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ. 24 God who called you will fulfill his promise. 25 Brethren, pray for me.

GREETINGS

26 Greet all the brethren with a sacred kiss. 27 I order you in the name of the Lord to see that this letter is read to all our holy brethren.

28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy,

To the Church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace to you from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

THANKSGIVING

3 It is my duty to give thanks to God always for you, brethren. It is befitting that I should. Your faith is increasing exceedingly, and the mutual love of each one and all of you is growing abundantly. 4 Therefore I myself boast of you in the Churches of God for your patience and faith in the face of all the persecutions and afflictions you endure.

5 These afflictions will serve you as evidence of the righteous judgment of God. They will make you worthy of the Kingdom of God, for which you are suffering. 6 Indeed, it will be only just on the part of God to repay with affliction those who afflict you, 7 and to reward you, the afflicted, as well as us with rest and relief.

8 This retribution will take place on the day when our Lord Jesus will appear from heaven with his mighty Angels in flaming fire. Then he will condemn those who deny God, and those who disobey the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 They will suffer the penalty of eternal punishment. They will be banished from the presence of the Lord and the majesty of his power.

10 When the Lord comes on that day, he will show how glorious he is with his saints and how marvelously he has dealt with the faithful. For my testimony has found belief among you.

PRAYER

11 Therefore I always pray for you with that day in mind.
May our God make you worthy of the vocation he has given you.
May he fulfill all your desires for good actions and all your efforts
of faith through his power.
12 So may the name of our Lord Jesus Christ be glorified
in you, and you in him, through the grace of our God and the
Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAPTER 2

THE SECOND COMING

1 Now, brethren, I want to make a request concerning the
coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our rally to meet him.
2 Do not let anyone scare you out of your wits and terrify you,
whether by a prophecy, or a declaration, or a letter purporting
to come from me to the effect that the Day of Christ is drawing
near.
3 Let no one deceive you in any way. The apostasy must
come first. The champion of sin, doomed to perdition, must
appear first. 4 I mean the Rebel who will lift up his head above
every divinity which is reverenced and worshipped. He will
enthrone himself in the temple of the Lord and will proclaim
himself as god.
5 Remember that I told you about him before I left your
company. 6 You also know who prevents him from appearing
before his appointed time. 7 Now the conspiracy of revolt is in
operation. When all restraint is removed, 8 the Rebel will reveal
himself. But then the Lord Jesus will come. As soon as he
appears, he will consume and annihilate the Rebel with the fire
of his Spirit.
9 The advent of the Rebel will be supported by all the
influence of Satan. It will be accompanied by counterfeit miracles,
signs, and wonders. 10 His wickedness will deceive all those who
are doomed. They have refused to be saved through the love
of the truth. 11 For this reason Divine Providence will let loose
among them a current of delusion to single out those who believe
in falsehoods. 12 Then he will punish all those who do not
believe in the truth, and who find pleasure in wrong-doing.
13 It is our duty to give thanks to God always for you,
brethren, beloved of the Lord. For God has chosen you from
the beginning for salvation through the sanctification of the

spirit and belief in the truth. 14 He has called you through our preaching of the Gospel to obtain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand firm and hold fast to the traditions you have received from me whether by word of mouth, or by letter. 16 May our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father, who loved us and gave us unfailing courage and steadfast hope through grace, 17 comfort your hearts and confirm you in every good word and work.

CHAPTER 3

EXHORTATION

1 Now, brethren, pray for me. May the Gospel of the Lord spread rapidly and triumphantly everywhere as it has done with you. 2 May the Lord deliver us from wicked and malicious men who have no faith.

3 The Lord is trustworthy. He will strengthen you. He will protect you from the evil one. 4 I have confidence in the Lord about you, and I am sure that you are doing and will do what I command. 5 May the Lord guide your hearts to divine love and to Christian endurance.

IDLENESS

6 Brethren, I command you in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to keep away from any brother who is loafing, instead of following the tradition you received from me.

7 You yourselves know that you must follow my example. I did not loaf among you. 8 I did not eat anyone's bread without paying. On the contrary, I toiled, I labored, I worked day and night. So I did not burden anyone of you. 9 I adopted this policy, not because I have not the right to my support, but in order to give you in my own conduct an example to imitate.

10 When I was among you, I gave you this command: Whoever does not want to work, let him not eat. 11 Now I am informed that there are among you some loafers and busy-bodies who do not work at all. 12 I command and exhort these men, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to keep quiet, to do their work, and to earn their own living.

13 As for you, brethren, never be weary of well-doing. 14 If anybody refuses to obey my order in this letter, mark that man and do not associate with him. That will make him feel ashamed.

15 Nevertheless, do not treat him as an enemy. Only warn him as a brother.

CONCLUSION

16 May the Lord of peace himself grant you peace at all times in all ways. The Lord be with you all.

17 I, Paul, send you this greeting in my own hand. This is the mark in every letter of mine. This is the way I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO TIMOTHY

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, the Apostle of Jesus Christ by order of God our Savior and of the Lord Jesus Christ, our hope.

2 To Timothy, my true son in faith:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

AT EPHESUS

3 As I requested you when I was going to Macedonia, stay on in Ephesus. Warn certain persons there not to teach dissident doctrines. 4 They must not waste their time in legends and endless speculations which lead to controversy rather than to divine edification through the faith.

5 The aim of your instruction must be love that springs from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from a sincere faith. 6 Certain persons have missed this aim and have wandered into empty verbiage. 7 They claim to be doctors of the Law, but they do not understand what they say and what they assert.

THE LAW

8 I know that the Law is good, if it is applied correctly. 9 But we must understand that the Law is not intended for righteous Christians. It is meant for the lawless, the disobedient, the ungodly, the sinners, the unholy, the profane, the murderers of fathers, the murderers of mothers, the manslayers, 10 the fornicators, the sodomites, the kidnappers, the liars, the perjurers, and all those guilty of vices contrary to the sacred doctrines 11 of the glorious Gospel of the blessed God with which I have been entrusted.

THANKFULNESS

12 I am thankful to our Lord Jesus Christ, the source of
all my strength. He considered me trustworthy and appointed
me to his service, 13 although I was formerly a blasphemer, a
persecutor, and a reprobate. Nevertheless, he had mercy on me,
because I had acted in ignorance and unbelief. 14 So the grace
of our Lord has overflowed upon me with the faith and love of
Jesus Christ.

15 This is a doctrine of our faith which must be professed
by all believers: Jesus Christ came into the world to save all
sinners. I know, I am the worst of them all. 16 But I found
mercy for this very reason: Jesus Christ wanted to manifest all
his long-suffering to me first. He singled me out as a typical
example, in order to encourage those who in the future would
believe in him and inherit everlasting life.

17 Honor and glory to the only God, the immortal, invisible,
and omniscient King of all ages, forever and ever. Amen.

LOYALTY

18 These are the instructions that I entrust to you in
accordance with the inspired prophecies by which you were
singled out long ago. 19 Serve in the holy crusade with faith
and a good conscience. Certain persons have rejected this duty
and have made shipwreck of their faith, 20 like Hymenaeus and
Alexander, whom I turned over to Satan to punish for their
blasphemies.

CHAPTER 2

PRAYER

1 I urge you first of all to offer supplications, prayers,
entreaties, and thanksgivings for all men, 2 especially for kings
and dignitaries in positions of responsibility that we may live
a quiet and peaceful life with perfect piety and dignity.

3 This is good and pleasing in the sight of God our Savior.
4 He wants all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of
the true religion which can be summarized as follows: 5 There
is only one God. There is only one mediator between God and
men, Jesus Christ the man. 6 He gave himself as a ransom for
all as he testified at the proper time. 7 I have been appointed
a herald and Apostle of his testimony. I have been especially

designated to preach the true faith to the Gentiles. I make no false claims. I am only telling the truth in Christ.

WOMEN

8 I want men everywhere to offer prayer and lift up their hands in holiness without anger and disputes. 9 Likewise, women must dress modestly and sensibly in proper attire. They must not adorn themselves with plaited hair, or gold, or pearls, or expensive garments. 10 Good works are the adornment of women who claim to be pious.

11 Women must listen quietly in church and be perfectly submissive. 12 No woman is allowed to teach or dictate to man. It is her duty to keep silent. 13 For Adam was created first, then Eve. 14 Moreover, it was not Adam, but Eve who was deceived and who fell into sin first. 15 However, women will find salvation in motherhood, if they remain steadfast in faith, love, holiness, and modesty.

CHAPTER 3

THE BISHOP

1 This is a doctrine of our faith: When a man aspires to the office of bishop, he desires an excellent occupation.

2 A bishop must be irreproachable, married only once, temperate, prudent, well-behaved, hospitable, qualified to teach.

3 He must not be a drunkard, nor a brawler, nor a miser. On the contrary, he must be gentle, peace-loving, not money-grasping.

4 He must be a good head of his own family. He must keep his own children under control and perfect discipline. 5 For if a man does not know how to manage his own household, how can he manage the Church of God?

6 He must not be a new convert. Otherwise, he may be inflated by pride and incur the same condemnation as Satan. 7 He must enjoy a good reputation with outsiders. Otherwise, he may get into disgrace and be entrapped by slanderers.

THE DEACON

8 Deacons must be well-behaved, straightforward men. They must not be drunkards, nor avaricious. 9 They must maintain the divine faith with a pure conscience. 10 They must

be tested first. Then, if they prove blameless, they may serve as deacons. 11 Likewise, their wives must be well-behaved, not slanderers, but sober, and perfectly trustworthy.

12 Deacons must be married only once. They must manage well their children and their own families. 13 Those who have served well as deacons earn for themselves a good standing and a great opportunity to proclaim the faith of Jesus Christ.

14 I hope to visit you soon. 15 But I may be delayed. Therefore I am giving you these instructions. So you will know how to behave in the house of God. Remember, it is the Church of the living God, the pillar and bulwark of the divine truth.

16 Indeed, the depth of our religion is tremendous: The Son of God was manifested in the flesh. He was confirmed by the Holy Spirit. He was proclaimed to the Gentiles. He was believed throughout the world. He ascended into heaven in glory.

CHAPTER 4

HERESIES

1 The Holy Spirit expressly tells us that in later times some will turn away from the true faith. 2 They will adopt the doctrines of deceitful spirits and demons. They will follow hypocrites and impostors whose consciences are seared. 3 These false teachers preach abstention from matrimony and from certain kinds of food. But we know that God has created these foods. Therefore they can be thankfully enjoyed by the believers who profess the true religion. 4 Everything God has made is good, and nothing should be rejected. If received with thanksgiving, 5 every food is consecrated by Scriptural lessons and prayers. 6 If you give these instructions to our brethren, you will be a good servant of Jesus Christ, nourished by the doctrines of the faith and the excellent education you have received.

7 Leave profane nursery tales alone. Train yourself in piety. 8 Physical training is profitable to a certain extent. But piety is profitable in every way. It promises blessedness in the present life and also in the life to come.

9 These are doctrines of our faith which must be professed by all believers. 10 It is for this very end that we endure toil and insult. For we have set our hope on the living God who is the Savior of all men, and above all, of those who believe in him.

ZEAL

11 These are the doctrines which you must urge and preach.
12 Do not give cause to the believers to look down on you as
a frivolous young man. On the contrary, see to it that they
look up to you as a model of speech, behavior, charity, spirit,
faith, and purity.

13 Until I come, devote yourself to reading, preaching, and
teaching. 14 Do not neglect the grace which has been granted
to you through prophecy at your ordination when the presbyters
laid their hands on you. 15 Make these studies, practice these
duties, and show to all men how you excel in them. 16 Attend
to yourself and to your mission. Persevere in them. For by so
doing you will achieve salvation for yourself and for your
disciples.

PASTORAL DUTIES

CHAPTER 5

1 Do not reprove an elderly man, but exhort him as a
father. Treat young men like brothers, 2 elderly women like
mothers, young women like sisters with perfect chastity.

WIDOWS

3 Take care of widows who are really dependent. 4 A widow
must be supported by her children and grandchildren. These
must learn first to provide for their own homes and to pay the
debt they owe to their parents. This duty is commendable and
pleasing in the sight of God.

5 Forlorn widows without children must put their trust
in God and devote themselves day and night to prayers and
supplications. 6 Widows who live in luxury are dead while yet
alive. 7 Warn them, and do not let them disgrace themselves.

8 Whoever fails to provide for his own relatives, and
particularly for the members of his own family, has repudiated
his faith automatically, and is worse than an unbeliever.

9 No one under sixty years of age should be enrolled as a
consecrated widow. She must have been married only once.
10 She must enjoy a good reputation for acts of mercy, for
bringing up children, for offering hospitality, for serving the
saints, for relieving the distressed, and for devoting herself to
every kind of charitable work.

11 Refuse to enroll young women as consecrated widows.

For they rebel against Christian discipline, and want to marry again. 12 Thus they incur the guilt of violating their vows of chastity.

13 Moreover, as they go around from house to house, they learn to grow lazy, and not only lazy, but also garrulous, meddlesome, and gossipy. 14 Therefore I wish young widows to remarry, bear children, manage their households, and give our enemies no pretext for reviling us. 15 As a matter of fact, some of those young widows have wandered away after Satan.

16 Every believer, man or woman, who has a widow in the family, must assist her. Thus the Church will be relieved of that burden and will be able to take care of the widows who are really dependent.

PRESBYTERS

17 The presbyters who rule well, and particularly those who work hard in preaching and teaching, must be respected and doubly compensated. 18 For the Scripture says: "You must not muzzle the ox that treads out the corn." And: "The laborer deserves his salary."

19 Take no notice of accusations against a presbyter unless they are supported by two or three witnesses. 20 Reprove the offenders publicly as a warning to the rest. 21 I order you before God, before our Lord Jesus Christ, and before the Holy Angels to observe these rules without favoritism or partiality. 22 Ordain no one in haste. Otherwise you may be making yourself responsible for the sins of another man. Keep yourself pure.

23 You do not need to drink water only. You can use a little wine to relieve your stomach and your frequent spells of illness.

24 Remember that the sins of some men are conspicuous, and are obviously bringing them to judgment. But the sins of others appear later on. 25 Similarly, some good works are evident, while evil deeds, however secret, cannot be entirely concealed.

CHAPTER 6

SLAVES

1 Those who happen to be under the yoke of servitude must treat their masters with the greatest respect for the sake of our God and of our religion. 2 Those who have Christian masters

must not despise them. For they are brethren in the faith. On the contrary, they must serve them more faithfully, because the beneficiaries are beloved believers. Teach and preach these rules.

DISSIDENTS

3 Whoever teaches differently and disregards the sound doctrines of our Lord Jesus Christ and of our religion, 4 is a conceited and ignorant person. He has a morbid craving for speculation and controversy. He causes rivalry, dissension, recriminations, and evil suspicions. 5 He stirs up continual wrangling among depraved men, who have repudiated their true faith, and who hope to make a living out of religion. Keep away from such men.

6 Indeed, our religion is a great source of income for those who live in contentment. 7 After all, we have brought nothing into the world, and we can take nothing with us when we leave it. 8 If we have food and clothing, we should be perfectly satisfied.

GREED

9 Those who want to become rich expose themselves to temptations, to snares, to senseless and wicked desires, which plunge them into ruin and destruction. 10 Love of money is the source of all evils. In their eagerness to get rich, some men have wandered away from the faith and tortured their hearts with untold agonies and pangs. 11 As a godly man, avoid these pitfalls and strive for righteousness, piety, faith, love, patience, and gentleness. 12 Fight the holy crusade of the faith, take hold of everlasting life, to which you have been called, and to which you have boldly professed your allegiance before many witnesses.

13 In the presence of God, who gives life to all creation, and of Jesus Christ, who fearlessly proclaimed the truth before Pontius Pilate, 14 I urge you to keep your doctrine immaculate and irreproachable until the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 This revelation will be brought about at the proper time by the blessed and only Sovereign, the King of Kings, the Lord of Lords. 16 He alone possesses immortality and dwells in unapproachable light. No man has ever seen or can see him. Honor and power to him forever and ever. Amen.

17 Advise the rich of this world not to be haughty. They must not set their hopes on uncertain wealth, but on the living God who generously provides us with every enjoyment. 18 They must do good. They must be rich in good works. They must be liberal and sociable. 19 They must lay up treasures in heaven to inherit everlasting life.

EXHORTATION

20 O Timothy, guard those who have been entrusted to your care. Keep away from the godless and absurd heresy of the Gnostics who falsely claim to possess divine knowledge. 21 Their followers have lost the true faith.

Grace be with you. Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO TIMOTHY

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, the Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God in the service of the promised way of life in Jesus Christ,

2 To Timothy, my beloved son:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

THANKSGIVING

3 I give thanks to the God of my forefathers, whom I serve with a clear conscience, whenever I mention you in my prayers constantly, day and night. I remember the tears you shed at my departure, 4 and I long to see you again. This meeting will fill me with joy.

5 I often think of your unfeigned and whole-hearted faith which you inherited, I am sure, first from your grandmother Lois, then from your mother Eunice.

EXHORTATION

6 For this reason I remind you to rekindle the divine grace which you received at your ordination through the imposition of my hands. 7 God has not given us a spirit of timidity, but of power, love, and self-discipline.

8 Therefore do not be ashamed of testifying for our Lord, and for me. For I am now in prison and chains for his sake. So share my sufferings for the Gospel with the strength that God has given you.

9 For he saved us and called us to a sacred vocation. He did it, not because of our achievements, but for his own purpose through the grace which he bestowed upon us through Jesus Christ according to his eternal dispensation. 10 This revelation has now come to light since our Savior Jesus Christ has appeared

on earth. He annihilated death. He brought us light and immortality through the Gospel, 11 which I have been appointed to proclaim as the Apostle and Evangelizer of the Gentiles.

12 For this Gospel I am now suffering as I do. But I am not ashamed of it. For I know that he is able to guard those he has entrusted to me until his Day.

13 Follow the pattern of the true doctrines you have learned from me with faith and love in Jesus Christ. 14 Guard the good flock which has been entrusted to your care by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

DEFECTIONS AND LOYALTY

15 As you know, all our friends in Asia, Figellus and Hermogenes among them, have turned away from me. 16 But may the Lord have mercy on the household of Onesiphorus. For he often comforted me and was not ashamed of my being in prison. 17 When he was in Rome, he took pains to seek me out and succeeded in finding me. 18 May the Lord help him to find mercy on that Day. You well know in how many ways he helped me also at Ephesus.

CHAPTER 2

SOLDIER OF CHRIST

1 Now, my son, strengthen yourself with the grace of Jesus Christ. 2 All the doctrines which you have heard me expound in public you must in turn entrust to reliable believers who are qualified to teach them to others.

3 Endure suffering like a good soldier of Jesus Christ. 4 As a soldier on duty, you must not be entangled in civilian pursuits. For you must above all serve the commander who enlisted you. 5 As a competing athlete, you must observe the rules of the contest. Otherwise, you can win no crown of victory. 6 As a hard-working farmer, you must be the first one to take your share of the crops.

CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES

7 Meditate on my advice. The Lord will help you to understand its full meaning. 8 Think always of Jesus Christ, descended from the race of David, who rose from the dead according to my Gospel. 9 For this Gospel I am now suffering and wearing

chains like a criminal. But the Gospel of God cannot be chained.

10 Therefore I endure everything for the sake of the elect. For I want them also to obtain the salvation and the eternal glory of Jesus Christ.

11 These are doctrines of our faith: If we have died with Christ, we will also live with him. 12 If we endure, we will also reign with him. If we repudiate him, he will also repudiate us. 13 But even if we are unfaithful, he will always remain faithful. For he cannot deny himself.

14 Remind the believers of these doctrines. Urge them in the name of the Lord to avoid disputes about useless speculations which undermine the faith of the listeners. 15 Try to win the approval of God as his irreproachable servant by preaching the true faith.

FALSE TEACHERS

16 Keep away from profane and meaningless heresies. For their authors promote ungodliness, 17 and their false teaching spreads like gangrene. Hymenaeus and Philetus are among those false teachers. 18 They are perverting the truth. For they claim that the resurrection has already taken place. Thus they undermine the faith of some believers.

19 Nevertheless, the firm foundation of God still stands, bearing the following inscription: "The Lord knows those who belong to him." And again: "Let every true Christian refrain from unrighteousness."

LOYAL SERVANTS

20 In a large household there are, not only vessels of gold and silver, but also wooden and earthen vessels. The former are used for noble ceremonies, and the latter for unsavory chores.

21 A man who keeps himself clean from the contamination of unsavory vices will become a noble vessel, consecrated and serviceable for the Master, fully prepared for every honorable service, for which he has been foreordained.

22 So turn away from youthful passions. Pursue righteousness, faith, charity, and peace with all the sincere followers of the Lord.

23 Avoid silly and absurd controversies. You know that they lead inevitably to quarrels. 24 A servant of the Lord must not be quarrelsome. He must be kindly, persuasive, and tolerant toward all. 25 He must correct his opponents with gentleness.

He must remember that God may enable them to repent, to acknowledge the truth, 26 and to escape from the snares, by which the devil has held them prisoners to his will.

CHAPTER 3

DISCIPLES OF ANTICHRIST

1 You must realize that terrible times will come in the last days. 2 Men will be selfish, greedy, arrogant, haughty, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy. 3 They will be inhuman, ruthless, slanderous, dissolute, fierce, and wicked. 4 They will be treacherous, reckless, conceited, voluptuous, and impious. 5 They will be outwardly religious, but inwardly agnostic. Turn away from such men.

6 Some of these men sneak into families and captivate dissolute women, who are burdened by sin and swayed by violent passions, 7 who are forever inquiring but never achieving knowledge of the truth. 8 Like Jannes and Mambres who opposed Moses, so these men of depraved mind and counterfeit faith oppose the true religion. 9 But they will not make much progress. Like their predecessors, they will be soon detected. For their folly will be exposed to all men.

PAUL'S DOCTRINES

10 But you have followed my teaching, my guidance, my purpose, my faith, my endurance, my love, my patience, 11 my persecutions, and my sufferings. You know what happened to me in Antioch, in Iconium, in Lystra, and what persecutions I underwent in these cities. But the Lord rescued me from all of them. 12 Indeed, all those who want to live piously in Jesus Christ will be persecuted.

13 Wicked men and impostors will go on from bad to worse, deceiving others and deceiving themselves. 14 Therefore hold fast to the doctrines you have been taught and firmly believed. You know who taught them to you. 15 Moreover, from childhood you have been acquainted with the Holy Scriptures which show you the way to salvation through faith in Jesus Christ.

16 All our Holy Scriptures are inspired by God. They are useful in many ways. They teach us. They expose our errors. They correct our faults. They train us in righteousness. 17 They

enable all godly men to be completely equipped for every good work.

CHAPTER 4

EXHORTATION

1 In the presence of God and of our Lord Jesus Christ who will judge the living and the dead, in the name of his epiphany and of his Kingdom, I solemnly urge you: 2 Preach the Gospel with perseverance, under favorable or unfavorable circumstances. Persuade, reprove, exhort, and teach with unfailing patience.

3 The time is coming when men will not tolerate our holy doctrine. They will recruit teachers who will pander to their cravings and tickle their fancies. 4 They will turn away from the truth and will wander after myths.

5 Therefore be always vigilant, endure suffering, and fulfill your ministry.

THE REWARD

6 As for me, I feel that my life-blood is poured out in sacrifice. Undoubtedly, the time of my departure is impending. 7 I have competed in the glorious contest. I have run my race. I have fulfilled my mission. 8 Now I look forward to the crown of righteousness which is waiting for me. The Lord, as a righteous judge, will grant it on that Day, not only to me, but also to all those who have longed for his manifestation.

FINAL INSTRUCTIONS

9 Do your best to come to me quickly. 10 Demas has deserted me for love of the present world and has gone to Salonica. Crescens has left for Galatia, and Titus for Dalmatia. 11 Luke alone is with me. Get Mark and bring him with you. For he will be useful for my ministry. 12 By the way, I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. 13 When you come, bring me the cloak, the books, and especially the parchments I have left with Carpus at Troas.

14 Alexander the coppersmith has done me a good deal of harm. May the Lord reward him according to his deeds. 15 Beware of him yourself. For he was bitterly opposed to our doctrine.

HIS TRIAL

16 No one came to help me when I first appeared in court
to defend myself. Everybody deserted me. God forgive them.
17 But the Lord himself stood by me and gave me power to
proclaim the Gospel publicly and let all the Gentiles hear it.
So I was saved from the lion's mouth.

18 I am sure the Lord will rescue me from every harm
and bring me safely to his heavenly Kingdom. To him be glory
forever and ever. Amen.

GREETINGS

19 Greet Prisca, Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.
20 Erastus stayed in Corinth, but I left Trophimus sick in
Miletus.

21 Do your best to come before winter. Eubulus, Pudens,
Linus, Claudia, and all the brethren send you greetings.

22 Our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be
with you. Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO TITUS

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, the servant of God; the Apostle of Jesus Christ; the promoter of the faith of the elect of God; the teacher of the true religion, 2 based on the hope of everlasting life; the expounder of the promises, which the truthful God has made ages ago, 3 and has revealed at the appointed time; the preacher of the divine Gospel, accredited by the decree of God our Savior;

4 To Titus, my true son in our common faith:

Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father and from insubordination.

PRESBYTERS

5 I left you behind in Crete expressly to remedy deficiencies and to appoint presbyters in every city, as I directed you. 6 They must be irreproachable, married only once, the fathers of Christian children, who cannot be accused of profligacy or our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

BISHOPS

7 As a steward of God, a bishop must be blameless. He must not be arrogant, nor irascible, nor a drunkard, nor violent, nor avaricious. 8 On the contrary, he must be hospitable, kindly, prudent, righteous, holy, and continent. 9 He must hold firm to the true doctrine according to the holy tradition, so that he may be able to teach it correctly and to confute those who oppose it.

THE JEWISH CHRISTIANS

10 There are many unruly charlatans and impostors, especially among the Jewish Christians 11 who must be silenced. They upset the faith of whole families by teaching them dissident doctrines for the sake of base profit.

12 A philosopher said about his own fellow countrymen:
"All Cretans are liars, savage brutes, and lazy gluttons." 13 This
testimony is true for the Cretans and the Jews as well. Therefore
reprove them sharply, and teach them the true doctrine. 14 Tell
them not to pay any attention to Jewish myths and to
commandments of men who have repudiated the true faith.

FOOD

15 Everything is pure to the pure. But nothing is pure to
the corrupted and the unbelieving. For their very minds and
consciences are corrupted. 16 They claim to know God. But they
deny him by their actions. They are abominable, unruly, and
useless for any good work.

CHAPTER 2

PASTORAL DUTIES

1 Therefore it is your duty to preach the true doctrine
according to the holy tradition. 2 Teach elderly men to be sober,
dignified, prudent, soundly established in faith, in charity, and
in patience.

3 Likewise, elderly women must be saintly in behavior.
They must not be slanderers, nor heavy drinkers. They must
be able teachers. 4 For they must train the young women to
love their husbands and their children, 5 to be sober, chaste,
good housekeepers, gentle, and submissive to their husbands.
Thus the Gospel of God will not be discredited.

6 Moreover, urge the young men to be sober. 7 Show your-
self always a model of good works to them. Teach them integrity,
dignity, 8 sound and blameless speech. Thus our opponents will
be put to shame and find no pretext to revile us.

9 Urge slaves to obey their masters and try to please them
in every respect. 10 They must not be refractory and rapacious.
On the contrary, they must be perfectly faithful to their masters.
Thus they will render a splendid service to the doctrine of
God our Savior.

CHRISTIAN LIFE

11 God has manifested his grace to all men, and taught us
how to achieve salvation. 12 We must renounce ungodliness and
earthly passions. We must live soberly, righteously, and piously

in this world. 13 We must await blissfully and hopefully the second epiphany of our great and glorious God and Savior Jesus Christ.

14 For he offered himself in sacrifice for us. He redeemed us from all iniquity. He purified us as his chosen people. He made us zealous for noble actions. 15 Preach, urge, and insist upon these doctrines with full authority. All the believers must obey you.

CHAPTER 3

CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES

1 Urge all our brethren to be submissive and obedient to the constituted authorities, to be ready for every good work, 2 to speak evil of no one, to be peaceful, gentle, and perfectly polite to all men. 3 For once we ourselves were unwise, disobedient, misguided, slaves to various passions and vices, living in malice and envy, odious, and hating one another.

4 But God our Savior has manifested his goodness and his lovingkindness. 5 He saved us, not because of the righteous actions we have performed, but through his own mercy. He regenerated us through baptism. 6 He gave us a new life by pouring out his Holy Spirit abundantly upon us through our Savior Jesus Christ. 7 Thus we have been justified by his grace and have become heirs in the hope of everlasting life.

8 These are doctrines of our faith, and I want you to insist upon them. Then those who have believed in God will take care to concentrate on good actions which are helpful and profitable to all men.

9 Keep away from silly speculations, pedigrees, controversies, and contentions about the Law, which are unprofitable and futile. 10 Give a heretic a first and second admonition. Then avoid his company. 11 You can be sure that such a person is perverted, sinful, and self-condemned.

INSTRUCTIONS

12 When I send Artemas or Tychicus to you, do your best to come and meet me at Nicopolis. For there I have decided to spend the winter. 13 Do all you can to provide Zenas the lawyer and Apollos with what is necessary for their journey. See to it that they lack nothing.

14 Teach our brethren to practice good actions. Thus they

will be enabled to help cases of urgent need and do some fruitful work.

GREETINGS

15 All my companions send you greetings. Give our greetings to all our friends in our common faith.

The grace of God be with you all. Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO PHILEMON

INTRODUCTION

1 Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, and our brother Timothy,
To Philemon, our beloved fellow worker; 2 to our sister Apphia; to Archippus, our fellow crusader; and to the Church in your house:

3 Grace to you and peace from God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

THANKSGIVING

4 I always give thanks to God when I remember you in my prayers. 5 I am glad to hear of the love and faith you show towards our Lord Jesus and towards all the saints. 6 May this common faith promote your knowledge of all our blessings in Christ. 7 For I have derived a great joy and comfort from your love, my dear brother, because you have cheered the hearts of the saints.

PLEA FOR ONESIMUS

8 Consequently, although I am fully entitled in Christ to order you, I prefer for the sake of love to request you to do a work of mercy.

9 So I, Paul, an old man, imprisoned for the sake of Jesus Christ, 10 I entreat you for my son Onesimus whom I have adopted during my imprisonment. 11 I know you have found him useless in the past. But he is going to be useful now to you and to me. 12 So I am sending him back to you. Receive him as my beloved son.

13 I would prefer to keep him with me. He could serve me in my captivity for the Gospel as your delegate. 14 But I cannot keep him here without your consent. And I do not want to accept from you a favor which is not spontaneous, but forced by circumstances.

15 Perhaps you lost him for a while, in order to regain him forever, 16 no longer as a slave, but far more than a slave.

For now he is a dear brother in Christ, especially to me, and much more to you in the flesh and in the Lord.

17 If you consider me your close friend, receive him as you would me. 18 If he has caused you any loss, or if he owes any debt, then charge it to my account. 19 I, Paul, write this with my own hand, and I hereby promise to repay you.

20 I hardly need to mention the fact that you owe me your salvation. Yes, brother, I want some reward from you in the name of the Lord. Cheer up my heart for the sake of Christ.

21 I write you because I am sure you will obey me. I know that you will do even more than I ask. 22 By the way, prepare a guest room for me. For I hope through your prayers to visit you.

GREETINGS

23 Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Jesus Christ, 24 Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow workers, send you greetings.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

THE EPISTLE OF SAINT PAUL TO THE HEBREWS

CHAPTER 1

THE SON OF GOD

1 God spoke to our forefathers in old times through the Prophets in many places and in various ways. 2 In these latter days he has spoken to us through his Son, whom he appointed heir of the universe and through whom he created the world. 3 He is the reflection of the divine glory and substance. He upholds all creation through the powerful mandate of God. He has cleansed man from sin. He sits at the right hand of God in heaven.

4 He is superior to the Angels, and his name is more distinguished than theirs. 5 God never said to any of his Angels what he said to him: "You are my Son. I have begotten you today." Again: "I will be his Father, and he will be my Son." 6 And again, when he introduces this first-born Son into the universe, he says: "All the Angels of God will bow before him." 7 Speaking of the Angels, he says: "The winds are his angels, and the lightnings are his servants."

8 Speaking of his Son, he says: "Your throne, O Lord, is forever and ever. The scepter of your kingdom is a scepter of righteousness. 9 You have loved righteousness and you have hated iniquity. Therefore God, your God, has anointed you with the sacred oil above your companions."

10 Again: "In the beginning, O Lord, you laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands. 11 They will perish, but you will always remain. They will all grow old, as garments. 12 You will roll them up as a mantle, and you will change them. But you are always the same, and your years will have no end."

13 God has never said to any of his Angels: "Sit at my right hand until I put your enemies under your feet." 14 Yet they are all ministers who are sent forth to serve and help men to obtain salvation.

CHAPTER 2

SALVATION

1 Therefore we must pay close attention to the doctrines
we have heard and not allow ourselves to drift away from them.
2 For the message delivered by the Prophets of old proved to
be authentic. Every transgression and disobedience received a
just retribution.

3 Consequently, we cannot escape punishment if we neglect
such an opportunity for our salvation. This salvation was pro-
claimed at first by the Lord himself. Then it was confirmed to
us by the Apostles who heard him. 4 Moreover, God himself
endorsed their testimony by signs, by wonders, by various
miracles, and by gifts of the Holy Spirit, which were distributed
according to his own will.

THE SAVIOR

5 Now God did not put the future world of which we speak
under the control of Angels. 6 The Scripture has affirmed it,
saying: "What is man that you think of him, or the Son of
Man that you exalt him? 7 You have made him a little lower
than the Angels. You crowned him with glory and honor. You
set him over the works of your hands. 8 You subjected the
entire universe under his feet." So the Scripture tells us clearly
that the entire universe without any exception was put under
the sovereignty of man. This, as we know, has never happened.

9 On the other hand, we know for sure that Jesus for a
little while was made lower than the Angels, and that he was
crowned with glory and honor by suffering death. Thus by the
grace of God he experienced bitter death on behalf of every
human being.

10 That was the predetermined dispensation of God, the
Creator of the universe: Jesus, the champion of our salvation,
had to achieve perfection through his Passion, and lead the
chosen children of God to everlasting glory.

CHRIST THE MAN

11 Now Christ who sanctifies men and the men who are
sanctified by him share a common humanity. For this reason
he proudly calls them his brethren, 12 saying: "I will proclaim
your name to my brethren, and I will praise you in the midst

of the congregation." 13 Again, he says: "I will put my trust in God." And again, he says: "Here I am with the children that God has given me."

14 Therefore, since the children have the same mortal nature of flesh and blood, Christ himself shared it likewise. For he wanted through his own death to overthrow the devil who has the power of death, 15 and deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage.

16 Surely he was not concerned with the Angels, but with the descendants of Abraham. 17 Therefore he had to become similar to his brethren in every respect. He wanted to assume the office of a merciful and faithful high priest in the service of God and to offer expiation for the sins of the people. 18 For as he himself has endured suffering and temptation, he is able to help those who are tempted.

CHAPTER 3

CHRIST THE HIGH PRIEST

1 Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly call, contemplate Jesus, the messenger and high priest of our confession. 2 He was faithful to God who appointed him, as Moses had been faithful in the house of God. 3 Yet Jesus has been considered worthy of greater glory than Moses, because the builder of a house deserves more honor than the house itself. 4 Now every house is built by a man, but the builder of the universe is God himself.

5 The loyalty of Moses was that of a servant in the household of God. He prophesied what was revealed later on. 6 But the loyalty of Christ was that of a Son set over his own household. We are members of this household, if we boldly and proudly maintain to the very end our unshaken loyalty to Christ and his Gospel.

7 Therefore the Holy Spirit tells us in the Scriptures: "Today, when you hear my voice, obey me. 8 Do not follow the example of your stubborn forefathers who provoked me and challenged me in the desert. 9 Yes, your forefathers put me to the test, although they saw my works for forty years. 10 Therefore I was exasperated with that generation, and I said: 'Their minds are always blinded, and they will never understand my precepts.' 11 So I swore in my anger: 'They will never enter my heavenly rest.' "

UNBELIEF

12 Brethren, see to it that no one of you becomes so wicked and unbelieving as to fall away from the living God. 13 Therefore urge one another every day, as long as you have days, and make sure that no one of you is blinded by the delusion of sin.

14 For we are partners of Christ if we really keep our first conviction firm to the end. 15 The Scripture says: "Today, when you hear the voice of the Lord, obey. Do not turn away as in the day of the rebellion." 16 Now who were those who heard, and yet were rebellious? Of course, those who left Egypt under the leadership of Moses.

17 Now with whom was God exasperated for forty years? Of course, with the sinners whose corpses fell in the desert. 18 And to whom did he swear that they would never enter his rest? Of course, to those who disobeyed him. 19 So we see that they were unable to enter his heavenly rest because of their unbelief.

CHAPTER 4

THE PROMISED LAND

1 Although the same promise of rest is offered to us, I warn you that some of us may fail to achieve it. 2 True, they received the Gospel, just as we did. Yet the proclamation of the Gospel did not profit them, because when they heard it, they did not believe it. 3 We enter his rest only if we believe. For the Lord said: "As I swore in my wrath, they will never enter my heavenly rest." Now his work was finished when the world was created. 4 For he has spoken of the seventh day in this way: "And God rested on the seventh day from all his labors."

5 And again in this passage he said: "They will never enter my heavenly rest." 6 Therefore it remains for some to enter it in the future, because those who received the Gospel in the past failed to enter it on account of their disobedience. 7 So he proclaims another opportunity when he says through David many years later: "Today, when you hear my voice, obey me."

8 It is clear that Joshua had not given our forefathers this rest. Otherwise, the Lord would not have said at a much later date: "Today." 9 Therefore the hope of a heavenly rest is still there for the people of God. 10 For everyone who enters this rest will rest from all his labors, as God has done from his.

11 Therefore let us all strive eagerly to enter that rest. None of us should miss it through disobedience, as our forefathers did. 12 For the message of God is a living and active force. It is sharper than a two-edged sword. It cuts through soul and spirit, through joints and marrow, through the thoughts and intentions of all minds.

13 No creature can be hidden from the sight of God. Everything is naked and exposed before his all-seeing eyes.

THE GREAT HIGH PRIEST

14 Now we have a great High Priest who has passed through the heavens, Jesus, the Son of God. Therefore let us cling to the religion we profess. 15 For we have, not a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our sufferings, but one who has been through every trial like ourselves, yet without sinning. 16 Therefore let us approach his gracious throne fearlessly to receive mercy, grace, and support in the hour of need.

CHAPTER 5

THE ETERNAL HIGH PRIEST

1 Every high priest is chosen from among men. He is appointed by men for divine worship to offer gifts and sacrifices for sins. 2 He can deal gently with the ignorant and misguided, since he himself is subject to weakness. 3 For this reason, he is obliged to offer sacrifices for sins, not only for the people, but for himself as well.

4 No one takes this office upon himself unless he is called by God, as Aaron was. 5 Even Christ did not invest himself with the glory of the high priest. On the contrary, he was invested by God, who said to him: "You are my Son. Today I have begotten you." 6 He also said in another passage: "You are a priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek."

7 During his earthly life Christ appealed to God with tearful prayers and agonizing entreaties to save him from death. God granted his petition because of his piety. 8 But although he was the Son of God, he had to practice obedience and to achieve perfection through suffering. 9 Thus he became the dispenser of eternal salvation to all those who obey him. 10 For God himself greeted him as a high priest according to the order of Melchizedek.

11 We have much to say about Melchizedek, which is hard

to explain to you, because your minds have become dull. 12 For although by this time you ought to be teachers, you still need someone to teach you again the first elements of divine revelation. You need milk, not solid food.

13 Now children living on milk are immature, and cannot understand the doctrine of righteousness. 14 But grown-up men eating solid food should be mature, and trained to distinguish good from evil.

CHAPTER 6

ADVANCED INSTRUCTION

1 Therefore let us leave the first elements of Christianity alone and go up to more advanced doctrines. We must not be laying over and over again the foundations, namely repudiation of lifeless observances, faith in God, 2 baptism, ordination, resurrection of the dead, and last judgment. 3 With the permission of God we must go on and build up further.

THE APOSTATES

4 Remember that we can do nothing for the apostates. They were once baptized. They partook of the Holy Communion. They received the Holy Spirit. 5 They enjoyed the noble message of God. They hoped for the blessedness of the world to come. 6 Then they fell away to apostasy. It is impossible to arouse them to a new repentance. For by their own act they have crucified the Son of God for a second time. They have openly disgraced him for their own ends.

7 A piece of ground which absorbs the rain showered upon it has the blessing of God, if it produces useful crops to those who cultivate it. 8 If it produces thorns and thistles, it is worthless and almost accursed. Ultimately it will be burned.

PROGRESS

9 Although I warn you, I feel sure that you, my dear friends, can do better and more for your salvation. 10 But God is not unjust. He does not forget the work you have done in the past and the love you have showed for his sake in serving the saints, as you still do.

11 I want each one of you to exhibit the same earnestness to the very end. 12 So do not be sluggish, but follow the example

of those who inherit the promises of God through faith and endurance.

THE DIVINE PROMISE

13 When God made a promise to Abraham, he swore by
himself. For there was no one greater by whom he could swear,
14 and said: "Surely I will bless you and multiply you." 15 Thus
Abraham, after waiting patiently, obtained the fulfillment of
the divine promise.

16 Men swear by one greater than themselves, and their
oath is a final confirmation in all their disputes. 17 God wished
to show to the heirs of his promise the unchangeable nature
of his decision. So he pledged himself by an oath. 18 God never
meant to deceive us with these two assurances, his promise and
his oath, which are irrevocable. He wanted to give a powerful
encouragement to those who had fled for refuge under his shelter.

19 He wanted us to seize upon the hope set before us as
a sure and firm anchor of the soul. It is a hope which penetrates
the inner sanctuary of the temple behind the curtain. 20 Jesus
has gone there as a forerunner on our behalf, after he
became a high priest forever according to the order of
Melchizedek.

CHAPTER 7

MELCHIZEDEK

1 Melchizedek was king of Salem and priest of God. He met
and blessed Abraham when the latter was returning from the
defeat of the kings. 2 As a tribute, Abraham gave him a tenth
part of all the spoils of battle. His name means "first king of
righteousness" and king of Salem means "king of peace." 3 He
had no father, no mother, no family tree. He had neither
beginning of days, nor end of life. He resembles the Son of God
as a perpetual priest.

4 See how great he is. Even Abraham the patriarch gave
him a tenth part of his spoils as a tribute. 5 According to the
Law, the descendants of Levi who accept the office of priest
have the right to collect tithes from the people, that is to say
from their brethren, who also are descendants of Abraham.

6 But this man, who is not descended from Levi, received
tithes from Abraham and blessed this patriarch who had received
the promises of God.

LEVITICAL PRIESTHOOD

7 Now the man who receives a blessing is unquestionably
inferior to the one who gives it. 8 As a rule, priests, who are
subject to death, receive tithes. But in this case it was a priest
who, we are assured, goes on living. 9 As a matter of fact, even
Levi, the receiver of tithes, paid him tithes through Abraham.
10 For in a sense he existed within the body of his forefather
when Melchizedek met him.

11 Obviously perfection could not be achieved through the
Levitical priesthood under which the Jews received the Law.
Otherwise, there would have been no need for a priest after the
order of Melchizedek to take the place of a priest after the
order of Aaron. 12 For when there is a change in the succession
of the priesthood, there is necessarily a change in the Law as
well.

13 Christ, who is described as our High Priest, belongs to
another tribe. No member of that tribe has ever officiated at
the altar. 14 As a matter of fact, Jesus was descended from
the tribe of Judah, which had no connection with the priesthood
according to Moses.

15 The point becomes still more evident in view of the fact
that the appointment of Jesus as the new high priest resembles
that of Melchizedek. 16 For he is appointed, not for possessing
the legal qualification of physical descent, but by virtue of his
immortal life. 17 For the Scripture testifies: "You are a priest
forever after the order of Melchizedek."

PRIESTHOOD OF CHRIST

18 Indeed, a previous commandment has been cancelled on
account of its weakness and uselessness. 19 For the Law brought
nothing to perfection. It was replaced by a better hope through
which we draw near to God.

20 It is a better hope, because it is guaranteed by an oath.
21 Others became priests without taking an oath. But Jesus
became a priest with a solemn oath, as the Scripture says: "The
Lord declared with an irrevocable oath: 'You are a priest forever
after the order of Melchizedek.' " 22 By virtue of his oath, Jesus
became the eternal guarantee of a better covenant.

23 Moreover, the former priests were many in number,
because death prevented them from continuing in office. 24 But
Jesus lives forever and is not succeeded by another in his

priesthood. 25 Therefore he can always save those who draw near to God through him. For he always lives and intercedes for them.

SINLESS AND ETERNAL

26 Such was the divine High Priest we needed: Holy, innocent, immaculate, sinless, exalted above the heavens. 27 He has no need, like those human high priests, to offer sacrifices daily, first for his own sins and then for those of the people. He made one sacrifice for all mankind when he offered himself once for all.

28 The Law of Moses appoints to the high priesthood men full of imperfections. But God, according to his oath, which came long after the Law, appointed his own Son, fully qualified to be a high priest forever.

CHAPTER 8

A HEAVENLY PRIEST

1 The main point of what I am saying is the following: Now we have such a divine High Priest. He is seated at the right hand of the majestic throne of God in heaven. 2 He is officiating as the priest of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle, which has been built, not by human hands, but by God himself.

3 Every high priest is appointed to offer gifts and sacrifices. Consequently, as a high priest, Jesus also must fulfill these duties of his office. 4 If he were still living on earth, he would not be a priest. For there are human priests who offer gifts according to the Law.

5 Now the service of these human priests is only a shadow and imitation of the divine worship in heaven. For this reason Moses, when he was going to build the tabernacle, received this warning from the Lord who told him: "Be sure to make everything in accordance with the pattern I have shown you on the mountain."

THE NEW COVENANT

6 Jesus has been entrusted with a far higher ministry. For he is the dispenser of a superior New Testament, based on nobler promises from heaven.

7 If the old covenant had been unimpeachable, there would

have been no need for a new one. 8 But God himself impeached it and denounced our forefathers for its invalidation, saying:

"The day will come, when I will conclude a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah.

9 "This new covenant will be different from the covenant I made with their forefathers on the day when I took them by the hand and led them out from the land of Egypt. For they themselves repudiated my old covenant. So I had to repudiate them also.

10 "Now, this is the new covenant I will make with the house of Israel in the future, says the Lord. I will impress my laws into their minds, and I will inscribe them upon their hearts. Then I will be their God, and they will be my people.

11 "Then they will not have to teach their neighbors and their brethren to know the Lord. For they will all know me from the lowest to the greatest of them. 12 Then I will forgive their iniquities, and I will forget their sins and trespasses forever."

13 Obviously the Lord promises a new covenant, because he considers the old one obsolete. Now whatever is old and obsolete will be discarded sooner or later.

CHAPTER 9

THE EARTHLY SANCTUARY

1 The Old Testament had regulations for divine worship in an earthly sanctuary.

2 There was an outer tabernacle called the Sanctuary. It contained the candlestick, the table, and the oblation bread.

3 Beyond the second curtain there was another tabernacle, called the Inner Sanctuary, 4 with the golden altar of incense and the ark of the covenant covered on all sides with gold. It contained the golden urn with the manna, the rod of Aaron which budded, and the stone tablets of the covenant. 5 A representation of the Cherubim of glory overshadowed the mercy seat of the ark. I cannot now speak in detail of these tabernacles and their contents. 6 But this was the general arrangement. The officiating priests entered the outer tabernacle at all times and performed their ritual ceremonies. 7 But only once every year the high priest alone entered the Inner Sanctuary and offered a sacrifice of blood for his own sins and those of the people.

8 The Holy Spirit indicates that the way to the Inner
Sanctuary was not yet open so long as the first tabernacle was
still standing, 9 because it symbolized the present world. The
gifts and sacrifices which are offered according to this ritual
cannot cleanse the soul of the worshiper. 10 For they are merely
outward observances, dealing with food and drink and various
ablutions. They were intended to be in force only until the time
of the new order.

THE HEAVENLY SANCTUARY

11 But now Christ has appeared as the High Priest of the
blessings to come. He has passed through a greater and more
perfect tabernacle which was not made by human hands and
does not belong to the present world. He entered once for all
the Inner Sanctuary, 12 not with the blood of goats and calves,
but with his own blood, and achieved our eternal redemption.

13 The Jews believe that the ceremonial sprinkling with
the blood of bulls and goats and with the ashes of a heifer
purifies the flesh of defiled persons. 14 If so, then the blood of
Christ, who offered himself to God through the Holy Spirit as
the immaculate sacrifice, will much more surely cleanse your
souls from all deadly sins and enable you to serve the living God.

THE REDEEMER

15 For this reason Christ became the mediator of the New
Testament. Through his death the transgressors of the Old
Testament have been redeemed, and the chosen heirs have
obtained their promised inheritance.

16 As you well know, when a testament is concerned, the
death of the testator must first occur. 17 For a testament is
valid only after the death of the testator. It has no force while
the testator is alive.

18 As a matter of fact, the Old Testament also was ratified
with blood. 19 For when Moses had promulgated all the
commandments of the Law to all the people, he took the blood
of the sacrificed calves and goats with water, scarlet wool, and
hyssop, sprinkled the Book of the Law and all the people, 20 and
said: "This is the blood of the Testament which God has
commanded me to make for you."

21 Likewise, Moses sprinkled with the blood the tabernacle
and all the vessels of divine worship. 22 Indeed, according to

the Law, everything is purified with blood, and without blood there is no remission of sins.

23 Now, if such sacrifices were needed for the mere earthly copies of the heavenly dispensations, then by far nobler sacrifices are required for the original heavenly dispensations themselves.

24 For Christ has entered, not into a sanctuary built by human hands, a copy of the original one, but into heaven itself, and appeared in the presence of God himself. 25 He did not go in to offer himself repeatedly, as the high priest enters the shrine every year with blood of animals. 26 For then he would have had to suffer death over and over again, since the creation of the world. He has appeared once for all at the consummation of the ages to abolish sin by offering himself in sacrifice.

27 Just as men are destined to be judged after their death, 28 so also Christ, after his sacrifice for the remission of the sins of mankind, will appear again, not to deal with sin, but to save those who are waiting for him.

CHAPTER 10

A SINGLE SACRIFICE

1 The Law contains only a shadow of the blessings Christ would bring, and does not fully express their reality. For instance, the same sacrifices are offered under the Law continually every year. But they can never cleanse the souls of the worshipers.

2 Otherwise, they would have been discontinued. If the worshipers had once been purified, they would have had no further consciousness of sin. 3 Yet these sacrifices reminded them year after year that their sins were still burdening their souls. 4 For it was impossible to take away sins through the ceremonial sprinkling with the blood of bulls and goats.

5 Therefore, when Christ came into the world, he said to God according to the Scripture: 6 "You do not desire sacrifice and offerings, but you have fashioned my body for your service. Consequently, since you take no pleasure in burned offerings and sacrifices for sins, 7 I said: 'See, I have come to do your will, O Lord, as it is written in your Holy Book.' "

8 After saying first that God neither desires nor takes pleasure in sacrifices and burnt offerings for sin which are prescribed by the Law, 9 Christ then added: "See, I have come to do your will." That means that he abolished the old

ritual of sacrifices, in order to establish a new dispensation of doing the will of God. 10 In accordance with this divine will, we have been sanctified by the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 Under the Law, every priest is celebrating his service daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices which can never take away sins.

12 Under the new dispensation, Christ offered a single sacrifice in perpetuity. Then he sat down at the right hand of God. 13 He is now only waiting until his enemies are put under his feet. 14 For by a single sacrifice he has cleansed and sanctified his followers for all time.

15 The Holy Spirit gives us his testimony by saying in the Scripture first: 16 "This is the new covenant I will make with them in the future, says the Lord. I will impress my laws into their hearts, and I will inscribe them upon their minds." Then he adds: 17 "I will forget their sins and trespasses forever." 18 Consequently, when sins are remitted by God, there is no longer any room for any sacrifice for sin.

19 Now we can boldly enter the sanctuary through the blood of Jesus. 20 For he has opened for us a new and living way through the curtain, that is to say through his flesh. 21 Moreover, now we have a Great Priest over the house of God. 22 Therefore let us approach with a sincere heart and with a perfect faith. For now, through the sprinkling of his blood, our souls have been cleansed from an evil conscience. Our bodies have been purified through the water of baptism.

23 With this assurance let us cling to the hope we profess without the slightest hesitation. For God who has given us this promise is trustworthy. 24 Let us consider how to stimulate one another to charity and good works. 25 Let us not neglect to meet together, as some do. But let us encourage one another all the more, as you can see that the great day is drawing near.

THE LAST JUDGMENT

26 For if we sin deliberately, after we have known and accepted the true faith, we have no hope of salvation through a sacrifice for sins. 27 All we can expect is the terrifying judgment and the blazing fire which will devour the enemies of God.

28 A man who has violated the Law of Moses is put to death without mercy at the testimony of two or three witnesses.

29 Consequently, you can imagine that the adequate punishment would be much worse for a man who has spurned the Son of God, who has profaned the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified, and who reviled the Holy Spirit and the divine grace.

30 We know that he said: "Vengeance is mine. I will punish." And again: "The Lord will judge his people." 31 Indeed, it is a fearful experience to fall into the hands of the living God.

PERSEVERANCE

32 Remember the early days of your conversion and enlightenment. You had to endure a great struggle with persecution. 33 Sometimes you yourselves were publicly exposed to abuse and affliction. Sometimes you shared the sufferings of your brethren who were similarly treated.

34 For instance, you showed your sympathy with those who were imprisoned like me. You accepted cheerfully the confiscation of your property, because you knew that you had a greater reward in heaven.

35 Do not lose your courage now, for you will be richly rewarded. 36 You need to endure, if you want to do the will of God and inherit his promised Kingdom. 37 For as the Scripture says: "In a very little while the Messiah is coming. He will not linger on the way. 38 Remember that the righteous man must live by faith. If he shrinks back, my heart can take no pleasure in him."

39 Certainly we are not men who shrink back and perish. We are men who have faith and can save our souls.

CHAPTER 11

OLD TESTAMENT EXAMPLES

1 Now faith gives us confidence in what we hope for, and insight in what we cannot see. 2 It was by faith that men of old obtained the approval of God.

3 Faith enables us to understand how the universe was created by the command of God, and how what we see took its origin from what we do not see.

ABEL

4 Through faith Abel offered a more acceptable sacrifice in the sight of God than Cain. Through faith he won the approval

of God as a righteous man. For God himself found pleasure in his offerings. Through faith he is still speaking to us after his death.

ENOCH

5 Through faith Enoch was transferred to heaven without experiencing death. He could not be found, because God had taken him up. Before this event he was attested as having pleased God. 6 Without faith it is impossible to please him. For everyone who comes near to God must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who try to find him.

NOAH

7 Through faith Noah was warned by God of the impending disaster and reverently constructed an Ark to save his household. All the others were destroyed for their unbelief, whereas he won justification through faith.

ABRAHAM

8 Through faith Abraham obeyed the command to proceed to a region which he was to receive as an inheritance. He left his home without knowing where he was going. 9 Through faith he dwelt in the land of the promise as in a foreign country. He lived in tents with Isaac and Jacob who shared the promise with him. 10 For he was looking forward to that city with the firm foundations whose architect and builder was God himself.

SARAH

11 Through faith Sarah herself was enabled to conceive, and she gave birth to a child despite her advanced age, because she believed that God had the power to fulfill the promises he had given her.

12 So it happened that one man, who was considered as good as dead on account of his age, became the forefather of a race as numerous as the sands of the sea-shore.

THE HEAVENLY HOME

13 All these people lived all their lives in faith, and died without obtaining the divine promises. They only saw them, believed in them, and greeted them from afar. They proclaimed

that they were only foreigners and strangers on the earth.
14 Men who make such statements mean that they are looking
for their true home-land. 15 They were not thinking of the land
they had left behind. For they had ample opportunity to return.
16 They were longing for a better country, namely a heavenly
one. Therefore the Lord was proud to be called their God and
has prepared for them a home in heaven.

ABRAHAM'S TRIAL

17 Through faith Abraham, when he was put to the test,
offered up Isaac. Abraham, who received the promises from God,
was ready to sacrifice his only son, 18 of whom he had been told:
"Your posterity will arise through Isaac." 19 He believed that
God could raise his son from the dead. Indeed, figuratively, he
received him back from death.

ISAAC, JACOB, JOSEPH

20 Through faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning
their future. 21 Through faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed
each one of the sons of Joseph, and bowed in worship over the
top of his staff. 22 Through faith Joseph, at the end of his life,
foretold the exodus to the sons of Israel, and gave directions
about his burial.

MOSES

23 Through faith Moses was hidden by his parents for
three months after his birth. For they saw that the child was
beautiful and they disregarded the edict of the king.

24 Through faith Moses refused to be called the son of
Pharaoh's daughter, when he was grown up. 25 He preferred to
share the hardships of the people of God rather than enjoy
the temporary pleasures of sin. 26 He considered Christian
martyrdom more precious than all the treasures of Egypt. For
he was looking forward to the ultimate reward in heaven.

27 Through faith Moses defied the fury of the king and
left Egypt. He persevered because he was encouraged by the
invisible King.

28 Through faith Moses instituted the Passover and
sprinkled the blood upon the doorposts to protect the firstborn
of Israel from the Angel of destruction.

THE ISRAELITES

29 Through faith the sons of Israel passed through the Red Sea as over dry ground. When the Egyptians attempted to do it, they were engulfed by the waves and perished. 30 Through faith the walls of Jericho fell down after a siege of seven days.

RAHAB

31 Through faith Rahab the harlot escaped and did not perish with those who disobeyed God. For she had given a friendly welcome to the reconnoitering scouts of Israel.

HEROES OF FAITH

32 I do not need to say more. For time would fail me if I told you what Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel, and the prophets have achieved through faith. 33 They conquered kingdoms. They lived righteously. They received new promises. They shut the mouths of lions. 34 They quenched raging fire. They escaped the edge of the sword. They found strength in their time of trial. They became mighty in war. They put foreign armies to flight.

35 Some returned to their women from certain death as if by resurrection. 36 Some were tortured, but refused to accept their release. For they wanted to inherit a better life after their resurrection. Others endured derision, floggings, chains, and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned. They were sawed asunder. They were tortured. They were put to the sword. They went about in sheepskins and goatskins, destitute, ill-treated 38 by the world which was not worthy of them. They wandered in deserts, in mountains, in caves, and in the holes of the earth.

39 Yet all these martyrs, although well attested by their faith, did not obtain the divine promises. 40 For God had something better in store for all of us. He wanted us all to reach the fulfillment of our hopes together.

CHAPTER 12

ENDURANCE

1 A vast crowd of Martyrs are watching us from heaven. Let us follow their example. Let us throw off every entanglement

of sin. Let us run with perseverance the race in which we are competing.

2 Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the originator and perfecter of our faith. He endured the martyrdom and the disgrace of the Cross for the joy he felt in fulfilling his duty. Now he is seated at the right hand of the throne of God. 3 Think of the indignities he suffered at the hands of his sinful foes, and follow the example of his perseverance. Do not grow faint, and do not get discouraged. 4 For after all, your battle against sin has not yet resulted in bloodshed. 5 Moreover, you must not forget the Scriptural exhortation in which God argues with you as with sons: "My son, do not neglect the discipline of the Lord. 6 Do not get weary when he reproves you. 6 For the Lord disciplines every child he loves, and chastises every son he receives."

7 Therefore endure suffering for discipline. For God is treating you as his sons. Remember that no son can escape his father's discipline. 8 If you lack the discipline which everyone of us has experienced, then your sonship is not legitimate.

9 Moreover, when the fathers of our flesh disciplined us, we respected them. Well, we must much more readily submit ourselves to the Father of our spirit and thus obtain everlasting life. 10 Our earthly fathers disciplined us for a short time according to their own ideas. But our heavenly Father disciplines us for our own advantage. For he wants us to share his blessings.

11 Discipline is not pleasant. On the contrary, it is rather painful at first. But afterwards it yields a harvest of peace and righteousness to the disciplined. 12 Therefore lift up your drooping arms and stiffen your weak knees. 13 Straighten out the path for your feet. Then your crippled limbs will not be dislocated, but instead they will be healed.

PEACE AND HOLINESS

14 Pursue peace with all men, and strive for the holiness without which no one will see the Lord. 15 Be watchful. Do not fail to obtain the grace of God. Do not allow a poisonous shoot to spring up and contaminate you. 16 Do not be immoral, or profane like Esau who sold his own birthright for a single meal. 17 You know that afterwards, when he wished to obtain the blessing, he was rejected by his father. Although he pleaded in tears, he was not given an opportunity to correct his mistake.

SINAI

18 You do not approach God now as of old, in a tangible
mountain, in a blazing fire, in darkness, in gloom, and in a
whirlwind. 19 You do not hear the trumpet blast and the terrify-
ing voice which made the listeners entreat that no further
messages be spoken to them. 20 For they could not endure the
command: "Even a wild animal which touches the mountain
must be stoned." 21 Indeed, so fearful was the spectacle that
Moses said: "I am terrified and appalled."

NEW ZION

22 On the contrary, now you come up to Mount Zion, to
the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, with in-
numerable Angels in festive celebration. 23 Now you attend the
solemn gathering of the elder sons of God, who are enrolled
as citizens of heaven. Now you stand before a judge who is
the God of the universe. Now you are in communion with the
souls of the righteous men who have fallen asleep. 24 Now you
meet Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant, and you are
sprinkled with his blood which is more powerful than the blood
of Abel.

25 Be careful and listen to the voice of God. Those who
refused to listen to him when he spoke on earth have paid the
penalty for their disobedience. We are going to be punished
more severely, if we turn away from him when he speaks to
us from heaven.

26 His voice shook the earth at that time. Now he has
warned us again, saying: "Yet once more I will shake, not only
the earth, but also the heaven." 27 This phrase "yet once more"
means that what is shaken this time will be totally annihilated.
Only what cannot be shaken will remain standing.

28 Let us be thankful for the eternal kingdom we have
inherited, and let us express our gratitude to God by worshiping
him with reverence and awe. 29 For our God is a burning fire.

CHAPTER 13

EXHORTATION

1 Cultivate fraternal love constantly. 2 Never neglect
hospitality. For you may be entertaining Angels unknowingly.
3 Remember those who are in prison, as though you were in

prison with them. Remember those suffering affliction. For you have mortal bodies yourselves.

4 Marriage must be respected by everyone, and the marriage relations must be kept sacred. For God will punish fornicators and adulterers.

5 You must not be money-grasping. Be content with what you have. For God himself has said: "I will never fail you, I will never forsake you." 6 So we proclaim boldly: "The Lord is my supporter. I will not be afraid. What can a man do to me?"

7 Remember your prelates who preached to you the Gospel of God for the first time. Contemplate the outcome of their life, and follow the example of their faith.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ is always the same, yesterday, today, and forever.

9 Do not be carried away by various exotic doctrines. Remember that spiritual strength depends on the grace of God, not on observances of food. As you well know, these diets have never helped the spirit of their adherents.

10 As for us, we have an altar of spiritual food from which the worshipers of the old tabernacle are not allowed to eat. 11 That reminds me that the bodies of the animals whose blood was brought into the sanctuary by the high priest as a sin-offering were burned outside the precincts of the camp. 12 For this reason, Jesus, who sanctified the people through his own blood, suffered and died outside the city gates.

13 Therefore let us follow him outside the old camp, and let us share his disgrace. 14 For our permanent home is not here on earth. No, we must look for it in heaven, in the world to come through him. 15 In his name we always offer a sacrifice of praise to God. 16 Now, do not forget to do good and to share your blessings with your brethren. For God is well pleased with such sacrifices.

17 Be obedient and submissive to your prelates. They are watching over your souls as men who are responsible for them. Encourage them to do their duty cheerfully and not grudgingly. It is not to your advantage to discourage them.

PRAYER

18 Pray for me. For I am sure that my own conscience is clear, that I do my best to live a righteous life in every respect. 19 Pray especially that I may return to you the sooner.

BLESSING

20 May the God of peace, who raised from the dead the
great Shepherd of the sheep, our Lord Jesus, through the blood
of the eternal covenant, 21 enable you to do his will, and to
accomplish every good act that is pleasing in his sight through
Jesus Christ.

To him be glory forever and ever. Amen.

GREETINGS

22 I appeal to you, brethren, be patient with my exhortation.
For I have written to you briefly. 23 You know that our brother
Timothy has been released. If he comes soon, I will bring him
with me when I visit you. 24 Greetings to all your prelates and
to all the saints. The brethren from Italy send you their greet-
ings. 25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

THE UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT JAMES

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ,
To the Twelve Tribes of the Dispersion: Greetings.

PERFECTION

2 You must be deeply gratified when you are harassed by fiendish temptations. 3 You know that when ordeals test your faith, they build up your endurance. 4 Therefore let your endurance be fully developed. Then you will become perfect, unshakable, and unblemished.

DIVINE WISDOM

5 If any one of you is deficient in wisdom, he can obtain it from God. He gives it to all men liberally and ungrudgingly. 6 But the petitioner must ask it in fatih, without wavering. The man who wavers is like the surge of the sea, which is driven and tossed by the wind. 7 Such a man cannot expect to obtain anything from the Lord. 8 For an irresolute man is unreliable in every respect.

THE HUMBLE AND THE RICH

9 The humble brother must be proud. For he will be exalted. 10 The rich man must be lowly. For he will be humbled. 11 One day the sun will rise and the scorching wind will blow. Then the grass will wither, its flower will fall, and its beauty will perish. So will the rich man fade away in the midst of his vain pursuits.

ENDURANCE

12 Blessed is the man who endures temptation. For if he can stand the test, he will obtain the crown of life, which the Lord has promised to those who love him.

TEMPTATION

13 Nobody who falls into temptation should say that he is
tempted by God. For God cannot be tempted by evil, and he
himself does not tempt anyone. 14 A man falls into temptation
when he is lured and enticed by his own passion. 15 Then passion
conceives and gives birth to sin. When sin has reached its full
growth, it causes death.

GIFTS

16 My dear brethren, do not be deceived about this question.
17 Every good gift and every perfect endowment comes from
above, and is sent down by the Father of heavenly lights, who
is not affected by any variation or shadow of change. 18 Of
his own will he gave us a new birth through his Gospel. He
wants us to become the sacred crown of all his creation.

EXHORTATION

19 Therefore, my dear brethren, every man must be alert
in listening, deliberate in speaking, slow in getting angry. 20 For
human anger does not produce divine righteousness. 21 There-
fore turn away from every impurity and excess of wickedness,
and humbly follow the divine message implanted in your hearts,
and save your souls.

22 Practice the Gospel. Do not merely hear it and then
forget it. 23 Whoever merely hears the Gospel, but does not
practice it, is like a man who looks at the reflection of his own
face in a mirror. 24 He sees himself, then he goes away and
forgets what he looked like. 25 But the man who observes the
divine law of liberation, who perseveres in it, who not merely
hears and then forgets it, but who practices it, will be blessed
in all his works.

26 Whoever thinks that he is religious, but cannot control
his tongue, deceives himself. His religion is worthless. 27 Pure
and immaculate religion in the sight of God the Father consists
in visiting orphans and widows in their distress, and in keeping
ourselves uncontaminated by the sinful world.

CHAPTER 2

DISCRIMINATION

1 Brethren, you must not degrade the faith of our glorious
Lord Jesus Christ through partiality toward persons. 2 Suppose,

for instance, that a man wearing gold rings and handsome clothes enters your assembly room. At the same time, suppose that a poor man in shabby clothing comes in also. 3 You must not pay special attention to the well-dressed man and offer him a place of honor. On the other hand, you must not tell the poor man to stand where he is, or to sit on the floor at your feet.

4 If you behave in that fashion, you are making class distinctions among yourselves and you become wicked judges of your neighbors. 5 Listen, my dear brethren, God has chosen the poor of this world and promised to make them heirs of his Kingdom, because they love him and they are rich in faith.

THE RICH OPPRESSORS

6 Therefore you must not humiliate the poor man. You well know that the rich are constantly oppressing you. They drag you to the law-courts. 7 They revile the noble name of Christian by which you are known. 8 All is well if you act toward them according to the divine Law of the Scripture, which commands you to love your neighbor as yourself.

VIOLATION OF THE LAW

9 But if you show partiality toward persons, you are committing a grievous sin. You are breaking the Law of God. 10 The man who has observed the Law as a whole, but has failed in one point, is liable to all its penalties. 11 God, who forbids adultery, has forbidden murder as well. Now if you do not commit adultery, but commit murder, you have violated the Law.

MERCY

12 Therefore you must speak and act as men who will be judged by the Law of liberation. 13 Condemnation will be merciless to those who do not practice mercy. Remember that only mercy can save us from condemnation.

FAITH AND WORKS

14 Brethren, there is no use for a man to claim that he has faith, if he has no corresponding works. Faith alone can not save him. 15 If a fellow man or woman has nothing to wear and nothing to eat, 16 you cannot help them with good wishes by telling them: "Good luck to you! Keep warm and eat well!"

You can help them only by giving them something to meet their physical needs. 17 Likewise, faith alone, without corresponding works, is dead.

18 If we have only faith, someone may challenge us by saying: "You claim that you have only faith, and I have only good works. Well, you cannot show me your faith through your good works. But I can show you my faith through my good works."

19 You believe that there is one God. Very well. So do all the demons and shudder in terror.

20 Listen, my dear thoughtless children. If you want to understand that faith without works is dead, 21 think of our forefather Abraham. He was justified by his action, when he offered his son Isaac on the altar. 22 You see that his action corresponded to his faith, and vice-versa his faith was implemented by his action.

23 This is the meaning of the Scripture which says: "Abraham believed in God. Thus he was justified, and he was called the friend of God." 24 Now you see that man is justified through works, and not through faith alone.

25 Again, Rahab the harlot was justified through her action. She welcomed the Jewish messengers and helped them off by another way. 26 For like a body without a soul, faith without works is dead.

CHAPTER 3

PREACHERS

1 Brethren, you must not have too many preachers. Remember that we preachers will be judged with greater strictness.

2 We all make mistakes of all kinds. But the man who never makes a mistake in what he says, can claim to be a perfect man and to control his whole system also.

3 For instance, we control the movements of horses and make them obey us by putting bridles into their mouths.

4 Look at the ships. Though they are huge, and are tossed by rough winds, they are steered with a very small rudder wherever the captain directs.

THE HUMAN TONGUE

5 Likewise, the human tongue is a small organ. Yet it can boast of a tremendous power. It is like a tiny spark that sets fire to a vast forest. 6 Indeed, the human tongue is as destructive as fire with infinite potentialities for evil. It occupies a key position among our organs. It contaminates our whole system. It sets on fire the entire cycle of our life. It turns our existence into an infernal torture.

7 Every species of wild animals, birds, reptiles, and sea-creatures can be tamed, and in fact has been tamed by man. 8 But no man can tame the human tongue, this unruly fiend, full of deadly poison.

9 We use the tongue to bless our God and Father. We use it also to curse our fellow men who have been created in the image of God. 10 Both blessing and cursing proceed out of the same mouth. My brethren, you must not allow such profanities to happen among you.

11 No fountain can gush out sweet and bitter water from the same outlet. 12 You well know, my brethren, that a fig-tree cannot produce olives, nor a vine figs. Likewise, it is impossible for a spring to produce fresh and brackish water at the same time.

DIVINE WISDOM

13 Every wise and intelligent man among you must show by his noble life that his actions are inspired by humility and wisdom. 14 But if your hearts are full of bitter jealousy and rivalry, you must not boast by distorting the truth. 15 Such wisdom is not divine. It is earthly, sensual, and diabolical. 16 For wherever jealousy and rivalry prevail, there the door is open to disorder and every foul practice.

17 But divine wisdom is first pure, then peaceful, gentle, docile, merciful, fruitful, impartial, and unfeigned. 18 A harvest of righteousness can be produced only by peace-makers, who cultivate peace among men.

CHAPTER 4

WARS AND FEUDS

1 Your wars and feuds arise from conflicting passions within yourselves. 2 You crave things. You cannot get them. So you kill. You covet. You cannot possess. So you fight and

wage war. But you have not, because you do not ask. 3 You ask and do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives. You only want to satisfy your passions.

4 Adulterers and adulteresses, you well know that friendship with the world is enmity with God. Therefore everyone who wants to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God.

5 For this reason the Scripture says: "God loves jealously the spirit which dwells in us, and he will not endure a rival. 6 Therefore he gives us a greater grace." The Scripture tells us also: "God opposes the proud, but gives grace to the humble."

EXHORTATION

7 Brethren, obey God. Oppose the devil, and he will flee from you. 8 Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Wash your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you doubters. 9 Repent, mourn, and weep. Turn your mirth into grief and your joy into gloom. 10 Humble yourself before the Lord, and he will exalt you.

11 Do not disparage one another, my brethren. For if you disparage and condemn your brother, you disparage and condemn the Law of God. If you condemn the Law of God, you are not an observer, but a critic of the Law of God. 12 You well know that God is the only law-giver and judge, who has the power to save and condemn. But who are you to condemn your neighbor?

13 Come now, you who say: "Today or tomorrow we are going to such a city. We shall stay there a year, go into business, and make money." 14 Well, you do not know what will happen tomorrow. For what is your life? It is only a flash which shines for a little while and then vanishes away.

15 You should say instead: "If the Lord wills, we shall live and do this or that." 16 But you are rather boasting arrogantly. All such boasting is wicked. 17 For if you know what is right and fail to do it, you are committing sin.

CHAPTER 5

WOE TO THE RICH

1 Come now, you rich! Weep and wail over your impending miseries. 2 Your treasures are rotten. Your garments are moth-eaten. 3 Your gold and silver are rusted. Their very rust will testify against you and will consume your flesh like fire. For you have stored up treasures for these last days.

4 Listen! The laborers who have reaped your fields and whose wages you have withheld by fraud are crying out to heaven. Indeed, the outcries of the harvesters have reached the ears of the Lord of hosts. 5 You have lived in luxury and in profligacy on the earth. You have fattened yourselves like vultures in a field of slaughter. 6 You have condemned and you have murdered righteous and unresisting martyrs.

THE JUDGE

7 Brethren, be patient until the manifestation of the Lord. Look! The farmer looks forward to the precious fruit of the earth, and waits patiently over it, until it receives the early and the late rain. 8 So you also must be patient and fortify your hearts. For the manifestation of the Lord is drawing near. 9 Do not grumble against one another, brethren, and do not fall under condemnation. Look! The judge is standing at the doors!

PATIENCE

10 Brethren, take the Prophets, who spoke in the name of the Lord, as an example of suffering and patience. 11 Indeed, we consider them blessed for having endured. You have heard of the patience of Job, and you know how the Lord finally rewarded him. For the Lord is compassionate and merciful.

OATHS

12 Above all, my brethren, do not swear either by heaven or by earth, or by any other oath. But let your Yes mean Yes, and your No mean No. Thus you will not fall under condemnation.

HOLY UNCTION, CONFESSION

13 If anyone of you is in distress, let him pray. If anyone of you is cheerful, let him sing praises to God. 14 If anyone of you is sick, let him call the priests of the Church, let them pray for him, and let them anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. 15 The prayer of the believer will heal the sick man. The Lord will raise him up and will forgive all the sins he may have committed.

16 Confess your sins to one another, and pray for one another. Then you will be healed. The prayer of a righteous man has tremendous power.

PRAYER, CONVERSION

17 Elijah was a man like ourselves. Yet he prayed earnestly
that it should not rain, and no rain fell on the earth for three
years and six months. 18 Then he prayed again, rain fell from
heaven, and the earth yielded its harvest.

19 Brethren, if anyone of you brings back a sinner who
has fallen away from the true religion, 20 he can be sure that
he will save a soul from death and cover up a multitude of sins.

THE FIRST UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT PETER

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Peter, an Apostle of Jesus Christ,

To the exiles of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, 2 chosen and predestined by God the Father, sanctified by the Holy Spirit for the faith of Jesus Christ through the sprinkling of his blood:

THANKSGIVING

May abundant grace and peace be with you.

3 Blessed be God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. For in accordance with his great mercy he has given us a new birth and a hope for everlasting life through the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead. 4 He has promised us an imperishable, immaculate, and unfading inheritance. 5 It is stored up in heaven for you, who are enabled by divine power and faith to receive the salvation which will be manifested on the last day.

6 You rejoice in this expectation. But now you may have to undergo various trials for a little while. 7 Thus your faith, more precious than the perishable gold we test by fire, will bring you praise, honor, and glory when Jesus Christ is manifested.

8 You never met him. But you love him. You do not see him even now. But you believe in him, and you experience an ineffable and heavenly joy. 9 For through your faith you will obtain the salvation of your souls.

10 The Prophets of old foresaw the grace that was destined for you. 11 They searched and investigated your salvation through the Spirit of Christ which was working in them. They tried to predict the time and the circumstances of the Passion of Christ and his susequent glory.

12 They discovered that these events would take place, not in their time, but in yours. These very events have been announced to you by your Evangelists through the Holy Spirit, sent from heaven. This was a spectacle which the Angels longed for ages to enjoy.

HOLINESS

13 Therefore brace up your minds, be sober, and set your hopes fully upon the grace which will be offered to you at the manifestation of Jesus Christ. 14 As Christians, you must not be governed by passions which used to dominate you when you were ignorant. 15 You must be holy in all your conduct, as God who called you is holy. 16 For he tells us in the Scripture: "You must be holy, for I am holy."

17 If you pray to our God the Father, who judges men impartially by their actions, you must live piously all the time of your exile on earth. 18 You know that you have been redeemed from your traditional pagan way of life, not through perishable silver or gold, 19 but through the precious blood of Christ, the unblemished and immaculate Lamb of God.

20 Jesus was predestined for this sacrifice before the foundation of the world. But he was revealed only at the end of these last days for your sake. 21 Through him you believed in God who raised him from the dead and glorified him. So your faith and hope rest on God.

FRATERNAL LOVE

22 Now that your souls have been purified by the true religion through the Holy Spirit, you are prepared for an unfeigned and sincere affection. Therefore love one another intensely and heartily. Remember that you have ceased to be sons of mortal flesh. 23 You have been born anew through the divine Gospel, and you are now sons of the living and everlasting God.

24 For the Scripture says: "All flesh is like grass, and all its glory is like the flower of the field. 25 But the word of the Lord endures forever." Now the word of the Lord is the Gospel which has been preached to you.

CHAPTER 2

EXHORTATION

1 Consequently, cast off all wickedness, guile, insincerity, envy, and slander. 2 Like new-born children of God, crave the unadulterated milk of the Holy Spirit. Thus you will be able to grow up to salvation. 3 For you have tasted that heavenly food, and you know that the Lord is good.

4 Remember also that you come to Chrst as to a living
stone, chosen and prized by God. 5 With living stones like your-
selves you must build on him a spiritual house of worship,
you must serve in it as holy priests, and offer sacrifices acceptable
to God through Jesus Christ.

6 For this reason the Scripture says: "Look, I lay in Zion
a chosen and precious cornerstone. Those who believe in him will
not be put to shame."

7 Now he is precious to you who believe in him, but not
to those who have rejected his Gospel. For the Scripture says:
"The stone which the builders rejected has become the corner-
stone, 8 a stone of stumbling, a rock of obstruction." Of course,
they stumble, because they reject the Gospel as they had been
predestined to do.

PEOPLE OF GOD

9 But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy
nation, a consecrated class of people. You have been set apart
to proclaim the blessings of Christ who called you from darkness
to his amazing light. 10 In the past you were no one's people,
but now you are the people of God. In the past you were
disinherited. But now you are the heirs of divine mercy.

GOOD EXAMPLE

11 My friends, I implore you, as exiles and pilgrims in
this world, to resist the sensual desires which besiege your soul.
12 Live righteously among the Gentiles who slander you as
evildoers. For they will observe your good actions and they will
glorify God when he is revealed to them.

DUTIES OF CITIZENS

13 For the sake of the Lord, be submissive to every human
authority, especially to the emperor who enjoys the supreme
power. 14 Obey the governors who are delegated by him to
punish criminals and to protect law-abiding citizens. 15 For this
is the will of God. For through your good conduct you will
silence your ignorant and foolish detractors.

16 Live like free men. But do not use your freedom as a
pretext for vice. Remember that you are servants of God.
17 Respect all men, love your brethren, reverence God, obey
the emperor.

DUTIES OF SLAVES

18 You slaves, must be perfectly submissive and respectful to your masters, not only to those who are gentle and considerate, but even to those who are arrogant. 19 A man deserves credit when he endures unjust ill-treatment with the strength which comes from God. 20 You deserve no credit when you endure patiently a punishment for doing wrong. But if you endure patiently a punishment for doing right, then you deserve credit before God. 21 Indeed, this is your mission. For Christ suffered for you and left you an example. He now wants you to follow in his footsteps. 22 He never committed a sin and never uttered a deceitful word. 23 He never reviled those who reviled him. He never threatened those who made him suffer. He trusted God, the righteous judge.

24 He bore our sins in his body on the Cross, he enabled us to become dead to sin and to live for righteousness. You have been healed through his wounds. 25 You have strayed like sheep, but you have now returned to the shepherd and guardian of your souls.

CHAPTER 3

HOLY MATRIMONY

1 Likewise, you wives, obey your husbands. Thus your unbelieving husbands will be converted, not by sermons, 2 but by your examples, by the reverence and modesty of your behavior. 3 Your adornment should not consist in your braided hair, gold jewels, and expensive garments, 4 but in the hidden treasures of your hearts, in the unfading loveliness and gentleness of your spirit which is priceless in the sight of God.

5 These were the adornments of the holy women who believed in God and obeyed their husbands. 6 Thus Sarah obeyed Abraham, and called him Lord. You are her true daughters only if you live righteously and irreproachably.

7 Likewise, you husbands, treat your wives considerately. Honor them as the weaker sex, because you are joint heirs of the grace of everlasting life. Otherwise, your prayers will not be answered.

CHARITY

8 Finally, all of you must have unity of spirit, sympathy, brotherly love, mercy, and kindness. 9 Do not return evil for

evil, nor insult for insult. On the contrary, return only blessings. For you well know that you have been called by God for the very purpose of inheriting his blessings.

10 If you want to enjoy life and see happy days, restrain your tongue from evil and your lips from deceit. 11 Turn away from evil and do good. Seek and pursue peace. 12 For the eyes of the Lord are upon righteous men, and his ears are open to their supplications. But the face of the Lord is set against evildoers.

MARTYRDOM

13 Now who is going to harm you if you are eager to do good? 14 Even if you suffer for the sake of righteousness, you will be blessed. Do not be afraid. Do not be dismayed. 15 But glorify the Lord our God in your hearts. Be always prepared to defend your hope for everlasting life before anyone who calls you to account. But do it gently and respectfully. 16 Keep your conscience clear. Thus those who abuse your righteous Christian behavior will be ashamed of their slanders.

17 It is better to suffer for doing right, if that is the will of God, than for doing wrong. 18 For Christ also died for our sins once for all, as a righteous man for unrighteous sinners, and brought us near to God. He was put to death in the flesh, but was revived in the spirit.

19 Then, in the spirit he went and preached to the imprisoned souls, 20 who had refused to believe in the days of Noah. At that time, as you know, the patience of God was manifested when the ark was built, but only a few, namely eight persons, were saved from the Flood.

21 Baptism, which symbolizes this ark of safety, saves you now, not as a removal of physical stain, but as a request for a clear conscience before God through the resurrection of Jesus Christ. 22 For he ascended into heaven and is sitting at the right hand of the Father. All the Angels, authorities, and dominions are now subject to him.

CHAPTER 4

DEATH ON THE CROSS

1 Since Christ has died in the flesh, you must follow his example and die with him on the Cross. When you have died in the flesh, you are not subject to sin any longer. 2 So the rest

of your physical life will be governed, not by human passions, but by the will of God.

3 You have spent time enough in the past practicing pagan vices, indulging in licentiousness, sensuality, drunkenness, revelry, carousing, and abominable idolatry. 4 Your former companions are amazed that you no longer join them in their riotous dissipation, and they revile you for it.

5 But they must give an account to the Master who is coming to judge the living and the dead. 6 For this very reason he preached the Gospel even to the dead. For they will be judged in the flesh like men, but they will live in the spirit like God.

7 The end of the world is drawing near. Therefore live soberly, and pray watchfully. 8 Above all, love one another earnestly, for love can cover a multitude of sins. 9 Be hospitable to one another ungrudgingly.

10 Employ your particular gift for one another as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. 11 The preacher must remember that he is delivering the oracles of God. The servant of the Church must minister with the zeal that God only can supply. Thus God will be always glorified through Jesus Christ. Glory and power be to him forever and ever. Amen.

12 My dear friends, you must not be alarmed by the fiery ordeal which may come to test your faith as if an unexpected misfortune were befalling you. 13 On the contrary, you must rejoice, because you are sharing the passion of Christ. Thus you will be enabled to experience the tremendous joy of his glorious manifestation. 14 You must consider yourself blessed, when you are reviled for the sake of Christ. For then the Holy Spirit of God is resting upon you. He is reviled by the unbelievers. But he is glorified by you.

15 You should be ashamed to suffer as murderers, or thieves, or criminals, or spies. 16 But you must be proud to suffer as Christians, and glorify God as his martyrs.

17 The suitable place for judgment to begin is with the house of God. Now, if it begins with us, what will be the end of those who refuse to accept the Gospel of God? 18 If it is so hard for the righteous man to be saved, the wicked and the sinners have scarcely any chance at all. 19 Therefore those who suffer according to the will of God must commend their souls to their faithful Creator and persevere in their ministry of good actions.

CHAPTER 5

THE PRESBYTERS

1 I appeal to the presbyters among you, as a fellow presbyter, as a witness of the Passion of Christ, and as a partaker of the glory of his coming manifestation: 2 Guard the flock of God entrusted to your care, not by constraint, but by their own free will; not for sordid gain, but freely; 3 not by oppressing your communicants, but by becoming models to your flock. 4 So when the Chief Shepherd is manifested, you will receive the unfading crown of glory.

5 Likewise, you younger communicants, must obey the presbyters. Indeed, all of you must obey one another in perfect humility. For God opposes the proud, but he gives grace to the humble.

EXHORTATION

6 Humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, and he will exalt you in due time. 7 Throw all your anxieties upon him, for he cares for you. 8 Be sober and vigilant. For your adversary, the devil, is prowling and roaring around like a lion, ready to devour you. 9 Resist him, and be firm in your faith. You know that your brethren all over the world are undergoing the same sufferings.

10 But God, the giver of all grace, who called you to his eternal glory in Jesus Christ, will not let you suffer very long. In the meantime, may he confirm you, protect you, establish you, and strengthen you in your trials. 11 Glory and power to him forever and ever. Amen.

12 I am sending you this short letter through Sylvanus who in my judgment is a trustworthy brother. I am writing to you, because I want to encourage you and assure you that you are firmly established in the true grace of God.

GREETINGS

13 Our brethren of the Church in Babylon and my son Mark send you their greetings. 14 Greet one another with Christian love.

Peace to you and to all our fellow believers in Jesus Christ. Amen.

THE SECOND UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT PETER

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 Simon Peter, the servant and Apostle of Jesus Christ,
To those who have obtained our common sacred faith in the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ:

2 May abundant grace and peace come to you in the knowledge of God and of our Lord Jesus Christ.

3 His divine power has granted you every requisite for life and piety through the knowledge of Christ who called us to his glory and holiness. 4 Thus he has given you his splendid and precious promises. He has enabled you to become partakers of the divine nature through which you escaped from worldly passion and corruption.

VIRTUES

5 For this very reason, make every effort to supplement your faith with virtue; your virtue with knowledge; 6 your knowledge with continence; your continence with patience; your patience with piety; 7 your piety with brotherly love; your brotherly love with charity.

8 Those who possess these virtues abundantly will become effective and fruitful in understanding our Lord Jesus Christ. 9 Those who do not possess them will remain blind, shortsighted, and forgetful of the fact that they have been cleansed of their old sins.

10 Therefore, brethren, strive more earnestly to confirm your vocation and election by practicing these virtues. Then you will never fail. 11 On the contrary, you will be triumphantly admitted to the eternal Kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

12 Consequently, I shall be ready always to remind you of these matters, although you know them and are well established in the true religion. 13 I consider it my duty, as long as my earthly life lasts, to arouse you by a reminder.

14 For I know that my departure from the earth is impending, as our Lord Jesus Christ has notified me. 15 I will also see to it that, after I am gone, you will always remember my message.

DIVINITY OF CHRIST

16 When I preached to you about the divine power and the manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ, I was not telling you fictitious myths, but actual facts. Indeed, we have been eye-witnesses of his exaltation.

17 Christ was honored and glorified by God the Father, the supreme Master of the Universe, with this proclamation: "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased." 18 We actually heard this proclamation coming from heaven when we accompanied him on the holy mountain.

19 Thus the message of the Prophets was fully confirmed. You will do well to pay attention to that message as to a lamp shining in a dark room, until the dawn breaks and the morning star arises in your hearts.

20 Of course, you must first understand that no prophecy of the Scripture is a matter of private interpretation. 21 For prophecies were not uttered by individuals for their own private purposes, but by holy men of God who were inspired by the Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER 2

HERESY

1 There were false prophets among the people in the past, and there will be false teachers among you in the future. They will try to introduce abominable heresies. They will repudiate the Master who redeemed them. Thus they will bring swift destruction upon themselves. 2 Many individuals will adopt their impious doctrines and will revile the true way of life. 3 In their greed these men will exploit you with their false arguments. But their doom is impending and their downfall is inevitable.

RETRIBUTION

4 For God did not spare Angels when they sinned. He plunged them into Tartarus and banished them into dark dungeons until the Day of Judgment.

5 He did not spare the sinners of the ancient world. Yet he

preserved Noah, a preacher of righteousness, with seven others, when he brought the Flood upon godless mankind.

6 He condemned and reduced the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes, as a warning to ungodly men of what punishment was coming to them. 7 Yet he saved the righteous Lot who was distressed by the licentious conduct of unprincipled men. 8 The soul of that righteous man who lived among them, was tortured day after day by what he saw and heard of their behavior. 9 For God knows how to rescue pious men from trial and to punish wrongdoers when the Day of Judgment comes, 10 especially those who indulge in the lust of defiling sensuality and despise authority. These men are arrogant and presumptuous. They are not afraid to scoff at the glories of the unseen world. 11 Now even the Angels, though greater in might and power, do not pronounce a reviling judgment upon them before the Lord.

12 But these men, like irrational animals, mere creatures of instinct, born to be caught and killed, revile what they do not understand. They will perish in their own corruption. 13 Thus they will receive the reward of their iniquity. They count it a pleasure to revel in the daytime. They are a blot and a disgrace. They revel and feast in the luxury of their own banquets along with you. 14 Their eyes are full of adultery and sin. They know how to entice unsteady souls. Their hearts are trained in greed. They are children of malediction.

15 They have left the straight path and gone astray. They have followed the way of Balaam, the son of Beor. He loved dishonest gain. 16 But he was rebuked for his perversity. A dumb donkey spoke with human voice and restrained that mad prophet.

17 They are waterless wells. They are clouds of smoke driven by the storm. They will be condemned to the utter darkness of the abyss. 18 With high-sounding nonsense they entice with licentious passions of the flesh those who have just escaped the influence of false teachers. 19 They promise them freedom, but they themselves are slaves of corruption. For a man is the slave of the vice that overcomes him.

20 These men have once escaped the vices of the world through the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. Now they are again enticed and overpowered by them. So they fall into a state which is worse than the previous one.

21 It would have been better for them never to have found

the righteous way of life than after finding it to turn away from the holy commandments delivered to them. 22 What has happened to them proves the truth of the proverb: "The dog turns back to his own vomit, and the washed sow wallows again in the mire."

CHAPTER 3

THE SECOND COMING

1 My dear friends, this is the second letter I have written to you. In both of them I have tried to refresh your memory, 2 and call your attention to the predictions of the Holy Prophets, and the command of our Lord and Savior given to you through his Apostles.

3 In the first place, you must know that in the last days impostors, guided by their own selfish interests, will come, 4 and say to you: "What is the matter with his promised coming? For ever since our forefathers went to their rest, everything has remained as it was from the beginning of creation."

5 They deliberately ignore the fact that by the command of God heavens were created long ago, and an earth formed out of water and by water, 6 by which the old world was flooded and destroyed. 7 By the same command the present heavens and earth have been stored up for fire, and are kept for the last day when godless men will be condemned and destroyed.

8 Now, my dear friends, do not overlook the fact that with the Lord one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years are like one day.

9 Moreover, the Lord does not delay his promise, as some men think. He is really showing his patience with you, because he does not want any men to perish. On the contrary, he wants them all to come to repentance.

10 The Day of the Lord will come suddenly and unexpectedly. Then the heavens will pass away with a tremendous roar. The elements will be dissolved in heat. The earth and all its contents will be burned up.

11 If the universe is to be dissolved in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? To be sure, holy and pious men, 12 who expect and wish to hasten the coming of the Day of the Lord. On that day the old heavens will be dissolved and the elements will be melted by heat. 13 But according to the promise of the Lord, we look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness will reign.

14 Therefore, my dear friends, while you wait for this

transformation, strive earnestly to appear blameless, irreproachable, and peace-loving in the sight of God. 15 In the meantime, you may be sure that the delay is meant for your salvation, as our beloved brother Paul wrote you in all his letters with the wisdom God had given him.

16 True, in those letters there are some obscure passages, which the ignorant and restless heretics are distorting to their own ruin, as they are doing the rest of the Scriptures.

17 So, my dear friends, now that you are forewarned, you must be very careful. Do not let those wicked men mislead you and turn you away from your firmly established faith. 18 But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. Glory to him both now and forever. Amen.

THE FIRST UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT JOHN

CHAPTER 1

THE WITNESS

1 I am writing to you about Jesus Christ, the life-giving Word of God who has existed from the beginning. I have heard him. I have seen him with my eyes. I have looked upon him. I have touched him with my own hands.

2 Yes, the Life-giver was manifested to us. I testify to him, and I proclaim to you the everlasting Life-giver who was abiding with the Father and now has been manifested to all men.

3 I proclaim him to you, because I want you to share in our communion with the Father and with Jesus Christ, his Son. 4 Thus our joy will be complete.

5 This is the message I have heard from him and proclaim to you: God is light. There is no darkness in him at all. 6 If we claim communion with God while we lead lives of pagan darkness, we do not tell the truth and do not act according to the true faith.

7 But if we lead lives of Christian light in which God dwells, then we are in communion with God. Then the blood of Jesus Christ his Son will cleanse us from all sin.

8 When we claim that we have not sinned, we deceive ourselves and we do not tell the truth. 9 If we confess our sins, God will forgive our sins and will cleanse us from all iniquity. For he is merciful and generous. 10 When we claim that we have not sinned, we challenge his truthfulness and we reject his message.

CHAPTER 2

THE REDEEMER

1 My children, I am writing you this letter to keep you away from sin. But if anyone of you should sin, remember that Jesus Christ the righteous is our defender before God. 2 He is the expiator of our sins, and not of ours only, but also of the sins of all mankind.

OBEDIENCE AND LOVE

3 We may be sure that we know him when we obey his
commandments. 4 Whoever claims to know him, but does not
obey his commandments, is a liar and does not tell the truth.
5 Whoever obeys his Gospel possesses the perfect love of
God in his heart. This is the way we know that we abide in him.
6 But whoever claims that he abides in him must live as he
lived.

7 Brethren, I am not writing to tell you of a new doctrine.
It is just the old, original doctrine that you have already heard.
8 But it sounds new when you practice it, as the Lord himself
did. Undoubtedly darkness is passing away, and the true light
is already shining.

9 Everyone who claims to be in the light, and yet hates
his brother, is still in darkness. 10 Everyone who loves his
brother dwells in the light and cannot be led astray by
temptation. 11 Everyone who hates his brother is in darkness,
lives in darkness, and does not know where he is going. Darkness
has blinded his eyes.

12 I am writing to you, my children, because your sins have
been forgiven for his sake. 13 I am writing to you, fathers,
because you believe in the Lord who has existed from the
beginning. 14 I am writing to you, young men, because you are
strong, you have kept the divine Gospel in your hearts, and you
have defeated the evil one. I am writing to you, my children,
because you believe in the Father.

15 Do not love this sinful world and its pleasures. A man
who loves this world cannot love the Father. 16 The passion of
the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the vain ambitions of life are
not derived from the Father, but from this world. 17 Now, this
world is passing away with all its passionate desires. But those
who follow the will of God will endure forever.

HERESY

18 Children, it is the last hour. As you have heard,
Antichrist is coming. Indeed, many Antichrists have already
appeared. So we know that it is the last hour. 19 They have
gone out from our company, but they did not really belong to
us. For if they had, they would have remained with us. When
they withdrew, they made it clear that none of them really
belonged to us.

20 You have been anointed by the heavenly Father, and you know everything. 21 I am not writing you this letter because you do not know the truth, but because you do know it. You also know that a lie cannot be a part of the true doctrine.

22 Now everyone who denies that Jesus is the Messiah is an impostor. He is the real Antichrist, because he repudiates both the Father and the Son. 23 For the man who repudiates the Son does not believe in the Father. 24 Stick to the original doctrine which you have received from the beginning. If you do, you will abide both in the Son and in the Father. 25 Then you will inherit the everlasting life which he has promised us.

26 I felt I had to write you about those who are trying to lead you astray. 27 Fortunately, the Holy Spirit whom you have received from your anointment, abides in you, and you do not need any other teacher. He will teach you about everything. He will tell you what is true and what is false. So follow his directions, and stick to him.

28 Now, my children, abide in him constantly. So when Christ is manifested, we can face him proudly without shrinking from him in shame. 29 You know that he is righteous, and you know that whoever lives righteously is his son.

CHAPTER 3

CHILDREN OF GOD

1 See what great love the Father has shown us: He allows us to be called children of God. This is why men refuse to welcome me, because they refused to welcome Christ.

2 Now, my dear friends, we are children of God. But we do not know what we will become in the future. We only know that when Christ is manifested, we shall be like him. Then we shall see him as he really is.

3 Remember that everyone who has such a hope must earnestly strive to make himself as pure as Christ is. 4 Those who are committing sin break the Law of God. For sin is the violation of divine Law. 5 You also know that Christ has been manifested to take away our sins. For he is free from sin.

CHILDREN OF THE DEVIL

6 Those who abide in Christ cannot sin. Those who sin have never known him. 7 My children, let no one lead you astray. The man who lives righteously is righteous as God himself is

righteous. 8 But the man who lives sinfully is a son of the devil. For the devil has sinned from the beginning. Now the Son of God was manifested for the very purpose of undoing the work of the devil.

9 No one born of God can commit sin. For the Holy Spirit of God abides in him. He cannot sin, because he is a child of God. 10 This is how the children of God and the children of the devil can be distinguished. The man who does not live righteously and does not love his brother is not a child of God. 11 For this is the basic commandment you have heard from the beginning: "Love one another."

12 We must not be like Cain who was a child of the devil and butchered his brother. Now why did he butcher him? Because he was a wicked man, and his brother was a righteous man. 13 Therefore, my brethren, do not be surprised when wicked men hate you.

14 We know that we have passed out of death into life because we love our brethren. The man who does not love his brother dwells in death. 15 The man who hates his brother is a potential murderer. And you know that a murderer cannot inherit everlasting life in his heart.

TRUE LOVE

16 We know what love means from Christ who laid down his life for us. Therefore we must also lay down our lives for our brethren.

17 A rich man who sees his brother in need, yet remains unmoved, can have no divine love in his heart. 18 My children, we must not love merely in words and in theory, but in deeds and in reality.

GOOD CONSCIENCE

19 Thus we can be sure that we are children of the true faith, and satisfy our consciences in the sight of God. 20 If our consciences condemn us, we can be reassured that God is greater than our consciences, and he knows everything.

21 My dear friends, if our consciences do not condemn us, we can face God fearlessly, 22 and we can receive whatever we ask him for, because we observe his commandments and practice what pleases him.

23 Now this is his commandment: We must believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and we must love one another,

as he himself instructed us. 24 All those who observe his commandments abide in him, and he in them. We know that he abides in us through the Holy Spirit he has given us.

CHAPTER 4

DIVINE PROPHETS

1 My dear friends, do not trust every inspired prophet. Test them first to discover whether they come from God or not. For many false prophets have gone out into the world. 2 This is how you can tell that a prophet comes from God. Every prophet who proclaims that Jesus Christ has appeared in the flesh comes from God.

3 On the contrary, every prophet who denies that Jesus Christ has appeared in the flesh does not come from God. He is really a prophet of Antichrist. You heard that he was coming. Now he and his agents are in the world already.

4 You come from God, my children, and you have overcome them, for the Christ within you is greater than the Antichrist of the world. 5 They belong to the world, they speak for the world, and the world listens to them.

UNION WITH GOD

6 We come from God. Everyone who believes in God listens to us. Thus we can distinguish truth from falsehood.

7 Dear friends, let us love one another. For love comes from God. 8 The man who does not love cannot believe in God. For God is love.

9 The divine love was manifested among us when God sent to the world his only-begotten Son to give us life. 10 His love consists, not in the fact that we loved him, but that he loved us and sent his Son to expiate our sins.

11 My dear friends, if God loved us so dearly, then we must also love one another similarly.

12 No one has ever seen God. But if we love one another, God abides in us, and his love is perfect within us. 13 We know that we abide in him and he in us by the fact that he has given us his Holy Spirit.

14 Moreover, we Apostles have seen for ourselves, and we can testify that the Father has sent his Son to become the Savior of mankind. 15 Therefore everyone who proclaims that

Jesus is the Son of God can be sure that God abides in him, and he in God.

GOD IS LOVE

16 We also know and believe that God loves us. As a matter of fact, God is love. Everyone who practices love can be sure that he abides in God, and God in him. 17 Our love becomes perfect, when we have confidence about the Day of Judgment, and when our life is similar to the life of Christ in this world.

18 There is no fear in love. For perfect love drives out fear. Moreover, fear has the connotation of punishment for guilt. Therefore no one who fears is perfect in love. 19 We love God, because he first loved us.

20 My dear friends, the man who says that he loves God, yet hates his brother, is a liar. For a man who does not love his brother whom he has seen cannot love God whom he has not seen. 21 Remember that Christ commanded us to love God and our brethren also.

CHAPTER 5

DIVINE BIRTH

1 Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Messiah is a child of God. For whoever loves the Father, loves his Son also. 2 We can be sure that we love the children of God, only when we love God and obey his commandments. 3 Now his commandments are not heavy.

4 Everyone who is born of God overcomes the world. It is our faith which gives us victory over the world. 5 For whoever believes that Jesus is the Son of God can overcome the world.

WITNESSES

6 Jesus Christ came through water and blood, not through water only, but through water and through blood. The Holy Spirit is the witness who proclaimed this truth. 7 For there are three witnesses in heaven, namely the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Now these three are one.

8 There are also three witnesses on earth, namely the Holy Spirit, Holy Baptism, and Holy Communion. These three agree also. 9 If we accept the testimony of men, the testimony of God is much stronger. For God himself has testified to the Son.

10 Whoever believes in the Son of God possesses this testimony in his heart. Whoever does not believe in God makes him a liar. For he does not believe the testimony which God has borne to his Son. 11 This testimony means that he has given us everlasting life through the Son of God.

12 Everyone who believes in the Son of God obtains everlasting life. No one who does not believe in the Son of God can obtain everlasting life. 13 I have written this letter to you who believe in the name of God to assure you that you already possess everlasting life by believing in the name of the Son of God.

PRAYER

14 This faith gives us the assurance that God will grant us whatever we ask for in accordance with his will. 15 Now if God grants our petitions, we know that we obtain whatever we ask him for.

16 Whoever sees his brother committing what is not a mortal sin can beseech God and he will grant life to any sinner who commits a venial sin. True, there are mortal sins. But I do not mean that anyone should pray for them. 17 Every sin is a violation of the Law of God. But some sins are not mortal.

18 We know that whoever is born of God cannot sin, because everyone who is born of God knows how to protect himself, and the devil does not touch him. 19 We know that we come from God and that the whole world is in the power of the devil.

20 We also know that the Son of God has come and has given us power to understand the true God and to abide in him through his Son, Jesus Christ. Thus we find the true God and everlasting life.

21 My children, keep away from false divinities. Amen.

THE SECOND UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT JOHN

INTRODUCTION

1 The Presbyter,

To the elect Lady and her children whom I love in truth, and not I only, but all who know the truth, 2 for the sake of the truth which dwells in us and will be with us forever:

3 Grace, mercy, and peace be with us from God the Father and from Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

FRATERNAL LOVE

4 I was very happy to find some of your children living according to the commandments of the true doctrine as we have been instructed by the Father. 5 Now I urge you, my Lady, let us love one another. This is not a new commandment. It is just the old commandment we have received from the beginning. 6 Love means that we must live according to his commandments. These commandments, as you have heard from the beginning, must be guided by love.

HERESY

7 Many impostors have gone out into the world, men who deny that Jesus Christ has appeared in the flesh. This is what I call the work of the impostors and the Antichrist. 8 Look out for yourselves. Look out, do not lose what we have gained by your labor. Therefore persevere until we receive from God our full reward.

9 Whoever wanders away and does not abide in the doctrine of Christ has repudiated God. Whoever abides in the doctrine of Christ believes in both the Father and the Son. 10 If anyone comes to you and does not bring the true doctrine, do not receive him in your house, nor give him any greeting. 11 For whoever greets him takes part in his wicked work.

12 I have much to write to you, but I would rather not write it with ink on paper. I hope, however, to visit you and tell you all about it by word of mouth. That will be much more agreeable to you.

13 The children of your Elect Sister send you their greetings. Amen.

THE THIRD UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT JOHN

INTRODUCTION

1 The Presbyter,
To Gaius, my dear friend, whom I love in truth.

GAIUS

2 My dear friend, I pray that everything may go well with you and that you may be in good health. I know that all goes well with your soul.

3 I was delighted when our brethren arrived and told me about your pious life which is governed by the rules of our faith. 4 My greatest joy is to hear that my children live in accordance with our doctrine.

5 My dear friend, you are rendering a great service to our faith when you help our missionary brethren, whom you have never seen before. 6 They have testified of your charity before the Church. You will do well to help them forward on their journey in a manner worthy of the service of God.

7 As you know, they have set out for the service of the Lord, and they are accepting no help from Gentiles. 8 Consequently, we must welcome them, and cooperate with them for the benefit of the Gospel.

DIOTREPHES AND DEMETRIUS

9 I have written to your Church officials. But Diotrephes, who likes to be their chief, does not recognize my authority. 10 Therefore when I come there, I will denounce his actions and his malicious gossip about me. Not content with that, he refuses to welcome the brethren himself, stops those who want to welcome them, and excommunicates them.

11 My dear friend, do not follow bad examples. Follow only good examples. Whoever does good comes from God. Whoever does evil has not seen God.

12 Demetrius has the good testimony of all, and of the

Church itself. We also give him our testimony, and you know that our testimony is true.

13 I had much to write you, but I do not want to write it with pen and ink. 14 I hope, however, to visit you soon and tell you all about it by word of mouth.

15 Peace be to you. All your friends send you their greetings. Give my greetings to every one of our friends.

THE UNIVERSAL EPISTLE OF SAINT JUDE

INTRODUCTION

1 Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ and brother of James,
To those who accepted the heavenly invitation, who have been consecrated by God the Father, and who are abiding in Jesus Christ:

2 Abundant mercy, peace, and love be with you.

3 My dear friends, I am anxious to write you about our common salvation. I urge you to strive earnestly for the faith which was delivered to the saints once for all. 4 For certain men have sneaked into the Church to which they never belonged. They are impious men who have been condemned long ago for their ungodliness. They pervert the divine grace into licentiousness and deny our only Sovereign God and our Lord Jesus Christ.

WARNING

5 Now I want to remind you of what you have already learned, that God saved his people from Egypt at first, but afterwards he destroyed those who did not believe in him.

6 You know how severely he punished some of his Angels who rebelled against his authority and deserted their heavenly homeland. He has put them into everlasting chains. He has imprisoned them in utter darkness to await their final condemnation when the great day comes.

7 Sodom, Gomorrah, and the surrounding cities are another example of divine wrath. They broke the Law of God and pursued ungodly vices. They were punished by eternal fire.

8 Likewise, these men in their nightmares disgrace their bodies, defy their creator, and revile their angels. 9 Yet, when the Archangel Michael contended with the devil about the body of Moses, he did not venture to revile him. He simply said: "May the Lord rebuke you." 10 But these men revile whatever they cannot understand. Like irrational animals, they can understand only sensual lusts, and they are destroyed by them.

11 Woe to those impious men. For they have followed the

path of Cain. They have been led astray by the greed of Balaam. They have perished in the revolt of Corah.

12 These men disgrace your religious meals, carousing shamelessly, and feasting gluttonously. They are waterless clouds driven by the winds. They are fruitless trees of late autumn, uprooted and twice dead. 13 They are wild waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame. They are wandering stars for whom the gloom of the abyss has been reserved forever.

RETRIBUTION

14 Enoch, the descendant of Adam in the seventh degree, prophesied about them, saying: "Listen, the Lord came with his holy myriads, 15 to execute judgment upon all men. He will convict sinners of all the godless misdeeds they have perpetrated and of all the blasphemies they have uttered against him."

16 They always grumble and complain. They live according to their own passions. They talk arrogantly, but they pay great respect to persons from whom they expect to gain advantage.

17 My dear friends, remember the predictions of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ. 18 They foretold you that in the last times impostors would appear living godlessly according to their own passions. 19 These men will create division, because they are sensual and not spiritual.

ADMONITION

20 My dear friends, build yourselves up on the foundation of your most holy faith. Pray in the Holy Spirit. 21 Cling to the love of God. Wait for the last day of our Lord Jesus Christ, which will bring you everlasting life. 22 Pity even those about whom you have doubts. 23 Save even those of whom you are afraid. Snatch them from the fire, even if you hate to touch their sin-soaked garments.

24 Glory, majesty, dominion, and power to the only omniscient God and our Savior, 25 who can keep you blameless, who can present you immaculate before his glory, and who can give you eternal blessedness, both now and forever, and for ages to come. Amen.

THE APOCALYPSE OF SAINT JOHN THE DIVINE

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1 This is the revelation of Jesus Christ which God gave to John in order to show to his servants what must happen soon. 2 He sent his Angel and disclosed it to his Apostle John who proclaimed the divine Gospel and told the story of Jesus Christ as an eye-witness. 3 Blessed is the man who reads these prophecies. Blessed are all those who listen to them and obey the commandments contained in them. For the appointed time is drawing near.

GREETINGS

4 John, to the seven Churches in Asia. Grace and peace to you from the eternal God, who is, who was, and who will manifest himself; from the Seven Spirits before his throne; 5 and from Jesus Christ, the expounder of the true faith, the pioneer of the resurrection, and the ruler of the kings of the earth. He loved us. He redeemed us from our sins with his blood. 6 He gave us the Kingdom of Heaven. He consecrated us as priests of God the Father. Glory and dominion to him forever and ever. Amen. 7 Listen, he is coming from the clouds. He will be manifested to every eye. He will be seen by those who pierced him on the Cross. He will bring consternation to all the nations of the earth. Yes, indeed. Amen.

8 I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end of all the world. So says the Lord, the Almighty God, who is, who was, and who will manifest himself.

THE VISION

9 I, John, your brother and your companion in the affliction, in the Kingdom, and in the patient endurance which Jesus brings, was preaching the Gospel and testifying to the Lord in the island of Patmos. 10 On Sunday I fell into a trance and I heard a loud voice like a trumpet behind me, 11 saying: "Write in a

scroll what you see and send it to the Seven Churches, namely to Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamum, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea."

THE MESSIAH

12 When I turned to find out whose voice was speaking to me, I saw seven golden lampstands, 13 and in the midst of them a man wearing a long robe, with a golden belt around his breast. 14 His head and hair were as white as wool, as white as snow. His eyes blazed like fire. 15 His feet were like burnished bronze, refined in a furnace. His voice resounded like a cataract of mighty waters. 16 In his right hand he held seven stars. From his mouth issued a double-edged sword. His face was shining like the sun at noonday.

17 When I saw him, I fell like a dead man at his feet. But he laid his hand upon me, and said: "Do not be afraid. I am the first and the last. 18 I am the living one. I was dead, but here I am alive forever and ever. I am holding the keys of death and Hades. 19 So write what you see, what is now, and what will happen hereafter. 20 The seven stars which you saw in my right hand are the Bishops of the Seven Churches. The seven lampstands are the Seven Churches themselves.

CHAPTER 2

TO THE CHURCH OF EPHESUS

1 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Ephesus: 'This is the Lord who holds the seven stars in his right hand and walks in the midst of the seven lampstands. 2 I know your achievements, your toil, and your patient endurance. You cannot tolerate wicked men. You have tested those who claimed to be Apostles and have found them to be impostors. You showed endurance. 3 You have undergone many sufferings for my sake, and you have not grown weary. 4 But I have this complaint against you: Your love is not as strong as it was at first. 5 So remember that you have fallen. Therefore repent and do the works you did at first. If you do not repent, I will come to you and take away your lampstand. 6 Yet I must give you credit, because you hate the Nicolaitans as I do. 7 Whoever has an ear let him hear what the Holy Spirit says to the Churches. I will reward the victor with the fruit of the tree of life which is in the Paradise of God.' "

TO THE CHURCH OF SMYRNA

8 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Smyrna: 'This is
the message of the Lord, who is the first and the last, who died
and has risen: 9 I know your afflictions, your poverty which
makes you rich, and the slanders of those who claim to be Jews
but are not. For they belong to the synagogue of Satan. 10 Do
not be afraid of what you are going to suffer. Indeed, the devil
will throw some of you into prison to test you, and you will be
tortured for ten days. But be steadfast unto death, and I will
give you the crown of life. 11 Whoever has an ear let him hear
what the Holy Spirit says to the Churches. The victor will not
be hurt by the second death.' "

TO THE CHURCH OF PERGAMUM

12 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Pergamum: 'This
is the message of the Lord who wields the sharp double-edged
sword: 13 I know that you live in the capital of Satan. You are
loyal to my name. You did not deny my faith even in the days
of Antipas, my faithful martyr, who was murdered before your
eyes in the city where Satan reigns. 14 But I have a few com-
plaints against you. You have among you some adherents of
the heresy of Balaam. He taught Balak how to lure the children
of Israel into eating pagan sacrificial meat and into participating
in abominable orgies. 15 You also have some adherents of the
heresy of the Nicolaitans. 16 Repent. Otherwise, I will come to
you quickly and fight them with the double-edged sword of my
mouth. 17 Whoever has an ear let him hear what the Holy Spirit
says to the Churches. I will reward the victor with the sacred
manna, and I will give him a white ballot with a new name
written on it which no one can read except the recipient.' "

TO THE CHURCH OF THYATIRA

18 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Thyatira: 'This
is the message of the Son of God, whose eyes blaze like fire, and
whose feet glow like burnished bronze. 19 I know your
achievements, your love, your loyalty, your helpfulness, and your
endurance. I also know that you are now doing more than you
did at first. 20 But I have this complaint against you: You
tolerate the woman Jezebel, the self-styled prophetess who mis-
leads my servants. For she teaches them to participate in
abominable orgies and to eat pagan sacrificial meat. 21 I gave

her time to repent. But she refuses to turn away from her immorality. 22 Therefore I will cast her into a sickbed. I will throw her adulterous companions into great affliction, unless they repent of her practices. 23 I will slay her children outright. Then all the Churches will know that I am searching the minds and the hearts, that I am punishing each one according to his misdeeds. 24 But to the rest of you in Thyatira, who do not follow this heretical teaching and have not been initiated into the so-called deep mysteries of Satan, to you I say: I do not impose upon you any other penalty. 25 Only hold fast to your faith, until I return. 26 To the victor who keeps my commandments until the end I will grant authority over the Gentiles, such as I received from my father. 27 He will rule them with a rod of iron. He will smash them like earthen pots. 28 And I will give him the morning star. 29 Whoever has an ear let him hear what the Holy Spirit says to the Churches.' "

CHAPTER 3

TO THE CHURCH AT SARDIS

1 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Sardis: 'This is the message of the Lord who possesses the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your achievements. You enjoy the reputation of being alive, but you are dead. 2 Awake, and strengthen those who survived from the agony of death. Your duties before God are still unfulfilled. 3 Therefore remember the commandments you heard and received. Obey them, and repent. If you do not wake up, I will come unexpectedly, and you will not know at what hour I will visit you. 4 Yet you have still a few men in Sardis who have not defiled themselves and who will walk with me in white garments, as they deserve. 5 Then I will clothe the victor in white vestments. I will keep his name in the book of life. I will acknowledge him before my Father and his Angels. 6 Whoever has an ear let him hear what the Holy Spirit says to the Churches.' "

TO THE CHURCH OF PHILADELPHIA

7 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Philadelphia: 'This is the message of the Lord, who is holy and true, who possesses the key of David, who opens what no one can shut, who shuts what no one can open. 8 I know your achievements. Indeed, I am opening for you a door which no one can shut. For though your

strength was insignificant, yet you obeyed my commandments and you did not deny my name. 9 Therefore I will send you some members of the synagogue of Satan who call themselves Jews and who lie, because they are not. I will make them come to you, bow down at your feet, and acknowledge that I have loved you. 10 You have guarded my doctrine in patience. Therefore I will guard you from the hour of trial that is coming upon all the world, to test the inhabitants of the earth. I am coming soon. 11 Hold fast to your faith. Let no one take away your crown. 12 I will make the victor a pillar in the temple of God. I will enable him to remain there forever. I will inscribe upon him the name of God and the name of my divine commonwealth, the New Jerusalem of heaven which comes down from God. I will inscribe upon him my new name. 13 Whoever has an ear let him hear what the Holy Spirit says to the Churches.' "

TO THE CHURCH OF LAODICEA

14 "Write to the Bishop of the Church in Laodicea: 'This is the message of the Lord of Amen, the expounder of the true faith, the beginning of the divine creation. 15 I know your achievements. You are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either cold or hot. 16 But because you are lukewarm, that is to say neither hot nor cold, I will repudiate you. 17 You say that you are rich and prosperous. So you feel that you need nothing. You do not know that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked. 18 Therefore I advise you to buy from me gold, refined by fire, which will make you rich. Buy from me white garments to clothe you, and cover your nakedness. Buy from me salve to anoint your eyes which will make you see. 19 I reprove and chasten those whom I love. So be zealous and repent. 20 Listen, I stand at the door and knock. If you hear my voice and open the door, I will come into your house and eat with you, and you with me. 21 I will grant to the victor to sit with me on my throne, as I myself triumphed and sat down with my Father on his throne. 22 Whoever has an ear let him hear what the Holy Spirit says to the Churches.' "

CHAPTER 4

THE COURT OF HEAVEN

1 Then I had another vision: I saw an open door in heaven. And the same voice which I had heard speaking to me at first

like a trumpet, said to me: "Come up here, and I will show you what must occur in the future." 2 Immediately I fell into a trance, and I saw a throne in heaven, and a man seated on the throne. 3 His face blazed like a jewel of jasper and sardius. Over the throne there was a halo of the color of an emerald. 4 Around the throne were twenty-four thrones, on which sat twenty-four Elders, wearing white garments with golden crowns on their heads. 5 Flashes of lightening and peals of thunder issued from the throne. Seven torches of fire, which symbolize the seven Spirits of God, were burning before the throne. 6 In front of it a sea of glass glistened like crystal.

Four Bodyguards full of eyes in front and behind, were standing around the throne on each side. 7 The first Bodyguard looked like a lion. The second Bodyguard looked like a bull. The third Bodyguard looked like a man. The fourth Bodyguard looked like a flying eagle. 8 Each one of these four Bodyguards had six wings. They were covered with eyes over and under their wings. Day and night they sing ceaselessly:

"Holy, holy, holy is the Lord our God Almighty, who was, who is, and who will manifest himself."

9 Whenever the Bodyguards render glory, honor, and thanks to the Lord who is seated on the throne, and lives forever and ever, 10 the twenty-four Elders kneel before him, worship him, cast their crowns before the throne, and sing:

11 "You are worthy, O Lord our God, of all glory, honor, and dominion. For you have created the universe, which has received life and existence through your will."

CHAPTER 5

THE SCROLL AND THE LAMB

1 Then I saw on the right hand of the Lord, who was seated on the throne, a scroll written on both sides, and sealed with seven seals. 2 Thereupon a mighty Angel asked loudly: "Who is qualified to open the scroll and break its seals?"

3 But no one in heaven and on earth could open the scroll and read it. 4 I cried bitterly, because no one was qualified to open the scroll and read it. 5 But one of the Elders said to me: "Do not cry. The lion of the tribe of Judah and of the line of David has triumphed. He will open the scroll and break its seals."

6 Then I saw standing between the throne, the four Bodyguards, and the twenty-four Elders a Lamb, which seemed to

have been slaughtered. He had seven horns and seven eyes, symbolizing the seven Spirits of God, which are sent on missions to all parts of the earth. 7 He came and took the scroll from the right hand of the Lord who was seated on the throne. 8 Thereupon the four Bodyguards and the twenty-four Elders knelt before the Lamb. Each one of them held a harp and a golden bowl full of incense, symbolizing the prayers of the people of God.

THE THREE SONGS OF PRAISE

9 Then they sang a new song:

"You are qualified to take the scroll and break its seals. For you have been slaughtered. You have bought for God with your blood every tribe, every tongue, every race, and every nation. 10 You have consecrated them as royal priests of God, and enabled them to reign over the earth."

11 Then I heard in my vision, the voices of many angels surrounding the throne, the Bodyguards, and the Elders, numbering myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands. 12 They sang loudly: "The Lamb who was slaughtered is worthy to receive power, wealth, wisdom, might, honor, glory, and blessing."

13 Thereupon I heard every creature in heaven, on earth, underneath the earth, on the sea, and in the sea, say: "Blessing, honor, glory, and power to the Lord who is seated on the throne and to the Lamb forever and ever."

14 The four Bodyguards answered: "Amen." The Elders knelt and worshiped.

CHAPTER 6

THE FIRST SIX SEALS

1 When the Lamb opened one of the seven seals, I heard in my vision one of the four Bodyguards say with a voice of thunder: "Come." 2 Then I saw a white horse with a rider who had a bow. He was given a crown, and he went out as a conquering hero.

3 When the Lamb opened the second seal, I heard the second Bodyguard say: "Come." 4 Then a bright red horse came out. Its rider was empowered to take away peace from the earth and make men slaughter one another. He was given a mighty sword.

5 When the Lamb opened the third seal, I heard the third Bodyguard say: "Come!" Then a black horse came out. Its rider had a pair of scales in his hands. 6 Thereupon I heard the four Bodyguards say with one voice: "A silver piece for a quart of wheat. A silver piece for three quarts of barley. But do not reduce the oil and the wine."

7 When the Lamb opened the fourth seal, I heard the fourth Bodyguard say: "Come!" 8 Then a pale horse came out. The name of its rider was Death. Hades followed him. They were given power over one quarter of the earth, to kill the people with sword, famine, pestilence, and the wild animals of the earth.

9 When the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of the martyrs who had been slain for the Gospel and for their faith. 10 They cried out loudly: "Holy and true Master, when are you going to judge the inhabitants of the earth and avenge our blood?"

11 They were given a white garment each and were told to wait a little longer, until the completion of the number of their fellow martyrs who were to be slaughtered as they had been.

12 When the Lamb opened the sixth seal, a mighty earthquake occurred. The sun became black like sackcloth. The full moon became like blood. 13 The stars of heaven fell upon the earth. Heaven became like a fig tree which drops its unripe figs when it is shaken by a violent wind. 14 The sky was torn apart and rolled up like a scroll. Every mountain and island was removed from its place. 15 The kings of the earth, the noblemen, the officers, the rich, the mighty, everybody, whether free or slave, concealed themselves in the caves and among the rocks of the mountains. 16 They said to the mountains and the rocks: "Fall on us and hide us from the sight of the Lord who is seated on the throne, and from the anger of the Lamb. 17 For the great day of retribution has come. No one can escape their anger."

CHAPTER 7

THE FOUR ANGELS

1 Then I saw four Angels standing at the four corners of the earth. They were holding the four winds. So no wind could blow on the earth, or on the sea, or on the trees. 2 Thereupon I saw another Angel ascend from the east with the seal of the

living God. He shouted loudly to the four Angels who were empowered to harm the earth and the sea, 3 saying: "Do not harm the earth, or the sea, or the trees until we mark the servants of our God on their foreheads."

4 I heard in my vision that the number of those who had been marked with the seal was a hundred and forty-four thousand out of every tribe of the sons of Israel: 5 Twelve thousand from the tribe of Judah; twelve thousand from the tribe of Reuben; twelve thousand from the tribe of Gad; 6 twelve thousand from the tribe of Asher; twelve thousand from the tribe of Naphthali; twelve thousand from the tribe of Manasseh; 7 twelve thousand from the tribe of Simeon; twelve thousand from the tribe of Levi; twelve thousand from the tribe of Issachar; 8 twelve thousand from the tribe of Zebulon; twelve thousand from the tribe of Joseph; twelve thousand from the tribe of Benjamin.

9 Then I looked up and saw a great innumerable crowd from every nation, tribe, race, and tongue, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, wearing white garments and bearing palm branches in their hands. 10 They cried out loudly: "Salvation comes from our God who sits upon the throne, and from the Lamb!"

11 All the Angels who stood around the throne, around the Elders, and around the four Bodyguards, fell on their faces before the throne and worshiped God. 12 They said: "Amen. Blessing, glory, wisdom, thanksgiving, honor, power, and dominion be to our God, forever and ever. Amen."

THE SEVENTH SEAL

13 Then one of the Elders asked me: "Who are those wearing white garments, and where do they come from?"

14 I answered him: "You know, my Lord." He said to me: "These are the men who have come out of the great ordeal. They washed their garments and whitened them through the blood of the Lamb. 15 Therefore they stand before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple. The Lord who sits upon the throne will shelter them in his presence. 16 They will never be hungry or thirsty again. They will never be burned by the sun and by the scorching heat. 17 For the Lamb who sits on the throne will be their shepherd. He will guide them to springs of living water. God will wipe every tear from their eyes."

CHAPTER 8

THE SEVEN ANGELS

1 When the Lamb opened the seventh seal, a silence of about half an hour occurred in heaven. 2 Then I saw that the seven Angels who stand before God were each given a trumpet. 3 Another Angel with a golden censer came and stood at the altar. He was given a great quantity of incense to offer with the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar before the throne. 4 The smoke of the incense rose before God with the prayers of the saints from the hand of the Angel.

5 Then the Angel took the censer and filled it with fire from the altar and threw it on the earth. Peals of thunder, explosions, flashes of lightning, and an earthquake followed.

6 Then the seven Angels with the trumpets made ready to blow them.

7 The first Angel blew his trumpet. Thereupon hail and fire, mixed with blood, fell on the earth. A third of the earth, a third of the trees, and all green grass were burnt up.

8 The second Angel blew his trumpet. Thereupon a great mountain, burning with fire, plunged into the sea. 9 A third of the sea became blood. A third of the living creatures in the sea died. A third of the ships were destroyed.

10 The third Angel blew his trumpet. Thereupon a great star, blazing like a torch, tumbled down from heaven. It fell on a third of the rivers and on the fountains of water. 11 The name of the star is Apsinthus, that is, Wormwood. Then a third of the waters became wormwood, and many men died of the water, because it was poisoned.

12 The fourth Angel blew his trumpet. A third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, a third of the stars, and a third of their light was darkened. So there was no light for one third of the day and of the night.

13 Then I looked up and I heard an eagle screaming loudly as it flew in midheaven: "Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth at the blasts of the other trumpets which the three other Angels are going to blow!"

CHAPTER 9

THE FIRST WOE

1 The fifth Angel blew his trumpet. Then I saw a star fall from heaven to the earth. This Angel was given the key to

the pit of the abyss. 2 He opened the bottomless pit. The smoke of a great furnace rose from the pit. The sun and the air were darkened from the smoke of the pit. 3 Locusts came on the earth out of the smoke. They were given the power of scorpions.

4 They were not allowed to injure the grass or plants or trees of the earth. They were authorized to attack only the men who had not been marked with the seal of God upon their foreheads. 5 They had no power to kill them. But they could torture them for five months. They inflicted a torture similar to the pain a man feels when he has been stung by a scorpion. 6 In those days men will seek death, but they will not find it. They will long to die, but death will fly from them.

7 In appearance the locusts were like war horses armed for battle. They wore crowns of gold on their heads. 8 They had the faces of men, the hair of women, and the teeth of lions. 9 Their breasts were covered by iron breast-plates. The noise of their wings resounded like that of many chariots and horses rushing into battle. 10 They had tails and stings like scorpions, with which they were empowered to injure men for five months. 11 They were commanded by a king, the fiend of the abyss, named in Hebrew Abbaddon, and in Greek Apollyon, that is, Exterminator.

12 The first woe has passed. But wait. There are two other woes still to come.

THE SECOND WOE

13 The sixth Angel blew his trumpet. Then I heard a voice from the golden altar of God 14 say to the sixth Angel: "Release the four fiends who are imprisoned by the great river Euphrates."

15 These four fiends were held in readiness for this hour, this day, this month, and this year. They were now released to slaughter one third of mankind. 16 The number of the cavalrymen under their command was twenty thousand armies of ten thousand each. I heard their number with my own ears. 17 I saw the horses and their riders in my vision. The riders wore fire red, blue, and brimstone yellow breast-plates. The horses had heads of lions. Fire, smoke, and sulphur poured out of their mouths. 18 One third of mankind were slaughtered by these three plagues, the fire, smoke, and brimstone that poured out of the mouths of these horses. 19 They were empowered to kill men with their mouths and their tails. For their tails were like heads of serpents with which they could attack people.

20 Yet the rest of mankind who survived these plagues did not repent of their misdeeds. They did not give up worshiping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone, and wood, which cannot see or hear or walk. 21 They did not repent of their murders, their sorceries, their immorality, and their thefts.

CHAPTER 10

THE LITTLE SCROLL

1 Then I saw another mighty Angel descend from heaven. He was wrapped up in a cloud and his head was surrounded by a rainbow. His face looked like the sun, and his legs looked like pillars of fire. 2 He held a little scroll open in his hand. He set his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land. He uttered a great shout like the roar of a lion. 3 When he shouted, the seven thunders echoed his roar. 4 When the seven thunders resounded, I was going to write it down, but I heard a voice from heaven say: "Seal up the roar of the seven thunders. Do not write it down!"

5 Thereupon the Angel, whom I had seen standing on the sea and on the land, 6 raised his right hand to heaven, and swore by God who lives forever and ever, who created the heavens, the earth, the sea, and all they contain, that there should be no more delay. 7 For when the time came for the seventh Angel to speak and blow his trumpet, the foreordained dispensation of God would be fulfilled, as he had announced to his servants the Prophets.

8 Then the voice I had heard from heaven spoke to me again, and said: "Go and take the little scroll that lies open in the hand of the Angel who is standing on the sea and on the land."

9 So I went up to the Angel and asked him to give me the little scroll. He answered me: "Take it and eat it. It will turn bitter in your stomach. But it will taste as sweet as honey in your mouth."

10 Thereupon I took the little scroll and ate it. Indeed, it tasted as sweet as honey in my mouth. But it turned bitter in my stomach.

11 Then the Angel said to me: "You must prophesy again about many peoples, races, languages, and kings."

CHAPTER 11

THE TEMPLE

1 Then I was given a reed, shaped like a wand, and I
received the following command: "Rise and measure the temple
of God with the altar, and count all the worshipers. 2 But do
not measure the court outside the temple. Leave it out. For it
is given up to the Gentiles, who will trample over the Holy
City for forty-two months. 3 In the meantime, I will grant the
power of prophecy to my two witnesses, wearing sackcloths,
for one thousand two hundred and sixty days."

THE TWO WITNESSES

4 These witnesses are the two olive trees and the two
lampstands which are standing in front of the Lord of the earth.
5 If anyone tries to harm them, fire will pour out from their
mouths and consume their foes. That is to say, whoever tries
to harm them is doomed to be killed.

6 They had the power to shut the doors of heaven and
let no rain fall during the days of their ministry. They could
turn the water into blood and smite the earth with any other
plague they pleased.

7 When they had fulfilled their testimony, the Monster
came out of the abyss, made war on them, conquered them, and
slaughtered them. 8 Their corpses lay in the market place of
the great city which is figuratively called Sodom or Egypt in
the prophetic language, where their Lord was also crucified.

9 For three days and a half, men of all the peoples, races,
languages, and nations gazed at their corpses and refused to
bury them. 10 All the inhabitants of the earth gloated over their
death. They celebrated their triumph by sending presents to
one another. For these two prophets were a torment to the
inhabitants of the earth.

11 But after three days and a half, the breath of divine
life entered into them. They stood on their feet. Those who saw
them were seized by terror. 12 They heard a loud voice from
heaven say to them: "Come up here." They went up to heaven
in a cloud while their enemies were looking at them.

13 At that moment a violent earthquake occurred, and one
tenth of the city was destroyed. Seven thousand people were
killed by the earthquake. All the others were filled with awe,
and acknowledged the glory of the God of heaven.

14 The second woe was past. The third woe is coming soon.

THE THIRD WOE

15 Then the seventh Angel blew his trumpet. Loud voices
in heaven were heard proclaiming: "The kingdom of the world
has become the Kingdom of God and of our Lord Jesus Christ
who will reign forever and ever." 16 The twenty-four Elders
who sit on their thrones before God fell on their faces and
worshiped God.

17 They said: "We give you thanks, Lord our God Almighty,
who are and who was. For now you have assumed your supreme
authority and inaugurated your reign. 18 The Gentiles have
vented their rage upon us. But now the day of your retribution
has arrived. Now you will judge the dead. Now you will reward
your servants, the prophets, the saints, and all those who fear
your name, little or great. Now you will exterminate the
exterminators of the earth."

19 Then the temple of God in heaven was thrown open.
The ark of the covenant was seen inside the temple. There
followed flashes of lightning, explosions, peals of thunder,
earthquakes, and heavy hailstorms.

CHAPTER 12

THE WOMAN AND THE DRAGON

1 Then I saw a great miracle in heaven: It was a Woman
enveloped in the sun, stepping on the moon with her feet, and
wearing a crown of twelve stars on her head. 2 She was pregnant
with a child, and screamed in her pangs of birth and in her
pains of delivery.

3 Again I saw another miracle in heaven: It was a great
red Dragon with seven heads and ten horns, bearing a crown
on each head. 4 His tail swept away one third of the stars of
heaven and flung them down upon the earth. He stood in front
of the Woman to devour her child.

5 The Woman gave birth to a male Child who is going to
rule all the Gentiles with a rod of iron. So he was carried up
to the throne of God. 6 Thereupon the Woman fled into the desert
to a place prepared by God to be nourished for one thousand
two hundred and sixty days.

MICHAEL

7 Now war broke out in heaven. Michael and his Angels
fought against the Dragon. 8 The Dragon and his henchmen

were defeated and thrown out of heaven. 9 So the great Dragon, the serpent of old, who is called the Devil and Satan, the deceiver of all mankind, was hurled down to the earth, and his henchmen were thrown down with him.

THE TRIUMPH

10 Then I heard a mighty voice proclaim in heaven: "The salvation, the dominion, the Kingdom of our God, and the sovereignty of his Messiah have now come. For the accuser, who slandered our brethren day and night before our God, is now overthrown. 11 Our brethren have defeated him through the blood of the Lamb and through the might of their faith. For they preferred death to apostasy. 12 Therefore, rejoice, you heavens and you who dwell in them. But woe to you, O earth and sea, for Satan has come down to you in a great rage, because he knows that his time is very short."

13 When the Dragon saw that he was thrown down to earth, he went in pursuit of the Woman who had given birth to the male Child. 14 But the Woman was given the two wings of the great eagle, which enabled her to fly to a place in the desert where she was nourished during her foreordained period away from the presence of the Serpent.

15 Then the Serpent poured water from his mouth like a river, to drown the Woman. 16 But the earth saved the Woman by swallowing the river which the Dragon had poured out. 17 The Dragon was enraged at the Woman, and went off to wage war against the rest of her children who obey the commandments of God and profess the religion of Jesus.

CHAPTER 13

THE MONSTER OF THE SEA

1 As I was standing on the sand of the sea, I saw a Monster rising out of the waves with ten horns and seven heads, with a crown on each horn and a blasphemous name on each head. 2 The Monster looked like a leopard. But he had a bear's feet and a lion's mouth. The Dragon gave this Monster his power, his sovereignty, and his great authority. 3 One of the Monster's heads had been mortally wounded. But the wound was healed. All the inhabitants of the earth admired the Monster. 4 They praised the Dragon for giving his dominion to the Monster,

whom they worshiped, saying: "No one can stand against the Monster. No one can fight against him."

5 The Monster was empowered to utter arrogant blasphemies, and to exercise authority for forty-two months. 6 He blasphemed God, his name, his dwelling-place, and the inhabitants of heaven. 7 He was also allowed to wage war against the saints and to defeat them. He was given authority over every tribe, people, language, and nation. 8 All the inhabitants of the earth have worshiped him, that is all those whose names are not inscribed in the Book of Life of the Lamb who was slaughtered. 9 Whoever has an ear let him hear. 10 Whoever is destined for captivity will go into captivity. Whoever is destined to be killed with the sword will be killed with the sword. Here is an opportunity for the saints to show endurance and faith in God.

THE MONSTER OF THE EARTH

11 Again I saw another Monster rise out of the earth. He had two horns like a lamb, but he spoke like a dragon. 12 He exercised all the authority of the First Monster in his presence. He compelled all the inhabitants of the earth to worship the First Monster whose mortal wound had been healed. 13 He performed great miracles. He made fire come down from heaven to earth in the sight of men.

14 He deceived all the inhabitants of the earth through the miracles he was empowered to perform in the presence of the First Monster. He ordered men to make a statue of the First Monster who received the mortal wound and survived it. 15 He was empowered to give life to the statue of the First Monster and even make him speak. He slaughtered all those who refused to worship the statue of the First Monster. 16 Moreover, he compelled everyone, small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to be marked on the right hand or on the forehead. 17 For no one was allowed to buy or sell unless he had the mark, that is the name of the First Monster or the number of his name. 18 This was a wise provision. For every intelligent man can calculate the number of the First Monster. His number indicates a certain man. It is six hundred and sixty-six.

CHAPTER 14

THE LAMB AND THE VIRGINS

1 Then I saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion. He was surrounded by a hundred forty-four thousand disciples who had his name and the name of his Father marked on their foreheads. 2 Thereupon I heard a sound from heaven which echoed like a mighty cataract and like a tremendous peal of thunder. It was followed by a melody of harpers who were playing on their harps. 3 They were singing a new song in front of the Lord, the four Bodyguards, and the twenty-four Elders. No one could learn that song except the one hundred forty-four thousand disciples who had been redeemed from earthly sins. 4 These disciples had never allowed their virginity to be defiled by the pleasures of the flesh. They accompany the Lamb wherever he goes. They were the first men to be ransomed by the Lord and by the Lamb. 5 They always despised falsehood. They always proclaimed the truth. They now stand immaculate before the throne of God forevermore.

THE THREE ANGELS

6 Again I saw another Angel flying in midheaven, who proclaimed the eternal Gospel to all the nations, tribes, races, and peoples who dwell on earth. He cried aloud: 7 "Praise and glorify the Lord. The hour of his judgment has arrived. Worship the Lord, who created heaven, the earth, the sea, and the springs of water."

8 A second Angel followed. He cried out: "Fallen, fallen is mighty Babylon who intoxicated and infuriated all the Gentiles with the wine of her pagan orgies."

9 A third Angel followed. He cried aloud: "Those who worship the Monster and his statue, or wear the mark of the Monster on their forehead or on their hand, will be offered wine to drink. 10 But the wine they will drink is the wrath of God, poured out of his eternal vengeance. They will be tormented in fire and brimstone in front of his holy Angels and in front of the Lamb. 11 The smoke of their torture will go up forever and ever. Those who worshiped the Monster and his statue, those who bear the mark of his name will not have a single day or night of rest."

THE SAINTS

12 Here is an opportunity for the saints, who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.

13 Then I heard a voice from heaven, saying: "Write: Blessed are those who die in the name of the Lord from now on. Yes, the Holy Spirit tells us that they are going to rest from their labors. For their deeds will follow them in heaven."

THE JUDGMENT

14 Thereupon I saw a man sitting on a white cloud, who wore a golden crown on his head and held a sharp sickle in his hand. 15 Then an Angel came out of the temple in heaven and cried out loudly to the man who was sitting on the cloud: "Use your sickle and reap. The time has come, and the harvest is ripe." 16 So the man sitting on the cloud swung his sickle on the earth, and the harvest was reaped.

17 A second Angel, who also had a sharp sickle, came out of the temple in heaven. 18 He was met by a third Angel, who came out from the altar, who had power over fire, and who cried out loudly to the second Angel who had the sharp sickle: "Use your sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth. For the grapes are ripe." 19 So the Angel swung his sickle on the earth, gathered the vintage, and threw it into the great winepress of the wrath of God.

20 The grapes were trodden in the winepress outside the city. Blood poured out of the winepress in a stream so high that for two hundred miles it came up to the bridles of the horses.

CHAPTER 15

THE SEA OF GLASS

1 Then a great and wonderful miracle occurred in heaven. I saw the Seven Angels who inflicted on mankind the last seven plagues by which the wrath of God was finally completed. 2 I had the vision of a sea of glass tinged with fire. Those who had defied the Monster, his statue, and the number of his name, were standing beside the sea of glass with divine harps in their hands. 3 They sang the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying: "Your deeds are great and marvellous, O Lord our God Almighty! Your ways are righteous and truth-

ful, O King of the Nations. 4 All men will praise and glorify your name, O Lord. You alone are holy. All nations will come and worship you. Your just retributions have now been revealed."

THE ANGELS AND THE PLAGUES

5 Thereupon I looked up and I saw that the heavenly temple which contains the tabernacle of the revelation was thrown open. 6 The Seven Angels with the seven plagues came out of the temple. They were wearing glistening linen garments and were girded with golden belts. 7 One of the four Bodyguards gave to each one of the Seven Angels a golden bowl filled with the wrath of God who lives forever and ever. 8 In the meantime, the temple was filled with the smoke of incense and the songs of praise for the glory of God. No one was allowed to enter the shrine until the seven plagues of the Seven Angels were finished.

CHAPTER 16

THE FIRST THREE BOWLS

1 Then I heard a loud command from the temple telling the Seven Angels: "Go forth and pour out on the earth the seven bowls of the wrath of God."

2 So the First Angel went forth and poured out his bowl on the earth. Loathsome and malignant ulcers attacked the men who bore the mark of the Monster and worshiped his statue.

3 The Second Angel poured out his bowl into the sea. The waters of the sea turned into blood like that of a corpse and killed every living creature in the sea.

4 The Third Angel poured out his bowl into the rivers and the fountains of water. They all turned into blood. 5 Thereupon I heard the Third Angel say: "Your retributions are righteous, O Holy Lord, who are and who was. 6 For men have shed the blood of saints and prophets. Therefore you have now given them blood to drink. It is their due." 7 Then I heard a voice from the altar answer: "Yes, O Lord our God Almighty, your retributions are appropriate and righteous."

THE SECOND THREE BOWLS

8 The Fourth Angel poured out his bowl on the sun which was empowered to burn the people with fire. 9 They were all scorched by the fierce heat. They blasphemed the name of God

who tortured them with these plagues. But they did not repent and did not glorify him.

10 The Fifth Angel poured out his bowl on the throne of the Monster and plunged his kingdom into darkness. The people gnawed their tongues in anguish. 11 They blasphemed the God of heaven for their painful ulcers. But they did not repent of their deeds.

12 The Sixth Angel poured out his bowl on the great river Euphrates. Its water was dried up. Thus the way was prepared for the invasion of the kings of the East.

THE UNCLEAN SPIRITS

13 Then I saw three loathsome spirits like frogs come out from the mouth of the Dragon, from the mouth of the First Monster, and from the mouth of the Second Monster, or the false prophet. 14 They were satanic spirits which could perform miracles. They went forth to assemble the kings of the whole world for battle on the great day of God the Almighty, who said: 15 "Listen, I am coming unexpectedly. Blessed is the watchful man who is ready to receive me in decent attire." 16 So the loathsome spirits assembled the kings of the whole world at the place which is called in Hebrew Armageddon.

THE SEVENTH BOWL

17 The Seventh Angel poured his bowl into the air. A loud voice cried out from the temple: "It is over!" 18 Flashes of lightning, explosions, peals of thunder, and a violent earthquake followed. Such a great and violent earthquake had never occurred before in the history of mankind. 19 The great city broke into three pieces, and all the cities of the Gentiles fell in ruins. God remembered great Babylon. He made her drain the cup of his furious wrath. 20 Islands and mountains disappeared from the face of the earth. 21 Huge hailstones of immense weight dropped on men from heaven. The people blasphemed God for this fearful plague of hail.

CHAPTER 17

THE GREAT COURTESAN

1 Then one of the Seven Angels who poured out the seven bowls came to me and told me: "Come, I will show you the doom of the great Courtesan whose capital is located at the meeting-

place of many rivers. 2 She has corrupted and intoxicated the kings and the inhabitants of the earth with the wine of her pagan orgies." 3 Then in a vision he carried me away into a desert where I saw a Woman covered with blasphemous titles seated on a scarlet monster with seven heads and ten horns. 4 She was dressed in purple and scarlet. She was bedecked with gold, jewels, and pearls. She held in her hand a golden goblet, decorated with abominable and sacriligious carvings. 5 She had her name inscribed on her forehead: "The great pagan Babylon, mother of the idolatries and abominations of the earth." 6 She was drunk with the blood of the saints and the martyrs of Jesus. I was deeply shocked when I saw her.

THE INTERPRETATION

7 But the Angel said to me: "Wait, I will explain to you the symbolic meaning of the Woman and the Monster with seven heads and ten horns on which she is seated. 8 The Monster you saw existed. But it exists no more. True, it will rise again from the abyss. But it will finally be destroyed. The inhabitants of the earth, whose names have never been inscribed in the Book of Life, will be amazed when they see that the Monster existed, that it exists no more, and yet it is going to rise up again.

9 "Here is an intelligent explanation. The seven heads mean the seven hills on which the Woman is seated. They also mean seven kings. 10 Five of them have fallen. One is now reigning. The seventh one has not yet come. But when he comes, he must remain only for a short time.

11 "The Monster who existed, but does not exist any longer, is the eighth king. He comes after the seventh king. But he is going to destruction also. 12 The ten horns you saw are also ten kings. They have not yet received any kingdom. But they will receive royal authority with the Monster for one hour only. 13 They all have one single purpose, namely to support the Monster with all their power and authority. 14 They will all wage war against the Lamb. But the Lamb will defeat them with his foreordained, chosen, and faithful followers. Because he is the Lord of Lords and the King of Kings."

15 Then the Angel added: "The rivers on which the Courtesan is enthroned are peoples, tribes, nations, and races. 16 The ten kings of the ten horns, and the Monster will rise against the Courtesan. They will make her desolate and naked.

They will devour her flesh and burn her up with fire. 17 For God will use them as instruments to carry out his purpose and his decrees. 18 Now the Courtesan you saw is the great city which has dominion over the kings of the earth."

CHAPTER 18

THE FALL OF BABYLON

1 Then I saw another Angel coming down from heaven. He had great authority and brightened the earth with his splendor.

2 He cried out loudly: "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great! She has become the den of demons, a nest of all the unclean spirits, a haunt of all the loathsome and hateful vultures. 3 For all the Gentiles have been intoxicated with the wine of her abominable orgies. All the kings of the earth have been corrupted by her idolatry. All the merchants of the earth have been enriched by her wanton luxury."

THE PUNISHMENT

4 Then I heard another voice from heaven, shouting: "Come out of her, my people. Otherwise, you will pay for her sins, and you will share in her plagues. 5 Her sins are piled up as high as heaven, and God is now denouncing her iniquities.

6 "Treat her as she has treated you. Repay her twice for her misdeeds. Mix her a double draught in the cup she mixed for others. 7 Requite her with torment and grief for all her glory and luxury. She claims to be enthroned like a queen, not like a sorrowing widow. 8 Yet all the plagues, death, disaster, and famine will overtake her in a single day, and she will be burned down with fire. For her judge is the Lord our God Almighty."

THE DIRGES

9 "The kings of the earth who have shared her idolatry and her luxury will weep and lament over her doom when they see the smoke of her conflagration. 10 Standing at a safe distance, for fear of sharing her punishment, they will cry out: 'Alas, alas, Babylon the great, the mighty city! Retribution has overtaken you in a single hour!'

11 "All the merchants of the world will weep and lament over her. 12 For no one will now buy their cargoes of gold,

silver, precious stones, pearls, fine linen, purple, silk, scarlet, aromatic woods, ivory, precious wood, brass, iron, and marble; 13 cinnamon, balm, perfume, myrrh, incense, wine, oil, wheat, fine flour, cattle, sheep, horses, chariots, human bodies, and human souls.

14 "The fruits which her soul desired are gone. Her luxury and splendor have perished forever. 15 The merchants of these wares, who had grown rich from their trade with her, will stand at a distance, for fear of sharing her torment, grief, and lamentation, 16 saying: 'Alas, alas, great city, arrayed in fine linen, purple, and scarlet, bedecked with gold, jewels, and pearls! All this wealth has vanished in a single hour!'

17 "All the shipmasters, sea-faring men, navigators, and the traders on the sea, will stand at a distance. 18 They will cry out when they see the smoke of your conflagration: 'No city can be compared to that great city.' 19 They will throw dust on their heads. They will weep, they will grieve, and they will cry aloud: 'Alas, alas, great city, by whose wealth all the shipowners of the earth were enriched! She has been destroyed in a single hour.'

20 "Triumph, O heaven, over her fall! Triumph, you Saints, Apostles, and Prophets! For God has avenged you upon her."

THE PROMISE

21 Then a mighty Angel lifted up a huge millstone, hurled it into the sea, and cried out: "With such a crash, O Babylon, great city, you will be overthrown and disappear forever! 22 The sound of harpers, musicians, flute-players, and trumpeters will never be heard in you again! Craftsmen of any craft will never be found in you again! The sound of the millstone will never be heard in you again! 23 The light of a lamp will never shine in you again! The voice of bridegroom and of bride will never be heard in you again! For you have despoiled the earth through your merchants. You have led astray all the Gentiles through your idolatry. 24 You have shed the blood of all the Prophets, the Saints, and the Martyrs on earth."

CHAPTER 19

THE ANGELIC SONG

1 Then I heard the mighty shout of a great multitude in heaven, exclaiming: "Alleluia! Salvation, glory, and dominion belong to our God. 2 For his sentences are appropriate and righteous. He has condemned the great Courtesan who corrupted the earth with her idolatry. He has avenged the blood of his servants upon her."

3 They shouted for a second time: "Alleluia! The smoke of her conflagration rises forever and ever."

4 Thereupon the twenty-four Elders and the four Bodyguards fell down and worshiped the Lord who sits upon the throne, saying: "Amen! Alleluia!"

5 A voice answered them from the throne, saying: "Praise our God, all his servants, great or small, who obey him."

THE TRIUMPHAL SONG

6 Then I heard the shout of a great throng, which sounded like the roar of cataracts and the peals of mighty thunders, saying: "Alleluia! For the Lord our God Almighty has inaugurated his Kingdom! 7 Let us rejoice. Let us celebrate. Let us glorify him! The time for the wedding of the Lamb has come! His bride is ready for the ceremony. 8 She is arrayed in fine linen, radiant and glistening. For her garments symbolize the righteous deeds of the saints."

9 Thereupon the Angel said to me: "Write! Blessed are the guests who are invited to the Wedding Supper of the Lamb!" Then he added: "These are the true words of God!"

10 I fell down at his feet to worship him. But he told me: "You must not worship me. I am a fellow servant like you and your brethren who profess the religion of Jesus. Worship only God. For the religion of Jesus has been announced by his Prophets."

THE DIVINE WARRIOR

11 Then I saw a white horse appear in the wide open heaven. His rider is faithful and true. He is the defender and champion of righteousness. 12 His eyes blaze like fire. He wears many crowns on his head. He has a name inscribed which no one knows but himself. 13 He is arrayed in a robe dipped in blood. He is the Word of God.

KING OF KINGS

14 The knights of heaven, wearing fine linen, radiant and glistening, followed on white horses. 15 A sharp double-edged sword proceeded from the mouth of their leader, ready to smite the Gentiles. He will rule them with a rod of iron. He will tread the winepress of the furious wrath of God Almighty. 16 He had the following inscription on his robe and on his thigh: "King of Kings and Lord of Lords."

17 Then I saw an Angel standing in the sun, who loudly called all the vultures which fly in midheaven: "Come, gather for the great supper of divine retribution! 18 Come and eat the flesh of kings, the flesh of warlords, the flesh of noblemen, the flesh of horses and horsemen, the flesh of all wicked men, free and slave, great and small."

THE DEFEAT

19 The Monster and the kings of the earth with their armies gathered to make war against the Lord who sits upon the white horse, and against his army of white horsemen. 20 But the Monster was captured along with the False Prophet who in his presence had performed the miracles. Through them he had led astray those who were marked with the seal of the Monster and had worshiped his statue. Both of them were flung alive into the fiery lake of burning brimstone. 21 Their henchmen were slaughtered by the double-edged sword which proceeded from the mouth of the White Horseman. All the vultures of the sky were gorged with the flesh of these fiends.

CHAPTER 20

SATAN IN CHAINS

1 Then I saw an Angel coming down from heaven. He held in his hand the key of the abyss and a great chain. 2 He seized the Dragon, the old Serpent, that is the Devil or Satan, and chained him for a thousand years. 3 He threw him into the abyss, locked him in, and sealed the door of his dungeon. Thus he kept him from leading astray the Gentiles until the thousand years were over, after which he had to release him for a short period.

REIGN OF THE SAINTS

4 Then I saw magistrates seated on thrones. They were empowered to act as judges. I also saw the souls of the Martyrs who were beheaded for the religion of Jesus and the Gospel of God. They had refused to worship the Monster or his statue, and to receive his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. Now they were resurrected and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

5 The other dead had to wait for their resurrection a thousand years. For this was the first resurrection. 6 Blessed are the holy men who share in this first resurrection. They are not subject to the second death. For they become priests of God and of Christ. They will reign with Christ for a thousand years.

SATAN RELEASED

7 When the thousand years were ended, Satan was released from his prison. 8 He was allowed to lead astray the Gentiles in the four corners of the earth, that is Gog and Magog, and muster them for battle in numbers like the sand of the seashore. 9 They marched up over the broad earth. They surrounded the camp of the Saints and the beloved City. But fire came down from heaven and consumed them. 10 The Devil who had led them astray was hurled into the lake of fire and brimstone. There they joined the Monster and the False Prophet, with whom they will be tormented forever and ever.

THE LAST JUDGMENT

11 Then I saw the Lord seated on a great white throne. Heaven and earth fled away from his presence and vanished. 12 All the dead, great and small, stood in front of the throne. The books of their deeds, including the Book of Life, were opened. The dead were sentenced according to the deeds they had done which were written in the books. 13 The sea gave up her dead. Death and Hades gave up their dead. They were all sentenced according to their deeds.

14 Then Death and Hades were hurled itno the lake of fire. 15 Anyone whose name was not listed in the Book of Life was also hurled into the lake of fire.

CHAPTER 21

NEW HEAVEN AND NEW EARTH

1 Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth. For the old heaven, the old earth, and the old sea had vanished. 2 Thereupon I saw the holy city, the New Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, like a bride arrayed and adorned to meet her husband. 3 Then I heard a loud voice from the throne, saying: "Listen, the dwelling-place of God has come down on earth. Now God will dwell with men. They will be his people. God himself will live with them. 4 He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. There will be no death any longer. Grief, sorrow, and pain will vanish. The old order has passed away."

5 The Lord who was seated on the throne said: "Listen, I am renovating everything." He also told me: "Write! For these words are trustworthy and truthful." 6 Then he added: "It is over! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end of all creation. I will give priceless water to the thirsty from the fountain of life. 7 The victors will inherit all these blessings. So I will be their God, and they will be my sons. 8 On the other hand, all the cowardly, the faithless, the defiled, the murderers. the fornicators, the sorcerers, the idolaters, and the liars, will be hurled into the burning lake of fire and brimstone. That will be the second death."

THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM

9 Thereupon one of the Seven Angels who poured out the seven bowls full of the seven plagues, came and spoke to me, saying: "Come, I will show you the Bride, the wife of the Lamb."

10 He carried me away in a vision to a great and high mountain, from which he showed me Jerusalem, the Holy City, descending out of heaven from God. 11 She was surrounded with a divine aura. She sparkled with the radiance of a very precious stone, like jasper. She was as transparent as crystal.

12 She was surrounded by a great, high wall with twelve gates, which were guarded by twelve Angels. The names of the twelve tribes of Israel were carved on the twelve gates. 13 There were three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the south, and three gates on the west. 14 The wall of the city was built on twelve foundation stones, which bore the names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb.

15 The Angel who talked with me had a golden rod to

measure the city and its gates and walls. 16 The city was a square, the length the same as its breadth. When the Angel measured the city with his rod, he counted twelve thousand furlongs. Its length, breadth, and height were equal. 17 When he measured the wall, he counted one hundred forty-four cubits. They were reckoned by the measure of a man which is equivalent to that of an Angel.

18 The wall was built of jasper. The city was built of gold as transparent as crystal. 19 The foundation stones of the wall of the city were adorned with all kinds of jewels: The first foundation stone was adorned with jasper; the second with saphire; the third with agate; the fourth with emerald; 20 the fifth with onyx; the sixth with sardius; the seventh with chrysolite; the eighth with beryl; the ninth with topaz; the tenth with chrysoprase; the eleventh with jacinth; and the twelfth with amethyst. 21 The twelve gates were built of pearls. Each one of the gates consisted of a single pearl. The principal street of the city was paved with gold, as transparent as crystal.

THE DIVINE LIGHT

22 I saw no temple in the city. For the Lord our God Almighty and the Lamb are themselves her temple. 23 The city does not need the sun nor the moon to shine in it. For the glory of God is her light, and the Lamb is her lamp. 24 The nations will walk in her light. The kings of the earth will shine in her splendor. 25 Her gates will never be shut by day, and there will be no night in that city. 26 She will be adorned by the glory and the wealth of all nations. 27 No sinners, nor idolaters, nor deceivers will be tolerated within her gates. The only ones who will be admitted are those whose names are listed in the Book of Life.

CHAPTER 22

THE TREE OF LIFE

1 Then the Angel showed me the river of living water, transparent as crystal which flowed from the throne of God and of the Lamb. 2 In the center of the city square and on both sides of the river grew the tree of life. It produced a different kind of fruit each month. Its leaves brought health to all the nations. 3 Idolatry was abolished. The throne of God and of the Lamb was established in the city. His servants worshiped

him. 4 They saw his face, and they bore his name on their foreheads. 5 There was no more night. No one needed light from lamp or sun. For the Lord our God illuminated them, and they will reign forever and ever.

CONFIRMATION

6 Then the Angel said to me: "These prophecies are trustworthy and truthful. The Lord our God, who inspired the Prophets, has sent me to reveal to his servants the events which must happen in the near future. 7 Moreover, he ordered me to remind you that the Lord said: Listen, I am coming very soon. Blessed is the man who heeds the prophecies contained in this book."

8 I, John, have heard these prophecies and have seen these visions. When I heard and saw them, I fell down to worship the Angel who revealed them to me. 9 But he told me: "You must not worship me. I am a fellow servant like you, like your brethren the prophets, and like the believers who heed the prophecies of this book. Worship only God."

EXHORTATION

10 Then he added: "Do not conceal the prophecies contained in this book. For the time of their fulfillment is drawing near. 11 Warn the evildoers, the idolaters, as well as the righteous, and the saints: 12 Listen, I am coming soon to reward everyone for what he has done. 13 I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end of all creation." 14 Blessed are those who obey his commandments. For they will be allowed to approach the tree of life and to enter the gates of the city. 15 There will be no room for the evildoers, the sorcerers, the fornicators, the murderers, the idolaters, and the deceivers.

ATTESTATION

16 "I, Jesus, have sent my Angel to give you this testimony for the Churches. I am the root and the offspring of David. I am the radiant morning star." 17 The Holy Spirit and the Holy City say: "Come!" Let the hearer also say: "Come!" Whoever is thirsty, let him come. Whoever wants it, let him receive the living water freely.

18 I warn everyone who reads the prophecies contained in

this book: If anyone adds anything to them, God will inflict upon him all the plagues described in this book. 19 If anyone removes anything from them, God will remove from him his share in the tree of life and in the holy City described in this book.

20 The Lord who testifies to the contents of this book says: "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen! Come, Lord Jesus!

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with all the saints. Amen.

CHURCH BOOKS

Translated and Compiled by

METROPOLITAN FAN STYLIAN NOLI, Mus. B., Ph. D.

Published by the Albanian Orthodox Church in America



In English

1. EASTERN ORTHODOX PRAYER BOOK

The EASTERN ORTHODOX PRAYER BOOK, beautifully printed and clothbound, 696 pages, contains:

Great Vespers, Blessing of Bread, Matins, Liturgy of St. John Chrysostom (audible parts), Liturgy of Presanctified Gifts (audible parts), Holy Baptism, Holy Matrimony, Holy Confession, Holy Unction, Ordinations and Promotions, Dedication of Church, Memorial Service, Funeral Service, Lesser Blessing of Water, Great Blessing of Water, Epitaphy, Easter Matin Service, Easter Liturgy, Easter Vesper Service, Pentecost Prayers, Holy Cross Adoration, Pontifical Mass, Thanksgiving Service, Miscellaneous Prayers, Dismissal Anthems, Introits, Collects, Benedictions, Calendar of Saints, Matin Gospels, Lessons from Epistles and Gospels for Sundays and Holidays (King James version), Table of Sundays from 1952-1972 according to the New and Old Calendar.

Price, $10.00

2. EASTERN ORTHODOX HYMNAL

THE EASTERN ORTHODOX HYMNAL, handsomely engraved and clothbound, 186 pages, contains:

Anthems for mixed choir for Vespers, Matins, the Liturgy of St. John Chrysostom and of St. Basil the Great, Funeral Service, Holy Matrimony, Holy Week, and Easter. All the liturgical responses and most of the anthems have been rendered according to the rhythm of the old Slavonic text, in order to fit the various settings by he Russian composers. Besides the traditional Russian Plainchant melodies, the following compositions are included:

PEACE LITANY (VELIKAYA EKTENIA), Smolensky
PSALM 103, Archbishop Nikanor and Ippolitov-Ivonov
ONLY-BEGOTTEN (EDINORODNY), Turchaninov, Starorusky, and Panchenko
THE BEATITUDES, Rimsky-Korsakov
INTROITS (PRIIDITE), Rebikov, Chaikovsky, and Arkhiereskoye
COLLECT OF CARNIVAL SUNDAY, Sheremetev
THRICE-HOLY (TRISFIATOYE), Arkhangelsky, Chaikovsky, Bortniansky, and Arkhiereskoye
CHERUBIMIC HYMNS, Bortniansky Nos. 5 and 7; Smirnov, No. 3; Allemanov, No. 2; Lomakin, No. 9; Holy Thursday, Lvov
CREED (VERUYU), Berezovsky, Rimsky-Korsakov, and Zadonskoye
PEACE AND MERCY (MILOST MIRA), Rimsky-Korsakov, Starorusky, Vinogradov, Feofanovskoe, Traditional from St. Basil's Liturgy

TO THEE WE SING (TEBE POEM), Smirnov, Rozhnov, Vasil'ev, Lomakin, Allemanov, Chaikovsky
PRAISEWORTHY (DOSTOJNO), Bortniansky, Pontifical, and Kievskoye
THE LORD'S PRAYER (OTCHE NASH), Sheremetev, Smirnov, and Rimsky-Korsakov
O PRAISE YE (HVALITE), Arkhangelsky, Lomakin
SHINING TORCHLIGHT (SFETE TIKHI), Dvoretsky and Arkhangelsky
NOW DISMISS (NINYE OTPUSHCHAESHY), Arkhangelsky
POLIELEI, Arkhangelsky
GREAT DOXOLOGY, Feofanovskoye
LORD OUR GOD HAVE MERCY (GOSPODI POMILUI)
ON HOLY CROSS DAY, Lvovsky
PSALM 102, Arkhangelsky
I LAMENT (PLACHU I RIDAYU), Bogdanov and Chesnokov
WHEN YOU SEE ME (ZRIASCHE MYA BEZGLASNA), Chesnokov
WEDDING GRADUAL, Tesselsky
HOLY WEEK, EPITAPHY LAMENTATIONS, 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Stanzas, Byzantine
EASTER ANTHEMS, Bakhmetiev, Galitskoye, and Byzantine
OVATIONS (MNOGAYA LETA), Bortniansky and Turchaninov

Price, $8.00

3. EASTERN ORTHODOX POCKET PRAYER BOOK

The EASTERN ORTHODOX POCKET PRAYER BOOK is a small Service Book or Mikron Euchologion, beautifully printed and clothbound, 303 pages 5" by 7" in size. It is large enough to contain the most important services of the Eastern Orthodox Church, and small enough to be carried in the pocket of priest or worshipper. It is dedicated "to the American Orthodox Church of the future, which will unite all Orthodox groups and enable them to fulfill their evangelic mission in the United States of America." It contains:

Great Vespers, Blessing of Bread, Matins, Preparation of Liturgy (unabridged), Liturgy of St. John Chrysostom (with all the secret prayers), Baptism, Matrimony, Penance, Unction, Ordinations and Promotions, Pontifical Mass, Lesser Blessing of Water, Thanksgiving Service, Memorial Service, Funeral Service, Miscellaneous Prayers, Dismissal Anthems, Introits, Collects, Benedictions, and a Short Catechism of the Eastern Orthodox Church.

Price, $5.00

4. EASTERN ORTHODOX CATECHISM

The EASTERN ORTHODOX CATECHISM is the most comprehensive book of this type ever published in the United States for use in Sunday Schools. It contains 508 sets of questions and answers covering the most important doctrines contained in the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, the Ten Commandments, and the Beatitudes, as interpreted by the Eastern Orthodox Church. It is dedicated "to the younger generation of the Eastern Orthodox Church, who will take over and carry on her evangelistic mission in the United States of America."

Two masterpieces of Byzantine hymnology, namely the three stanzas of the EPITAPHY LAMENTATIONS (Epitaphios Thrinos) and the four stanzas of SAINT MARY'S SALUTATIONS (Herestismi tis Panagias) from the Acathist Hymn, have been added at the end of the Catechism. For the first time they have been rhythmically translated into English.

Beautifully printed, clothbound, 5" by 7" in size, 162 pages.

Price, $5.00

5. THREE LITURGIES OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH

The THREE LITURGIES OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH, beautifully printed and clothbound, .344 pages, contains the following services unabridged and with all the secret prayers:

Great Vespers, Blessing of Bread, Matins, Hours, Preparation of Liturgy, Liturgy of Saint John Chrysostom, Liturgy of Saint Basil the Great, Liturgy of Presanctified Sacraments, and Benedictions.

Price, $5.00

6. GOSPEL LECTIONARY OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH

The GOSPEL LECTIONARY OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH, beautifully printed and clothbound, 543 pages, contains all the traditional Gospel Lessons which are read in the Eastern Orthodox Churches on Sundays, week days, and Holidays throughout the year without any abbreviation or omission. Here are some of the special features of this book:

a) It is a new translation from the original Greek into modern English.

b) It is the first, and up to the time of its publication, the only Eastern Orthodox translation of its kind.

c) It can be used as an Altar Gospel, placed over the Antimensium, for Services in English.

d) It is indispensable for every Eastern Orthodox clergyman in the United States and Canada.

e) It is indispensable for every Sunday School of our denomination in an English-speaking country.

f) It is indispensable for every English-speaking member of our Church who wants to read the traditional Gospel Lesson every day of the year.

g) It is valuable for libraries which want a complete book of the Eastern Orthodox Gospel Lectionary.

Price, $10.00

7. EPISTLE LECTIONARY OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH

The EPISTLE LECTIONARY OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH, beautifully printed and clothbound, 464 pages, contains all the traditional Epistle Lessons which are read in the Eastern Orthodox Churches on Sundays, week days, and Holidays throughout the year without any abbreviation or omission. Here are some of the special features of this book:

a) It is a new translation from the original Greek into modern English.

b) It is the first, and up to the time of its publication, the only Eastern Orthodox translation of its kind.

c) It can be used by the Reader of the Church for Services in English.

d) It is indispensable for every Eastern Orthodox clergyman in the United States and Canada.

e) It is indispensable for every Sunday School of our denomination in an English-speaking country.

f) It is indispensable for every English-speaking member of our Church who wants to read the traditional Epistle Lesson every day of the year.

g) It is valuable for libraries which want a complete book of the Eastern Orthodox Epistle Lectionary.

Price, $10.00

8. BYZANTINE HYMNAL

The BYZANTINE HYMNAL, handsomely engraved, clothbound, 134 pages, consists of two parts: The first part contains BYZANTINE anthems of the Liturgy of St. John Chrysostom rhythmically translated from the original Greek. The second part contains the following Russian Compositions:

TRADITIONAL, Psalm 103, Dismissal Anthems of SS. Cyril and Methodius, St. Vladimir, St. Alexander Nevsky, St. Sava of Serbia, Psalm 104, and Pontifical Shining Torchlight.
ONLY-BEGOTTEN (EDINORODNY) by Chesnokov and Voidenov.
THE BEATITUDES (BLAZHENIY) by Panchenko.
INTROIT (PRIIDITE) by Chesnokov.
COLLECTS (KONDAKI) by Bortniansky, Kachenovsky and Ippolitov-Ivanov.
THRICE-HOLY (TRISFIATOE) by Builov, Benevsky, Lvovsky, and Rebikov.
CHERUBIMIC HYMNS (IZHE KHERUVIMI) by Arkhangelsky, Benevsky, Varlamov, Rimsky-Korsakov, and Chaikovsky.
CREED (VERUYU) by Lvovsky and Grechaninov.
PEACE AND MERCY (MILOST MIRA) by Benevsky.
TO THEE WE SING (TEBE POEM) by Chaikovsky.
PRAISEWORTHY (DOSTOINO) by Chesnokov and Azeyev.
THE LORD'S PRAYER (OTCHE NASH) by Ippolitov-Ivanov.
O PRAISE YE (HVALITE) by Rimsky-Korsakov.
GREAT DOXOLOGY (SLAVOSLOVIE VELIKOE) by Allemanov.

Price, $8.00

9. FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY BOOK, illustrated, 288 pages, clothbound, contains the story of the Albanian Orthodox Church; a biography of Metropolitan Noli; the stories of the local Churches of our Archdiocese; and a list of biographies. One of the most important publications of the Church. **Price, $25.00**

10. LITURGY & CATECHISM OF THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH IN PARALLEL ALBANIAN AND ENGLISH. This book of 235 pages contains the Liturgy of St. John Chrysostom with all the secret prayers; and a short Catechism consisting of 165 sets of questions and answers. **Price, $15.00**

11. NEW TESTAMENT, beautifully printed and clothbound, 510 pages, is an English version of the approved Greek text of the Church of Constantinople and of the Church of Greece. Here are some of its special features:

a. It is a new translation from the original Greek into modern English.

b. It is the first, and up to the time of publication, the only book of its kind by an Eastern Orthodox translator.

c. It is indispensable for every Sunday School of our Church in an English-speaking country.

d. It is indispensable for every English-speaking member of our Church who wants to read the New Testament in a language he understands.

e. It is valuable for libraries which want to have a translation of the authorized original text used by all the Eastern Orthodox Churches. **Price, $15.00**

SAMPLES OF THIS NEW TRANSLATION

1. Not *world* but *empire*

St. Luke 2:1

King James Version

1 And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

Noli's Version

1 In those days a decree was issued by the Emperor Augustus that a census of the whole empire should be taken.

In this passage the Greek word *oikumene* has been erroneously translated in the King James version as *all the world*. True, this Greek word originally meant *the inhabited world*, but in St. Luke's time and later it meant *the Roman Empire*. Obviously Caesar Augustus could only take a census for tax purposes of the Roman Empire, not the entire world. Compare Acts 24:5.

2. Not *tongues* but *oracular languages*

First Corinthians 14:23

King James Version

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?

Noli's Version

23 For instance, if outsiders or unbelievers attend a general meeting of the church when all speak in oracular languages they will think that you are crazy.

Speaking with tongues in this passage of the King James version does not mean speaking in foreign languages, but *speaking in oracular languages*. The latter consisted in meaningless and inarticulate ejaculations, like those of the priestesses of the Delphic Oracle. The pagan priest had to translate those mutterings and sputterings into understandable prophecies. Therefore *speaking with tongues* is misleading.

3. Not *weak* but *suffering*

Second Corinthians 12:9-10

King James Version

9 And he (the Lord) said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then I am strong.

Noli's Version

9 But he (the Lord) answered me: "My grace is sufficient for you. For my power is perfected through suffering." So more than ever I am glad to boast of my sufferings. For I am sure that Christ will give me the power to endure them.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in the sufferings, insults, persecutions, and ordeals I am enduring for the sake of Christ. For when I am suffering, then I am strong.

It is a paradox for the Lord to say: "My strength is made perfect in weakness," and for St. Paul to say: "When I am weak, then I am strong." The whole thing is a poor translation. True, the Greek word *astheneia* meant originally *weakness*. But from the time of Thucydides to the present day, it has meant *sickness* and *suffering*. When the word *suffering* is substituted for *weakness* this passage makes sense. Perfection through suffering is a theme which recurs over and over again in the New Testament. Compare Hebrews 2:10 and 5:8-9; St. James 1:2-4; First St. Peter 4:12-14.

4. Not *faithful saying* but *doctrine of faith*

First Timothy 1:15

King James Version

15 This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners. . . .

Noli's Version

15 This is a doctrine of our faith which must be professed by all believers: Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners. . . .

The expression *faithful saying*, which is meaningless, is due to a poor translation of the Greek words *pistos ho logos*. The word *pistos* means literally *deserving to be believed* and *logos* means many things, from *word* to *doctrine* according to its context. The context of the passage clearly shows that what St. Paul has in mind is a fundamental doctrine of Christianity. Compare other passages where these same Greek words occur: First Timothy 4:9, Second Timothy 2:1, Titus 1:9, Titus 3:8.

5. Not *diverse* but *fiendish*

St. James 1:2

St. James Version

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into diverse temptations. . . .

Noli's Version

2 You must be deeply gratified, my brethren, when you are harassed by fiendish temptations. . . .

The temptations in this passage of the King James version are erroneously described as *diverse* and *various* in other translations. The Greek word of the original text is *poikilos*, which means *many-colored, changing colors, deceptive, wicked, fiendish*. The Latin word in the Vulgate of St. Jerome is *varius*, which has been mistaken for the English word *various*, or *diverse*. As a matter of fact, the Latin *varius* is a synonym of the Greek *poikilos*. Compare: Second Timothy 3:6; Titus 3:3.

In Albanian

1. **URATORE,** 602 pages, contains the principal services of the Eastern Orthodox Church. **Price, $6.00**

2. **KREMTORE,** 817 pages, contains Anthems and Lessons of the Principal Holidays. **Price, $6.00**

3. **TRIODI DHE PESEDHJETORJA,** 396 pages, contains Anthems and Lessons of Easter Lent, Easter, and Pentecost. **Price, $6.00**

4. **HYMNORE,** 134 pages, a compilation of liturgical music for mixed choir, with an Albanian text. **Price, $6.00**



PLEASE SEND YOUR ORDER AND CHECK TO

ST. GEORGE CATHEDRAL
523 EAST BROADWAY
SOUTH BOSTON 27
MASSACHUSETTS

A discount of 10 *per cent is given on any order of* $50.00 *or over.*